



DRAGON MARKED WAR GOD

BOOK 05

Su Yue Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Dragon-Marked War God

(龙纹战神)

by

Su Yue Xi

(火星引力)

Synopsis

The once greatest Saint underneath the heavens has been reborn after one hundred years. He cultivates with mighty skills, and he fights to once again reach the top of the world!

Don't compete with me when it comes to concocting pills, 100% effectiveness means nothing to me.

Don't compete with me when it comes to cultivation speed, I won't be responsible when you die from embarrassment.

Don't compete with me when it comes to experience, as I'm an ancient ancestor.

The existence of Jiang Chen is destined to ridicule thousands of geniuses.....

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by ares @ [Xianxiaworld](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401 – Demon King Palace's Four Great Guardians

The entire sky was filled with dazzling lights. Each of those persons who appeared wore luxurious clothing, and they wore the same superior and prideful expression on their faces. They belonged to the strongest power in this city, so it's obvious they would be prideful.

This group of men was the first batch to appear. They slowly descended onto the huge altar and split into two groups, then stood on both sides in an orderly fashion.

After this group of majestic looking men had arrived, more and more people started appearing in the sky. Each of them was a top existence in the Wu family, and as today was their ancestor worshipping ceremony, only those with prestigious statuses had the right to stand on this altar.

The leading man who stood in the sky was a man who looked to be in his thirties. An elegant expression could be seen on his greasy face. With both hands placed behind his back, he leisurely walked in the sky toward the altar.

“Look, that's Wu Tianyang, the Wu family's family chief, Wu Ningzhu's father!”

“This guy has given birth to a good daughter!”

“And he has a strong cultivation base as well! I heard he just broke through to the Mid Combat Soul realm not long ago! He’s a formidable Mid Combat Soul warrior, and with Wu Ningzhu as his daughter, Wu Tianyang can just go anywhere he wants without any fear.”

.....

The arrival of Wu Tianyang immediately attracted everyone’s attention. This man was the real ruler of the Dancing Sun City. If he farted, the entire city would instantly tremble.

Jiang Chen silently nodded his head. This Wu Tianyang had an extraordinary bearing. At least, ordinary men couldn’t compare with him. However, if Wu Tianyang was the Wu family’s strongest man, then their overall strength was still far behind the Nangong family. However, if taking the genius Wu Ningzhu into consideration, as well as the relationship between the Wu family and the Profound River Palace, the Wu family’s status was not any weaker than the Nangong family’s.

Therefore, in the Southern Continent, the Wu family was an exception. They didn’t have the strength of the Nangong family, but they held the same status as the Nangong family.

After Wu Tianyang had arrived, all the other top existences of the Wu family arrived one after the other. The Wu family’s foundation was considered pretty strong; they had four Combat Soul warriors, and nearly twenty Late Divine Core warriors. All of these warriors stood on top of the altar right now.

Right at this moment, the crowd was still glancing at the sky above. Everyone knew that the main person had yet to appear on the altar. It wasn't Wu Tianyang, it was Wu Ningzhu, the young lady of the Wu family wasn't here yet, and the ancestral worshipping ceremony wouldn't begin without her presence.

Suddenly, a pleasant zither melody gradually played its way into the crowds' ears. Before anybody showed up in the air, the sound-waves had been echoing in the sky. With this pleasant melody, the entire Dancing Sun City became silent.

Jiang Chen's heart was moved by this melody. It was as if it had some kind of magical power. It was pleasant, like a stream of sounds flowing through the heart; pure and transparent. The zither melody slowly penetrated into every single inch of the atmosphere; it was as if it had merged with this natural environment. It was just too wonderful for words.

So beautiful, just this zither melody caused everyone to feel wonderful. It was easy to predict how pretty the person playing this tune was.

Wonderhand Thousandtune, she truly deserved this title.

“Look, young lady Wu Ningzhu has arrived!”

Someone suddenly cried out in joy, causing the people who were currently immersed in the wonderful music to wake up. With that, another storm was brought to the crowd. Everyone eagerly threw

their glances onto a sole figure floating in the sky.

Jiang Chen opened up his eyes as well. What he saw was a wonderful girl that sat in mid-air with her legs crossed, playing a zither placed on her lap. Although this girl was sitting in mid-air, it didn't prevent her amazing figure from being shown. She wore a tight black dress which exposed a large amount of skin around her neck; she had two bumps on her chest which portrayed a wild beauty capable of making any man drool. She had long dark hair that seemed silky smooth and neat that fell to her waist. Her face was covered with a thin black veil, preventing her extraordinary face from being seen. However, with Jiang Chen's eyes, he could easily see her delicate and perfect face through the black veil.

This girl had a pair of dazzling eyes that looked like the brightest stars in the night sky. No splendor seemed capable of covering her breathtaking radiance. Even Jiang Chen who had seen many beauties in his life had to admit that this girl truly deserved the title of the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent.

Wu Ningzhu's beauty was different from Yan Chenyu. Yan Chenyu was like an icy lotus, holy and ethereal, pure as the purest crystal, whereas Wu Ningzhu was a girl full of wild beauty. Any casual movement made by her seemed so charming; she was like a rose that bloomed independently, unleashing varieties of colors at will. This was truly a lady worth dying for.

Right now, Wu Ningzhu was sitting with her legs crossed in mid-air, stroking the strings of her zither with her soft hands. It was a black zither, and even its strings were black. It perfectly matched her dressing style.

The zither sent forth a pleasant melody. The melody sounded like jade stones falling onto a plate, crystal clear and melodious, causing those who heard it to feel refreshed. That pair of sand hands kept jumping from string to string like a gracious butterfly.

“So pretty!”

“Wonderhand Thousandtune, she truly deserves this title! The music can make anyone feel refreshed! However, her most amazing ability is her different tunes. She can play pleasant tunes that can soothe one’s mind, but she can also play demonic tunes that can kill anyone, and it’s really difficult to defend against.”

“I’m so happy I got to witness such a wonderful girl in Dancing Sun City today! The only blemish on this otherwise perfect day is that veil on her face.”

“The fuck, why are you so greedy? Don’t you think it’s enough for you to witness such an extraordinary beauty today? According to what I know, no one has ever removed Wu Ningzhu’s veil before, because no man has the qualifications to do so.”

.....

No man on the spot was able to move his eyes away from Wu Ningzhu. For them, being able to appreciate this legendary existence from far was more than enough. No one dared have any evil thoughts about her.

Wu Ningzhu continued playing her music for a few minutes before gradually coming to a stop. After that, the zither in her arms turned into a black beam and disappeared. She slowly stood up, revealing her marvelous figure.

She raised her head and glanced gently over the crowd, showing them a pair of starry eyes that came with a demon-like attraction. After that, she gracefully walked over toward the altar.

When Wu Ningzhu had almost reached the altar, an old man appeared in the sky next to her. The old man wore a gray robe and an indifferent expression. He simply followed after Wu Ningzhu without saying a word. When the people from the Wu family saw this old man, they all bowed politely. Even Wu Tianyang had to greet him with a smile.

“Look, that’s a Late Combat Soul Elder from the Profound River Palace! Having such a mighty warrior participate in the Wu family’s ancestral worshipping ceremony, the Profound River Palace truly gives them face.”

“That’s all because of Wu Ningzhu. She isn’t only the Wu family’s young lady; she is also the number one genius of the Profound River Palace. The upper echelons of the Profound River Palace pay heavy attention to her, so it is only natural for them to send a Late Combat Soul warrior to follow her around.”

“Look, the ancestor worshipping ceremony is going to start soon.”

Some people were discussing amongst themselves with soft voices, while the others were looking at the altar.

“Haha, the Wu family’s ancestral worshipping ceremony is such a lively event! I wonder, do you welcome us, the guardians?”

Right at this moment, an extremely loud voice was suddenly heard from the distance. After that, together with an explosive sound, a black cloud appeared in the sky above the city. With such noise, everyone’s attention was immediately attracted, causing them to throw their glances over to the black cloud. When they looked at it, they could feel a powerful demonic energy within.

The black cloud disappeared, and four figures were revealed. Each of these four were dressed in a bizarre manner, clearly showing they weren’t humans. The leading man had a feather fan in his hand, and he was wearing a raincoat. His face carried an evil smile.

The second man was as tall and big as a pagoda, and his body was covered with hair. Although he was in human form, he looked no different from a wild bear.

The third man had a thin and straight body, as well as a pair of sharp eagle-like eyes. An aquiline nose sat right in the center of his vicious looking face.

As for the last man, he wore a large black gown with countless bats embroidered on it. His black ears were covered with hair,

looking really ugly.

But all four of them had extremely powerful energy, as the four of them were all Late Combat Soul warriors.

In the Southern Continent, humans and demons had been all-time enemies. As today was the Wu family's ancestral worshipping ceremony, the sudden appearance of these mighty demons had clearly shown their evil intentions.

When the old man followed who followed Wu Ningzhu saw these four men, his expression changed dramatically.

“Yunzhong He, Baoshan Xiong, Tieyi Ying, Heixin Fu, out of all the eight great guardians of the Demon King Palace, four of you are here. I wonder, what made you all come to the Dancing Sun City today?”

The old man said with a loud voice. The Profound River Palace and the Demon King Palace were enemies, and both of them were familiar with the upper echelons of both sides. The eight great guardians of the Demon King Palace were very famous, and nearly everyone knows about them. The Demon King Palace sent four of their guardians here today while the Wu family was holding their ancestral worshipping ceremony. It looked like today would be a restless day.

“Shan Ying, we didn't come here today to look for you, we came here for Miss Wu Ningzhu. Our master has coveted her for a long time, so I wonder if Miss Wu Ningzhu can follow us to meet our

master.”

Yunzhong He who held a feather fan in his hand threw his glance over at Wu Ningzhu and spoke with an indifferent voice.

“Ridiculous! Wu Ningzhu is the Profound River Palace’s holy maiden; she is not someone you demons can insult!”

The old man’s name was Shan Ying. He was furious upon learning that the Demon King Palace had their sights set upon Wu Ningzhu.

“Today is my family’s ancestral worshipping ceremony; I never thought it would alert the Demon King Palace and make you send four great guardians here. Judging from the way you’re talking, it looks like you’re here for a fight, right?”

Wu Ningzhu finally spoke. Her voice was crystal clear and full of strength. Contrary to her gender, she portrayed the image of a hero.

“Haha, Miss Wu Ningzhu is indeed a clever girl. However, you’re only half right. We’re not here to fight; we’re here to kill. All the people in this city are going to die today. After that, we will bring Miss Wu back to the Demon King Palace.”

Yunzhong He went straight to the point. Right after he finished speaking, some dark clouds started gathering in the sunny sky, and powerful demonic energy started filling the atmosphere.

“Hmph! Do not point your finger at us and accuse our Demon King Palace of starting this war! Not long ago, a human genius annihilated one of our big powers. We, the Demon King Palace are not someone you can bully without any reason! Now, we’ll take this opportunity the Wu family has provided us to kill everyone in this city!”

Yunzhong He coldly harrumphed.

Chapter 402 – War And Massacre In The City

“What? A human genius annihilated one of the demons’ big powers? Who did that? Could it be Wu Ningzhu?”

“When did that happen? The destruction of a big demon power should have caused a big stir, so why haven’t we heard anything about it?”

“That’s right, who is that human genius? So the reason why these four great guardians came to the Dancing Sun City is to retaliate? Oh heavens, look at the demonic energies in the sky!”

Everyone was shocked. A demon power had been annihilated! This was such huge news, but none of them had heard about it before. Of course, faced with the current situation, no one could pay too much attention to who that human genius was, as they had to face the large army from the Demon King Palace. The Dancing Sun City was in a critical situation right now, and with the cruel and brutal nature of the demon beasts, the city would be in a disadvantageous position.

Jiang Chen’s expression changed slightly. After he destroyed the Demon Palace, he immediately absorbed the demon souls before coming to the Dancing Sun City. Almost no one knew that the Demon Palace had been destroyed, so it wasn’t difficult to imagine how powerful the Demon King Palace was.

Rumble...

Black clouds were gathered above the Dancing Sun City as if the apocalypse was here. The previously bustling city had started panicking. It looked like a fierce was going to erupt.

The faces of those from the Wu family looked extremely unsightly. Today was their ancestral worshipping ceremony, and none of them had expected to face this nasty situation. It was just as Yunzhong He said, they weren't here to talk.

“Not good.”

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. With his sensitive senses, he discovered that the demonic energy that was spreading across the sky was isolating the city from the outside world. In other words, the four guardians had sealed up the city with some secret tricks, causing it to lose connection with the outside world completely. Therefore, even if this place was soon going to be filled with violent battles, no one outside the city would be able to know. With this, when the Profound River Palace finds out about what happened here, the city might already have become a city of the dead.

When Shan Ying saw the demonic energies in the sky that looked like a spider's web, his expressed became ugly as well. He turned to the four guardians and shouted, “Yunzhong He, do you really want to start a war?!”

“I already told you, you are the ones who started it! And besides, we're not here today to talk!”

Intense killing intent emerged in Yunzhong He's eyes.

“Do you think that just you four are capable of destroying this city?”

Wu Ningzhu said. Even when faced with such a situation, she didn't show any signs of panicking. Just her attitude alone was more than enough to win over peoples' respect.

“I have long ago heard of Wonderhand Thousandtune Wu Ningzhu's unique zither-style, and daddy wishes to experience it today! Let me see how strong this number one genius of the Profound River Palace is!”

Heixin Fu said. His voice was hoarse and eerie, extremely unpleasant. Right after he finished speaking, a pair of black wings appeared on his back. With a flap of his wings, he dashed toward Wu Ningzhu with incredible speed.

With Heixin Fu's attack, the war had officially erupted. The demonic energies above the city started spreading and revealing countless demons. The demons blotted out both sky and land as they let out ear-shattering roars. Each and every single one of them had a bloodthirsty look in their eyes and were jumping into every corner of the Dancing Sun City.

The entire city was in an unprecedented critical situation. All the unprepared warriors quickly woke up from shock, then took out their Combat Weapons and fought those demons without any

hesitation.

No one expected the Demon King Palace to launch an attack on the city suddenly. Furthermore, there had been no signs. An attack of this scale was unprecedented as well.

The massacre immediately brought bloodshed to the city. Jiang Chen remained still without doing anything; he just paid close attention to the defense mechanism that sealed the Dancing Sun City. It had been completely activated, and no one from outside the city would be able to find out about what was happening here before the defense mechanism was disabled.

Jiang Chen initially thought that his actions had brought forth the rage of the Demon King Palace, causing them to send four of their guardians to attack the Dancing Sun City to get revenge for what a human had done to one of their big powers. However, judging from what he had seen so far, it wasn't his fault. Jiang Chen's actions had just given the Demon King Palace an excuse to launch their attack.

Even if Jiang Chen didn't annihilate the Demon Palace, the Dancing Sun City would still be attacked today. Judging from the scale of the army they had sent here, the Demon King Palace had obviously been preparing for a long time. If not, the scale would be much smaller than it was now. Also, that defense mechanism was the most important part of this war. It hadn't been long since the Demon Palace was destroyed, so no matter how fast the Demon King Palace was able to react, they just wouldn't be able to prepare this in such a short amount of time, and they wouldn't have chosen this city as their primary target.

The Demon King Palace's main target was obviously Wu Ningzhu. She was incredibly famous in the Southern Continent, and she was titled the number one genius of the younger generation. With her dazzling talent, the Demon King Palace felt a sense of urgency. Therefore, they wanted to kill Wu Ningzhu and hurt the Profound River Palace's future growth; that's why they sent their guardians here. They wanted to deal a heavy blow, and the Wu family's ancestral worshipping ceremony was the perfect time to do so.

Roar...

The wild roars of the demons could be heard everywhere. Some of the demons with gigantic bodies like small hills destroyed all building wherever they passed.

A horrifying war had erupted without any prior warning. The Wu family was completely unprepared, and their ancestral worshipping ceremony hadn't even started yet. Perhaps they wouldn't have the chance to start it any longer, as the altar had become the center of this intense battlefield.

This was a war of a massive scale. Faced with those cruel and ferocious demons, no one were able to remain calm. Only Jiang Chen who had seen a lot of things was able to remain calm when faced with this violent battlefield.

Boom!

A golden lion who was as tall as a pagoda suddenly landed in the square, instantly killing a couple of men with the shockwave that came from its landing.

Roar!

The lion was extremely ferocious. It had a Late Divine Core cultivation, and with its pair of eyes that were filled with strong killing intent; it instantly brought bloodshed to the scene.

Boom!

Right as everyone at the scene were panicking, a gigantic blood-red dragon claw suddenly descended from the sky and hit the raging lion, crushing it to meat paste.

Those who saw what happened were instantly shocked. They started looking around, trying to find out who did that, but no one was able to find the man who had just saved them. A person who could kill a Late Divine Core demon with just a single slap must be a mighty warrior.

“Everyone listen up! Follow me and fight these demons together!”

With a huge golden blade in her hand, Wu Ningzhu shouted out loudly, causing everyone in the city to hear what she said. Although the Wu family weren’t prepared for this attack, they were after all a big power in the Southern Continent. With their

counter-attacks, they could still deal the Demon King Palace a deadly blow.

Above the altar, Wu Ningzhu kept moving around like a black butterfly. She had been fighting a couple of rounds with Heixin Fu, and she was able to knock him back with her powerful attacks each time easily.

“Damn it; this young girl is really strong!”

Heixin Fu couldn't help but curse inwardly. Although he was one of the Demon King Palace's eight great guardians, he still had to admit that Wu Ningzhu was a formidable opponent, as he had nearly been defeated by her even before she played her strongest tune.

On the other side, Yunzhong He was fighting with Shan Ying. Both of them were even in terms of cultivation, but Shan Ying was pretty old, and his body was no match for the demon in front of him in terms of strength. Yunzhong He was a crane demon, allowing him to attack with incredible speed and strength. Therefore, after exchanging a few rounds of attacks, Shan Ying was in a disadvantageous position.

“So, the Profound River Palace's mighty warrior is not that strong after all.”

Yunzhong He kept waving the feather fan in his hand, unleashing bright beams upon Shan Ying.

Both of Shan Ying's eyes had turned red. He threw his glance over to the city underneath him and saw the horrifying scene. He was unable to control his emotions, and said, "Yunzhong He! How dare you attack our humans' city?! This is a serious provocation to the Profound River Palace, and what is happening here will soon be noticed by the Profound River Palace! Today, you four guardians are all going to die!"

"Haha, is that so? I don't mind telling you this; the entire city has been sealed up by the four of us; this place is completely isolated from the outside world! Even if we destroy the entire city, the Profound River Palace will still be in the dark!"

Yunzhong He burst into laughter.

"What?!"

Shan Ying cried out in shock. Only now did he discover that there was indeed a layer of faded light hovering above the Dancing Sun City's sky. Noticing this situation, Shan Ying's spirit immediately sunk to the bottom of his heart. It looked like everything was going according to the Demon King Palace's plan. Their primary target was Wu Ningzhu, and with the complete isolation of the city, there was no way they could inform anyone about what was going on here, and all humans in this place would be completely massacred by the Demon King Palace.

Furthermore, if something bad truly happened to Wu Ningzhu, it would be a great blow to the Profound River Palace. Looking at the battles taking place below them, with these four great guardians of the Demon King Palace, the unprepared Dancing Sun City was no

match for those demons.

“So, today, this city will become a living hell! All mortals will perish underneath the Demon King Palace’s iron hoof; we will leave no survivors!”

A cruel smile emerged onto Yunzhong He’s face. He turned to two other men who stood behind him and told him with a loud voice, “Old Bear, Old Hawk, go help Old Bat capture Wu Ningzhu! Remember, don’t kill her, the master wants her alive! Also, make it quick!”

“Jiejie, alright!”

Baoshan Xiong and Tieyi Ying sprinted forward and grouped up with Heixin Fu. The three of them quickly surrounded Wu Ningzhu.

“Hmph! Three mighty great guardians of the Demon King Palace grouping together to attack a lone lady, you guys don’t feel any shame!”

Wu Ningzhu coldly harrumphed.

“We won’t feel shame if we win this fight. Wu Ningzhu, if I was you, I’d just give up and admit defeat, so I wouldn’t have to suffer any pain.”

Baoshan Xiong said.

“Fat chance! You three, show me what you got, it is still too early to tell who will win this battle!”

Wu Ningzhu was still brimming with confidence. Although she was facing three formidable opponents, she was showing no signs of being nervous. With a flip of her hand, a black zither appeared.

Chapter 403 – White-Clothed Youngster

Wu Ningzhu stood in the sky with one hand holding the zither, and the other above the strings. She started gently plucking them, sending out three visible soundwaves in the form of three sharp blades toward the three great guardians.

Not only were these tunes played by Wu Ningzhu extremely powerful and deadly, but they were also very difficult to defend against. Every single note was capable of easily penetrating into the depths of one's soul, greatly affecting the opponent.

“Be careful, this girl's soundwave attacks are powerful, don't underestimate them!”

Heixin Fu reminded his friends. Following that, the three great guardians all attacked at the same time, unleashing bright energy beams which blocked Wu Ningzhu's soundwave attacks.

“Hmph! Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes!”

Wu Ningzhu coldly harrumphed. She placed the black zither in front of her and made it float. Following that, she placed both hands above the strings and started plucking them with incredible speed, causing her hands to look like butterflies flying around, leaving behind afterimages.

In an instant, countless mysterious music notes started flying around in the sky above the city. Each of the notes represented different energies and attacks. The each soundwave underwent

countless changes while flying, and they were emitting varieties of different colors. They blotted out both sky and land as they stormed toward the three great guardians.

Even the three great guardians were shocked when faced with this attack. This number one genius of the Profound River Palace with the title Wonderhand Thousandtune truly deserved her reputation.

Wu Ningzhu's soundwaves could transform whenever she wished. From mild to wild, from pleasant to ear-piercing, from elegant to savage, from the sounds of nature to the sounds of devils. Each transformation was natural, and it affected her opponents' minds immediately.

Roar!

Baoshan Xiong furiously roared out. His body instantly transformed, becoming over 3 meters tall. With a pair of iron fists that shone brightly, he punched the soundwaves coming toward him, shattering them into pieces.

As for Tieyi Ying, he had a pair of terrifying iron wings that were nearly invincible. His wings were dancing about, producing a flawless defense. On the other side, Heixin Fu was wildly roaring around. His roars were soundwave attacks, but when compared to Wu Ningzhu; his soundwave attacks were just too weak.

However, Wu Ningzhu had to fight three enemies at the same time, and they weren't ordinary opponents; they were the great

guardians of the Demon King Palace! Even if she possessed amazing talent, she had to split her attack into three. It was impossible for her to completely defeat all three of them at the same time, and now, she couldn't even break their defense. It looked like this would be a drawn-out battle.

Jiang Chen who stood right in the center of the crowd had found the ins and outs of Wu Ningzhu. By having such amazing cultivation at such a young age, she was indeed a peerless genius. None of the great guardians of the Demon King Palace could be easily defeated, and they were all overall stronger than Shan Ying; no ordinary Late Combat Soul warriors could compare with them. Having the ability to fight three of them at the same time and still remain in an advantageous position, Wu Ningzhu had proved her incredible strength.

If it was a one versus one fight, none of these great guardians of the Demon King Palace would be a match for Wu Ningzhu, but if they teamed up and attacked her together, it would be a different story.

With her Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes attack, Wu Ningzhu and the three guardians were in a deadlock. On the other side, although Shan Ying could only defend himself without fighting back, he was after all a Late Combat Soul warrior, a respectable Elder of the Profound River Palace, and he did have some hidden skills and tricks. Therefore, it was also impossible for Yunzhong He to kill him in a short amount of time.

Shan Ying and Wu Ningzhu were alone taking on the four great guardians of the Demon King Palace, but the city's situation was

not good. The most powerful force in the city was the Wu family, and Wu Ningzhu had only brought Shan Ying from the Profound River Palace this time. As for the Demon King Palace, they had been preparing for this assault for a very long time, and with a lack of any prior preparation, there was no way the people of the Dancing Sun City could defend themselves from the crazy attacks of the demons. With the strength of the Wu family alone, there was no way they could defeat those ferocious demons.

Everyone from the Wu family were busy fighting, including Wu Tianyang and all their Combat Soul warriors. None of them had time to help the others. As for the innocent and weak people of the city, they were just food waiting to be served, as most of them were too weak to even fight back. They could only wait to be slaughtered.

Ahh...

Miserable shrieks could be heard from everywhere, and it didn't seem like it would stop anytime soon. Humans and demons were fighting everywhere, and the buildings were being destroyed.

This was an extremely cruel massacre. Jiang Chen looked around and shook his head in silence. The deadlock between Wu Ningzhu, Shan Ying, and the four great guardians would soon be broken. Neither of them would be able to last for much longer, and even those people from the Wu family were going to be defeated by those demons soon. More and more people from the Wu family died with each passing minute.

The fights between the other humans and demons were equally

terrifying. If the situation continued like this, Jiang Chen had no doubts that after today, the Dancing Sun City would definitely become a city of the dead. It was just like Yunzhong He had said, all living mortals here were going to die; the entire city was going to be slaughtered by the Demon King Palace.

It wasn't difficult to foresee that. The Dancing Sun City would meet the same end as the Demon Palace annihilated by Jiang Chen.

Hoouuuu!

Suddenly, a savage beast descended from the sky above. With its mouth wide open, it simply tried to devour Jiang Chen with a single bite.

Sigh...

Jiang Chen shook his head faintly. When the savage beast approached him, he casually pointed his finger forward and unleashed a golden beam, cutting the beast in half.

“Looks like I have to do something today. As a human, I can't just sit by and do nothing.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. Following that, a sharp cry suddenly resounded throughout the city.

The cry was extremely harsh and unpleasant, and it immediately attracted many people's attention. They raised their heads up and

saw a golden sword over 30 meters tall appearing in the sky.

This was an amazingly huge sword. It wasn't being held by anyone, but it was flying around by itself.

Swoosh!

As if someone was controlling the huge golden sword from somewhere, it started flying in every direction within the battlefield, and every single demon would be sliced in half wherever the sword went.

It seemed like this huge sword was a sentient object. It didn't attack any humans, it only focused on demons, and it wiped out every single ferocious creature along its way. Nothing seemed to be able to stop it, and no demons were able to withstand more than a single strike from this gigantic golden sword.

“Look, what is that sword? It's really amazing!”

“That huge golden sword has killed many demons, that's great!”

“What an extraordinary sword! It looks like there is a mighty warrior hiding somewhere in this city, I'm sure the owner of this sword is a formidable warrior! But, who can that person be?”

.....

The appearance of the huge golden sword brought joy to many people. Many of them were in fact saved by the sword when they were on the brink of death.

Swoosh... swoosh... swoosh...

The golden sword continued flying throughout the city, slaying a huge amount of demons, causing bodies to rain down from the sky. It also brought back hope to those who had lost it.

Nobody noticed a young man standing within the crowd, secretly controlling this huge golden sword.

“Haha, good!”

While fighting a Mid Combat Soul demon, Wu Tianyang laughed out in satisfaction. The sudden appearance of this sword had raised everyone’s spirit. Not only that, it also allowed Wu Tianyang to know that there was a mighty warrior hidden somewhere. He wasn’t an idiot; he was easily able to tell how powerful this sword was with his eyes. It was also obvious to him that no ordinary man would be able to own such an amazing sword.

Wu Ningzhu and Shan Ying who were restlessly fighting had seen this huge sword as well, and so had the guardians of the Demon King Palace.

“This is a good sword; it’s mine now!”

Heixin Fu's eyes lit up. He flapped his wings and flew toward the gigantic golden sword, then stretched his arm forward and tried to grab it.

“Don't you dare run away from me!”

Wu Ningzhu refused to let him touch the sword. She immediately unleashed a soundwave attack, blocking Heixin Fu.

“Heixin Fu, there aren't any mighty warriors hiding in this city. Let's focus on capturing Wu Ningzhu together; we can work on that sword afterward!”

Yunzhong He said loudly. He attacked again with his feather fan, knocking Shan Ying back. He spat out some blood and said, “You old fool, enough playing with you! Heavenly Crane Cry!”

Yunzhong He instantly attacked madly. He wanted to end this battle quickly and kill Shan Ying.

Caw!

A huge illusionary crane suddenly appeared above Shan Ying and hit him with tremendous force. Shan Ying was injured and unable to defend himself from this attack, so he was instantly knocked away with blood shooting out from his body. The attack had severely wounded him, and it caused his combat strength to be reduced by at least half.

Swoosh!

After knocking Shan Ying away, Yunzhong He didn't continue attacking him, he instead turned around and teamed up with the other three guardians.

With Yunzhong He joining in, Wu Ningzhu was finally unable to withstand their attacks. Her zither tunes started becoming messy, and she was unable to keep the balance between her soundwaves. She was now barely able to defend herself.

Houu!

On the other side, a powerful Mid Combat Soul demon suddenly jumped out and transformed into its original form, then dashed toward the gigantic golden sword.

“Hmph! Don't even think about touching my sword!”

Right at this moment, a cold 'humph' suddenly resounded throughout the battlefield. Following that, a young man appeared in the sky. He waved his hand, and the gigantic golden sword immediately returned to him.

Many people immediately threw their glances to this white-clothed young man. Even though no one could see his face, as there was a layer of golden light covering his face, they could feel that he was a young man.

This young man was none other than Jiang Chen! In order to reduce the casualties and pressure, he determinedly stepped into the scene.

Boom!

When the demon beast found out that Jiang Chen was only a Divine Core warrior, it immediately dashed toward him with its mouth wide open, attempting to kill him with a single bite.

“Die!”

Jiang Chen raised the Heavenly Saint Sword high up into the air and swung it toward the demon. The dazzling sword cruelly sliced through the demon’s body. The Mid Combat Soul demon was no match for Jiang Chen’s formidable strength, so its body was cut into two parts in an instant.

Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and grabbed a golden demon soul from the demon’s corpse. It was a demon soul belonging to a Mid Combat Soul demon, and as long as Jiang Chen absorbed it now, he would have enough Dragon Marks to break through to the Combat Soul realm. Heavenly Tribulation would also appear immediately after absorbing it.

Chapter 404 – Come! Let's Face Heavenly Tribulation Together!

The sudden appearance of this white-clothed young man and him killing the Mid Combat Soul demon within seconds brought a storm to the scene. It instantly caused the battles to become even more heated up.

“Who is that young man, and why is he so strong? He's only a Divine Core warrior, not yet a Combat Soul warrior, so how can he kill a Mid Combat Soul demon with but a single strike? This is too unbelievable!”

Wu Tianyang's face was filled with shock.

“Which power is this man from? He is definitely not from the Profound River Palace, and I've never heard of anyone in the Southern Continent who resembles this man. With his amazing talent, he should certainly be a famous person!”

Wu Ningzhu turned her pale face to look at the young man, and she was also struck with astonishment. However, even with her amazing cultivation, she too was unable to see through the golden glow covering this young man's face.

But for some unknown reason, after this young man appeared, Wu Ningzhu suddenly felt like she had seen a ray of hope. It was a truly mysterious feeling, as this young man wasn't even a Combat Soul warrior, and yet, he made her feel as if he could easily turn the tables.

Jiang Chen didn't stop after killing that demon. Like a fierce tiger pouncing toward a group of tame sheep, his body flashed toward the center of the battlefield. Within the blink of an eye, another three Combat Soul demons had been slain by Jiang Chen's sword. Following the reduction of these Combat Soul demons, the pressure the Wu family faced had been instantly reduced.

“Young man in white, he is the one who annihilated the Demon Palace!”

When Yunzhong He saw Jiang Chen who was bringing a reign of terror to the demons across the battlefield, he immediately identified him as the culprit who had annihilated the Demon Palace.

“According to the survivors from the Demon Palace, it was a young man who looked to be about 17 years old who annihilated them, and he also used a terrifying sword! I'm sure this guy is the culprit! What a lucky day for us, I'll go and kill him now!”

Baoshan Xiong shouted out.

“Old Bear, let's capture Wu Ningzhu before we kill that guy!”

Yunzhong He stopped Baoshan Xiong from acting recklessly.

After that, all four great guardians drew out their Combat Weapons at the same time. The four of them had been working

together for a very long time; giving them good synergy when attacking enemies. In an instant, they unleashed a dark cloud that was entirely formed from their Combat Weapons and demonic energy, then brutally sent it toward Wu Ningzhu.

The attack instantly caused Wu Ningzhu's expression to change dramatically. She continued stroking the strings of her zither, unleashing countless abstruse musical notes resembling scythes toward the dark cloud. However, even if she was Wonderhand Thousandtune, it was impossible for her to withstand the combined attack from these four great guardians.

Bam!

Blergh!

Wu Ningzhu was instantly knocked back by the attack, and a mouthful of blood was forced out from her mouth, staining the black veil covering her face. At the same time, her energy began to weaken significantly. She had clearly suffered a serious injury.

“Ning'er!”

Wu Tianyang and Shan Ying cried out in shock at the same time when they saw that Wu Ningzhu had been injured. Although Shan Ying was also badly injured, he immediately went up to Wu Ningzhu to protect her from being further attacked by the four great guardians.

“Old fool, I’ll kill you now! Guys, let’s attack with everything we got! Remember, we need Wu Ningzhu to stay alive!”

Yunzhong He said with a cruel tone. With just one more combined attack from all four of them, Shan Ying would face certain death. On the other side, Wu Ningzhu had lost all ability to defend herself.

Bang!

Right at this moment, a clap of thunder sounded out in the sky above the city. It was an explosively loud clap of thunder that caused the entire Dancing Sun City to vibrate, striking every single being with extreme shock.

Boom!

The clap of thunder was just the beginning. Thunder began roaring out in the sky, and dark clouds started gathering in the sky. The demonic energy that was originally covering the sky was immediately dispersed, and rapid lightning started crawling through the sky. A heavenly pressure started pushing down on every single object underneath the heavens. Faced with this mighty heavenly pressure, even the four great guardians began to palpitate.

Pipapipa...

As the dark clouds rolled into the sky accompanied by thunder

and lightning, the demonic energy had completely disappeared. With that, the defense mechanism that isolated the city had finally been broken. The dark clouds were pressuring from above, and seven colored lightning bolts were breaking out in the sky as if there was an ancient barbarian beast wreaking havoc within. It caused all those who looked at the sky to feel terrified.

“What’s going on? I can feel a powerful pressure from the sky; I don’t feel good!”

“The thunder is roaring as if the end of the world is approaching, why did the weather suddenly become like this?”

“I know what this is; it’s the legendary Heavenly Tribulation! According to legends, when a heavenly-defying object appears, the Heavens will send forth its punishment in the form of Lightning Tribulation! Could a heavenly-defying object have appeared in this city?”

“A heavenly-defying object hasn’t been seen in the last ten thousand years; I’ve never seen anything like this before!”

.....

Everyone was startled by this change. Right at this moment, the demons and humans had stopped fighting each other; they had all thrown their glances toward the sky. As the heavenly pressure was getting stronger and stronger, they got even more scared.

“Damn it, what is facing Heavenly Tribulation now?!”

Yunzhong He couldn't help but curse. It looked like a heavenly-defying object had appeared in the city, and the heavens was sending forth its Heavenly Tribulation to this place. If the lightning tribulation truly took place here, many people were going to be caught in the crossfire.

Rumble...

The furious thunder sounded like the roars of barbarian beasts. Soon, the dark cloud had pushed down and stopped above a specific spot in the city. This immediately struck all humans and demons who also stood underneath with great fear. They simply ran away as fast as they possibly could and tried to distance themselves as far away as possible.

After everyone had left the spot, all that remained underneath the dark cloud was a white-clothed young man whose face was covered in a golden glow. He simply stood there solemnly. He raised his head and stared at the furious lightning in the sky, without making any noise or movement.

“It's him! He is the one who will face Heavenly Tribulation!”

“Are you kidding me? Facing Heavenly Tribulation at the Divine Core realm? Is this some kind of joke?”

“Where did this young man come from? Why can he attract

Heavens' Punishment just by breaking through to the Combat Soul realm?!"

.....

All four of the great guardians felt an urge to vomit blood. Even Wu Ningzhu was unable to take her eyes off of this young man. As the number one genius of the Profound River Palace, she never acknowledged herself inferior regarding talent to anybody else, but she had never met any super genius who had to face Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm.

However, no matter how hard Wu Ningzhu thought about it, she just couldn't remember hearing anything about the Southern Continent having this heavenly-defying genius.

The Heavenly Tribulation was here, and the war had instantly come to a halt. No one dared fight underneath Heavens Punishment, as they were afraid they might attract the Heavenly Tribulation and die in the process.

Jiang Chen was floating in the sky, standing quietly underneath the tribulation clouds. He stretched his arms out, as if he was enjoying the moment. The Heavenly Tribulation would never be able to make him surrender.

Soon, three red lines appeared in the dark cloud. They looked red as fresh blood, as if there were three blood streams crossing the sky, causing all those who looked at them to feel a tremendous pressure.

“Minor Three Tribulations?”

A faint smile emerged onto Jiang Chen’s face. When the three red lines appeared amongst the dark clouds, it signified that Jiang Chen was going to face the Three Minor Tribulations. This was something he had experienced in his past life.

In his past life, Jiang Chen had faced two Heavenly Tribulations. The first was when he broke through to the Minor Saint realm from the Peak Combat Emperor realm, and he had to face the Three Minor Tribulations. The second time was when he broke through to the Great Saint realm from the Minor Saint realm, where he had to face the Intermediate Six Tribulations. According to legend, when one was breaking through to the Immortal realm from the Great Saint realm, the Immortal Realm would send forth its Major Nine Tribulations, also called the Tribulation of misery. However, Jiang Chen never had the chance to experience it, as he died before he could do so. Perhaps there were some who had faced the Major Nine Tribulation during the last hundred years and entered the Immortal realm.

Those old farts who had lived for a long time without the ability to cultivate further, once they were given Immortal Energy, it would be very easy for them to break through to the Immortal realm. Jiang Chen had no doubts about that. With his new life, this Major Nine Tribulation was his current ultimate goal.

However, Jiang Chen had never expected to face the Minor Three Tribulations that only appeared when breaking through to the Minor Saint realm would come to him so soon. He knew that the

reason for this was all because of the Dragon Transformation skill.

The first red line started swaying and producing thunderous sounds. In the following second, the red line transformed into a Thunder Dragon. The Thunder Dragon's terrifying body swayed, and it threw an angry glance at Jiang Chen.

Right now, the entire Dancing Sun City was in dead silence. Everyone was holding their breath as they looked at the Thunder Dragon. No one here had ever seen Heavenly Tribulation before, and today was the first time they experienced this rare event. Luckily, the Heavenly Tribulation only focused on this white-clothed youngster. If not, the entire city would perish underneath this furious tribulation.

“Haha! Come!”

Jiang Chen laughed out heartily. No signs of fear could be found on his face.

As if having sensed Jiang Chen's challenge, the Thunder Dragon immediately let out a furious roar and dived down toward Jiang Chen.

Just when the Thunder Dragon moved, Jiang Chen moved at the same time. With the help of the Dimensional Shift skill, Jiang Chen immediately appeared in front of Yunzhong He with incredible speed.

“What?!”

A terrified expression instantly emerged onto Yunzhong He's face as he cried out in horror. However, it was too late for him to do anything.

“Haha, let's face the Heavenly Tribulation together!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter. He simply stood right beside Yunzhong He as the horrifying Thunder Dragon crashed into them and transformed into a curtain formed entirely from lightning and thunder, instantly flooding both of them.

Argh!!

A miserable shriek sounded out from the deadly thunder curtain, causing the hairs of all those who heard it to stand up. Within a split second, many people could see two pieces of a corpse falling from the thunderous curtain. The two pieces were completely burnt, but people were still able to see that they belonged to Yunzhong He.

After that, the thunderous curtain disappeared, and a white-clothed youngster was revealed. Although he was slightly staggering, he was still in high spirits. He wasn't even hurt after passing through the first tribulation.

The Heavenly Tribulation was a well-directed phenomenon. Those who faced it had proved to possess heavenly-defying talent,

meaning that they had the potential to overcome the Heavenly Tribulation successfully. However, for any other living beings who weren't targeted by the Heavenly Tribulation, it was a deadly phenomenon. Take Yunzhong He for example, when the Heavenly Tribulation struck him, his source tribulation was immediately stimulated, and he simply had no way to withstand the mighty power of the Heavenly Pressure. Therefore he was sliced in half by the thunder.

Haa!

Everyone gasped upon seeing what just happened, especially the other three great guardians. They simply stared at the youngster not far away from them with eyes wide open, as if they were looking at a ghost. This young man was extremely fierce; he actually forced another person to face the Heavenly Tribulation with him!

“Damn it, let's keep a distance from that guy!”

Baoshan Xiong couldn't help but curse. Facing the Heavenly Tribulation together with this youngster meant certain death, there were no second options. The formidable Yunzhong He was a perfect example of this.

Rumble...

Soon after, the second tribulation bolt started forming.

Chapter 405 – Combat Soul

Rumble...

Heaven and earth were both shaking, and the strong Heavenly Pressure caused everyone to panic. Human or demon, every living being stayed as far away from the scene as they could.

Jiang Chen slowly raised his head and looking to the sky. He saw the second red line had started wriggling; then it transformed into a gigantic Thunder Dragon in the blink of an eye. This Thunder Dragon was twice as big as the first one. For this Minor Three Tribulations, there would be a total of three tribulations. Each tribulation would be stronger than the previous one.

Pipapipa...

The seven-colored lightning continuously crawled throughout the sky, as if some living snakes. Not only that, but it was also producing sounds that made people feel a numbness in their heads. The Thunder Dragon soon locked onto Jiang Chen; then it immediately flew down toward Jiang Chen.

The people looked into the sky and stared at the Thunder Dragon with great fear. Almost everyone stopped breathing as they looked at the Thunder Dragon. No one doubted that if this Thunder Dragon's target was them, they would instantly be killed by its attack. There would be no possible second outcome.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Right when the Thunder Dragon started moving toward him, he threw his glance over at Baoshan Xiong.

“Not good!”

Baoshan Xiong had a bad feeling and immediately flew into the far distance. He knew Jiang Chen's intentions, and if he didn't run away in time, he would follow Yunzhong He's footsteps.

“Too late.”

Jiang Chen said in a cold manner. His body flashed, and he charged toward Baoshan Xiong was flying away as fast as he could. Although Baoshan Xiong was a Late Combat Soul warrior, Jiang Chen was already infinitely close to the Combat Soul realm. With his incredible abilities, Baoshan Xiong was no match for him at all, much less in terms of speed.

Boom!

The second Thunder Dragon collided with Baoshan Xiong whom Jiang Chen had already caught up to. It instantly exploded into a lightning-like web, flooding both Jiang Chen and Baoshan Xiong.

Argh!!

Another miserable shriek was heard. Within seconds, Baoshan

Xiong's gigantic body was seen falling down from the lightning. He died in a miserable manner, and not only that, his head had been cracked open. His demon soul had been taken by Jiang Chen.

The thunder was still wreaking havoc in the sky, and lightning continuously flashed. The furious thunder continued making noise from the lightning web. Nobody were able to see what happened to the white-clothed youngster, but since the thunder was still acting so violently, the young man had yet to die.

“Oh heavens, this is too frightening!”

“What an eye-opening day! The formidable guardians of the Demon King Palace were actually killed with this method, and they didn't even have the ability to fight back! Just who is that young man? And how can he attract Heavenly Tribulation?”

“Who knows, but we really have to thank him! If not for him, this city would probably be doomed today, and young Miss Wu Ningzhu would be in great danger as well!”

.....

If the people here hadn't witnessed this themselves, they would not believe it. A heavenly-defying human had been born in front of them; this was an existence who had to face Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm! This was the first time in the Southern Continent history that such a heavenly-defying monster had appeared.

This time, the lightning lasted longer than it did during the first tribulation, and it only disappeared slowly after a few minutes. The youngster was revealed once again, and right now, Jiang Chen's aura had clearly become a bit weaker, and his dark hair was in a chaotic state as well. His clothes weren't as clean as they had previously been either. He had obviously suffered some injuries from the second tribulation bolt.

However, these injuries weren't threatening to him. The Dragon Transformation skill gave him a natural regeneration ability, so the injuries he suffered didn't mean much.

Rumble...

Both tribulation bolts failed to make this heaven-defying existence perish. This immediately angered the Heavenly Tribulation. Without any delay, the third tribulation bolt appeared; an even larger Thunder Dragon was formed.

Right when this Thunder Dragon appeared, Tieyi Ying and Heixin Fu looked at each other and cried out at the same time, "Run!"

After saying that, the two guardians increased their speed to their maximum and started fleeing in different directions. That youngster was too fierce; he had used the Heavenly Tribulation to kill Yunzhong He and Baoshan Xiong. As for the third tribulation bolt, it would be for either one of them.

Their plan to slaughter everyone in the Dancing Sun City had obviously failed. The unexpected appearance of this young man had destroyed their big plot, and caused them to lose two great guardians as well as some Combat Soul demons. For the Demon King Palace, this was a great loss.

Faced with the third tribulation bolt, the only thing Tieyi Ying and Heixin Fu could do was run for their lives. If they slowed down, they had no doubts they would be killed by this Heavenly Tribulation.

“One of you will have to stay behind.”

As if Jiang Chen had predicted their movement, he immediately chased after Heixin Fu. Although Tieyi Ying and Heixin Fu were demons with great speed, Heixin Fu was still a bit slower than Tieyi Ying. Not only that, Jiang Chen had to pay attention to the Heavenly Tribulation; so he couldn't focus on both of them. Chasing one of them was still an easy thing for him to do, though.

With the combination of the Nine Phantom Wolves and Dimensional Shift skills, Jiang Chen easily caught up to Heixin Fu in the blink of an eye. When Heixin Fu turned around, he immediately saw the gigantic Thunder Dragon descending toward him from the skies.

“NOO!!”

Immense fear emerged into Heixin Fu's heart. He knew he was going to die and let out another miserable shriek. He wasn't scared

of this young man who was facing Heavenly Tribulation; he was scared of the Heavenly Tribulation itself.

No amount of fear could save him from his fate. When the Thunder Dragon fell onto his body, Heixin Fu's fate had been determined.

Argh!!

To no one's surprise, Heixin Fu let out a miserable shriek as he died miserably within the lightning sea. His demon soul was forcefully dug out by Jiang Chen. It was another Late Combat Soul demon soul, and it would bring Jiang Chen a lot of benefits.

On the other side, Tieyi Ying shrank his neck back when he saw that Heixin Fu had been killed. Without hesitating, he issued a loud cry, and instantly transformed into his original form, an Ironwing Hawk. After that, he continued flying into the far distance, disappearing from the scene.

Houuu...

Following the death of three great guardians and Tieyi Ying's fleeing, all demons started crazily fleeing from the city. They continuously increased their pace, scared that if they flew just a little bit slower, they would get burned by the Heavenly Tribulation.

Out of the four great guardians, three of them were dead, and one

had fled. The war could no longer go on. Ever since that huge golden sword appeared, the demons' fighting spirit had weakened more and more with each passing moment. Faced with the current situation, if they kept fighting, it wouldn't result in the Dancing Sun City's destruction, but the Demon King Palace.

These demons of the Demon King Palace came fast and left fast. In just a few breaths time, there were no longer any living demons in the city; peace had finally returned. However, it wasn't completely peaceful yet, as the lightning sea was still roaring in the sky above.

The demons had fled, and the Dancing Sun City had been saved from annihilation. It was only natural that people would start cheering because of that, but none of them were cheering, as everyone were staring at the lightning sea, including Wu Ningzhu and Shan Ying.

Within that lightning sea was today's hero. Without him, the city would have perished. Right now, everyone were capable of feeling that this third tribulation bolt was clearly much stronger than the previous two. They couldn't even begin to imagine how that youngster could withstand its mighty power; they were all worried for their hero.

Right now, within the lightning sea, blood had started flowing down from Jiang Chen's lip. That's the reason why he didn't chase after Tieyi Ying. He knew how powerful the third tribulation bolt was, and after killing Heixin Fu with it, he would have to resist it using all his strength.

Graaa!

Jiang Chen pointed his head toward the sky and let out a dragon's roar while the lightning continuously hammered against his body. When the lightning entered his body, all the Dragon Marks in his Qi Sea started experiencing a transformation at their very source.

After some time, the Divine Core in his Qi Sea cracked. Following that, a palm-sized blood-red dragon appeared above his head. When Jiang Chen raised his head up to look at this tiny dragon, he immediately felt a perfect intimacy with it, as if this tiny dragon was a part of his body.

“So, this is my Combat Soul?”

A look of astonishment emerged in Jiang Chen's eyes. Under normal circumstances, a human's Combat Soul was like a tiny human representing that person's very source. In his past life, his Combat Soul was a tiny Jiang Chen. Now, his Combat Soul was a tiny dragon. However, since Jiang Chen knew about the uniqueness of the skill he cultivated, he wasn't too surprised upon seeing this tiny dragon.

Right now, together with his Combat Soul, Jiang Chen was experiencing a root transformation within the lightning sea.

With a thought, the tiny blood-red dragon instantly entered his body from the top of his head and sat down firmly within his Qi Sea.

At the same time, Jiang Chen's body started transforming from within. New Dragon Marks started forming. This was a transformation that happened from his very source, and the growth rate he obtained was unimaginable.

The thunder's force made Jiang Chen's body stronger. Each and every single cell within his body was restlessly trembling; they were hungrily absorbing the thunder's force and tempering his body. With that, Jiang Chen's foundation got stronger with every minute passing, and new Dragon Marks were continuously forming.

Soon, over 1,000 new Dragon Marks had formed. Jiang Chen now had a total of 6,000 Dragon Marks in his body! Such a huge improvement was not something that Jiang Chen expected.

Even with all that, the thunder had yet to stop bringing him benefits. New Dragon Marks were continuously forming, and right now, Jiang Chen only wished for the Heavenly Tribulation to last longer. The longer it lasted, the better it was for him.

All living beings were scared off Heavenly Tribulation. Therefore, it was incredibly rare to find someone like Jiang Chen, who wished for Heavenly Tribulation to last longer.

“After having my body tempered by the thunder's force, my foundation has become much stronger. I can just take this opportunity to absorb these three demon souls. With that, I can increase my cultivation to a peak level.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He then flipped his palm, causing three demon souls to appear.

Chapter 406 – Leaving Gracefully

These three demon souls were no ordinary demon souls, they all came from Late Combat Soul demons. They could bring Jiang Chen an incredible improvement to his cultivation. Together with the thunder's force, if Jiang Chen completely absorbed all three of them, he might be able to form another 1,000 Dragon Marks, and once the Heavenly Tribulation came to an end, Jiang Chen would have a total of 7,000 Dragon Marks in his body.

Since his foundation was very powerful at the moment, Jiang Chen wasn't worried that his foundation would receive negative side effects from absorbing these demon souls. Therefore, without hesitating, he immediately absorbed all three demon souls.

The city was deadly quiet. Everyone was staring at the lightning sea without speaking a single word. They were hoping to see the white-clothed youngster once more. Although they didn't know him before today's events, he had saved all their lives. Therefore, they hoped this young man could survive the deadly Heavenly Tribulation.

Besides that, it was great to know that there was a heavenly-defying genius on the human side. With this amazing expert, the demons were definitely going to suffer a heavy blow in the future.

“Where exactly did this genius come from? He is such an amazing warrior, so why have we never heard of him before?”

Shan Ying said, shocked.

“He saved all of us.”

Wu Ningzhu said. For the first time, a soft and gentle look emerged in her eyes.

A couple of minutes later, the lightning sea had finally disappeared, revealing the youngster to the crowd. This youngster was no longer in his previous chaotic state; he was actually brimming with energy, looking much better than he previously did.

Good!

All humans in the Dancing Sun City burst into cheers upon seeing this. Even Wu Ningzhu had a smile on her face. Underneath her black veil, a spectacular smile bloomed onto her face. Her breathtaking face seemed capable of melting a glacier.

Wu Ningzhu and Shan Ying both started moving toward Jiang Chen. However, before they could say anything, Jiang Chen turned into a white beam and disappeared into the far distance. He left in a graceful manner.

Ugh...

Wu Ningzhu and Shan Ying were startled. They didn't expect this young man to act in such an eccentric way. After doing such a great thing for the people here, he didn't give them any chance to

show their gratitude. He simply turned around and left in a graceful manner.

“What an amazing young man.”

Shan Ying couldn't help but praise. He wasn't too surprised by the sudden departure of this youngster. If the young man truly wished to show himself, he wouldn't have covered his face with that golden light. He obviously didn't wish for anyone to know his real identity.

“What a pity, we've missed a great opportunity to build a relationship with this man. It would be great if he could join the Profound River Palace.”

Shan Ying shook his head.

On the other side, Wu Ningzhu was frowning. She couldn't help but complain about that young man. All men started drooling upon seeing her breathtaking appearance, and countless geniuses in the Profound River Palace were constantly seeking ways to get closer to her. However, when that white-clothed youngster saw her approaching, he simply turned around and left. What did this mean? Did it mean that she simply wasn't attractive enough?

“That damn scoundrel, how dare he ignore me?”

Underneath her black veil, Wu Ningzhu's cherry lips had curled up. Little to her knowledge, this white-clothed young man had

already occupied a very special position in her heart. For the first time, Wu Ningzhu was interested in seeing a man's face. She really wanted to know what face was hidden underneath the golden light.

“Sigh... The hero has left, we didn't even have the chance to thank him.”

“I wonder what his background is. He just left right after saving the city; he didn't even ask for anything in return.”

“He is a true hero! His heroic image will star eternally in my heart!”

.....

All the people in the city were overwhelmed by Jiang Chen's kindness. Some even knelt down and kowtowed in the direction where Jiang Chen had disappeared with utmost sincerity.

Not long after Jiang Chen left, a few powerful men arrived at the city. None of these men were weaker than Shan Ying; they were all Late Combat Soul warriors from the Profound River Palace.

When Jiang Chen attracted Heavenly Tribulation and broke the defense mechanism that isolated the Dancing Sun City, the loud noise caused by the war was immediately heard by many. The Profound River Palace knew that today was the day where the Wu family was holding their ancestral worshipping ceremony.

Therefore, when they found out there was a war here, they immediately sent their mighty warriors here.

The expressions of these few men changed upon seeing the miserable state of the city. They immediately went over to Wu Ningzhu and Shan Ying, then an old man who seemed to be the leader asked, “Ning’er, what’s going on here?”

“Elder Liu, before all of you arrived, the Demon King Palace launched a surprise attack on this city. They completely sealed up the entire city so that no one on the outside could know what was going on inside. Four of the great guardians brought an army of demons here to slaughter all living humans.”

Wu Ningzhu said.

“What?! Four great guardians?!”

An old man cried out in shock. His expression changed upon hearing that four of the eight great guardians came here. As the Demon King Palace’s rivals, the eight great guardians of the Demon King Palace had been their enemies for a very long time. He deeply understood just how terrifying it was for four of these great guardians to show up.

“That’s right. If not for that white-clothed youngster, this city would already have become a city of the dead.”

Shan Ying added.

“White-clothed youngster?”

Elder Liu was startled.

“We don’t know where this genius comes from. Before today’s events, he had already annihilated the Demon Palace, and today, he even faced his Heavenly Tribulation in this city, and used that opportunity to kill three great guardians of the Demon King Palace.”

Without hesitating, Shan Ying explained all that had happened in great detail, including how Jiang Chen had faced his Heavenly Tribulation, and how he had used that to kill three of the great guardians.

“I have never heard of anyone who has had to face Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm; such an incredible monster can only possibly be found in legends! How come the Profound River Palace isn’t aware of this amazing young man in the Southern Continent? We need to find out more about this young man when we return to the Profound River Palace! The Demon King Palace has suffered greatly because of him; he has done us a great deed! If we can find him, we need to show him our gratitude! Even better would be recruiting him!”

Elder Liu said with mixed emotions. If it wasn’t for the fact that Shan Ying and Wu Ningzhu were the ones who told him what happened, he never would have believed it.

“The Dancing Sun City has suffered great losses as well. It looks like we need some time to rebuild everything. Let’s just cancel the ancestral worshipping ceremony.”

Wu Ningzhu shook her head and said.

“Hmph! It looks like we’re going to have difficult war with the Demon King Palace soon.”

Shan Ying coldly harrumphed.

“The Demon King Palace has lost three great guardians this time; this is a huge loss for them. I don’t think they will make any movements in the near future. However, we still need to prepare for the worst and prepare ourselves for war. Ning’er, you and Elder Shan Ying have been injured. You should go back and have a good rest.”

Elder Liu expressed his deep concern for Wu Ningzhu. As the Profound River Palace’s holy maiden, she was their future leader. That’s why these old men were so concerned about her injuries.

“En.”

Wu Ningzhu nodded her head. At the same time, she couldn’t help but look towards the direction Jiang Chen had disappeared into.

Jiang Chen had arrived at a place about 500 km away from the

Dancing Sun City. He was stepping on a white cloud, and was leisurely flying toward the Nangong family. Jiang Chen felt really satisfied with this trip to the Southern Continent, as he hadn't been here for long, but had already experienced such a great transformation in his cultivation.

With a flip of his palm, an azure-colored flame resembling a lotus immediately showed up on his fingertip. This flame was filled with a pure Yang aura, and one could hear the sound of thunder within, causing it to look incredibly mysterious.

“The purest Heavenly Thunder Flame underneath the heavens, it is the flame that belongs to Heaven and Earth, and it's a grade above the True Dragon Flame. I now possess both the True Dragon Flame and the Heavenly Thunder Flame. Once they've both merged, a new flame more powerful than any flame underneath the heavens will be born. There is nothing this flame can't burn, and it will be the greatest weapon against those evil things.”

A faint smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. He obtained the Heavenly Thunder Flame while facing his Heavenly Tribulation just now; this was his greatest gain. It would bring him unimaginable benefits in terms of battle, pill concoction, and forging of combat weapons.

“After passing the Minor Three Tribulations, I obtained an unprecedented transformation. I now have a total of 7,000 Dragon Marks in my body, and my cultivation has stabilized at the Early Combat Soul realm. However, in order to break through to the Mid Combat Soul realm, I'll need at least 10,000 Dragon Marks. That's a 3,000 Dragon Mark gap. It looks like I need to work harder.

Luckily, my foundation is incredibly strong now, so I can just cultivate as fast as I can without having to worry about any negative side effects.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. Although he had gained the complete acceptance of the Dragon Transformation skill and was able to control this amazing skill completely, he would still need to break through to a new stage before he could know what the requirement for breaking through to the next stage would be.

For example, right after he broke through to the Early Combat Soul realm, he immediately knew how many Dragon Marks he would need in order to break through to the Mid Combat Soul realm. He would need a total of 10,000 Dragon Marks.

“Seven thousand Dragon Marks, and my body has also been tempered by the Heavenly Thunder. With my current combat strength, almost no one in the Combat Soul realm can defeat me. Only those real Combat King warriors can surpass me.”

Jiang Chen was very confident. The further he cultivated the Dragon Transformation skill, the more abnormal he would become. He knew this from the beginning.

“My Heavenly Tribulation has attracted too much attention. Luckily, I hid my real identity. If not, it would be very hard for me to enjoy a quiet life.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. If he hadn’t covered up his face in Dancing Sun City, the Profound River Palace would definitely do

their best to seek him out. No had ever attracted Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm before, after all.

The reason why Jiang Chen hid his identity was because he didn't want to become high profile in the Southern Continent. He was just a traveler. Once he settled the Nangong family's matters, he would return to the Eastern Continent. Therefore, he didn't want to get involved in any other matters here, including the conflict between the Profound River Palace and the Demon King Palace. His only wish was to leave gracefully once everything was settled.

As for Wu Ningzhu, the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent, Jiang Chen also didn't want to have any connection with her. However, although he didn't want to have any connection to her, both of them would meet many times in the future. Of course, this would all happen at a later stage.

“Not much time is left now. I need to return to the Nangong family and see how Brother Nan has progressed.”

Jiang Chen took a step in mid-air and disappeared from where he was. He was flying toward Nangong City with incredible speed.

Chapter 407 – Crown Prince

Jiang Chen stopped along his way to admire the beautiful scenery of the Southern Continent at times. When he finally arrived at the city, it had only been two days since he left.

There were still twelve days before the Nangong family's duel. After arriving, Jiang Chen went straight to the Nangong family. As Nangong Yunfan had personally arranged for Jiang Chen to be made a special guest, he was able to enter whenever he wanted, without anyone preventing him from advancing. Thus, he went straight to Nangong Wentian's courtyard.

As Jiang Chen expected, Nangong Wentian had yet to break through to the Combat Soul realm. In fact, it wasn't easy to break through to the Combat Soul realm. Not everybody was like Jiang Chen, who didn't have any bottlenecks in his cultivation path. The transformation from the Divine Core realm to the Combat Soul realm was one of the biggest gaps for all warriors.

However, Jiang Chen was confident in Nangong Wentian. As long as he could master the essence of how to cultivate the Ten Thousand Everlasting, he would have a very high chance of breaking through to the Combat Soul realm before the duel.

Late at night, the sky was studded with bright stars. The night sky was much prettier in the Southern Continent than in the Eastern Continent. It seemed like the moon was rounder and bigger here. Jiang Chen glanced toward the Eastern Continent. He wasn't homesick, just worried about the problems waiting for him back there.

Five days later! Eastern Continent, Martial Saint Dynasty, Crown Prince's Palace!

On this day, the commander of the Golden Guards, the Crown Prince had exited his secluded cultivation, and a guest greeted him.

“Wu Cong, why are you in such a rush to see me? Is there anything urgent?”

Within the Crown Prince Palace's main hall, the Crown Prince was wearing a golden robe. He had a tall body and a fair skin complexion, and his eyes looked like the brightest stars in the starry sky; he was a handsome man. Furthermore, with a Late Combat Soul cultivation at his young age, as well as the fact that he is the Crown Prince, the future emperor, he was a man that many girls dreamt about.

“Crown Prince's cultivation has become much stronger since when you entered secluded cultivation! It looks like you're getting closer to the Combat King realm; this is something we need to celebrate!”

Wu Cong hastily flattered while bowing toward the Crown Prince. Although they were cousins, there was a huge gap between their statuses. Wu Cong was just an ordinary prince, so he would have to bow whenever he saw the Crown Prince.

The Crown Prince responded with a smile. He clearly enjoyed the flattery, as he was confident in his cultivation and combat

strength.

“You would never come here for no reason. I just finished my secluded cultivation, and you’re here. There must be something you need my help with, tell me.”

It seemed like the Crown Prince was in a good mood.

“Crown Prince, you were busy with your cultivation recently, so you might not know about this. An incredible man has appeared in the Eastern Continent during this genius, and people are calling him the number one genius of the Eastern Continent.”

Wu Cong said as he squinted his eyes. He was closely keeping watch on the Crown Prince’s expression. Indeed, right when the Crown Prince heard the words “number one genius,” his expression immediately became serious.

“Number one genius? Tell me about this guy.”

It looked like the Crown Prince was interested.

“His name is Jiang Chen, and he has done quite some major things recently. He has killed many geniuses and elders from both Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. Also, during the trip to the Island of Ice, I was nearly killed by him as well. He is an arrogant man who looks down on everybody; he doesn’t even take the Imperial Emperor seriously...”

Wu Cong started explaining everything related to Jiang Chen, including how he killed all those geniuses from the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan, how both superpowers brought this matter to the Imperial Emperor, how Jiang Chen refused to kneel down before the Imperial Emperor, how he sealed the Dimensional Crack with a formation... of course, he spiced things up a lot as well.

The reason why Wu Cong came to the Crown Prince was obvious. With the protection of the Ninth Emperor, Jiang Chen just hid himself within the Martial Palace. Because of that, they were unable to seek any conflicts with him. In the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, perhaps the Crown Prince was the only one who could take care of him. Furthermore, the Crown Prince had always claimed the title of number one genius for himself. Therefore, Wu Cong purposely told him about how amazing Jiang Chen was, in order to attract the Crown Prince's attention.

“Hmph! He's just an ignorant brat without any proper background! Who gave him the audacity to disrespect the Imperial Emperor?! He's just seeking death!”

The Crown Prince coldly harrumphed. In his mind, the status of the Imperial Emperor was supreme, and no one was allowed to insult the Imperial Emperor's dignity.

“That's right! That man is a lawless man who cares for nobody! The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect both wish they eat him alive, torture him brutally before killing him. But, the Imperial Emperor has laid down his judgment, all their resentments have now been canceled. Now, Jiang Chen is just hiding in the

Martial Palace, never leaving. We simply have no way of dealing with him.”

Wu Cong sighed.

“Little Brother Cong, it looks like you’re trying to make me deal with this Jiang Chen.”

The Crown Prince was a smart man; there was no way Wu Cong could hide his intentions from him.

“You’re a brilliant man, Crown Prince. However, I have no other way of doing it. Currently, within the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, only you, the Crown Prince can deal with him. Furthermore, if we allow this guy to keep growing, he will sooner or later become a great threat to the Crown Prince’s status.”

Wu Cong said.

“Hmph! He’s just a Divine Core warrior, while I’m the Crown Prince, the imperial prerogative! There is no way that nobody can compare with me! However, since the Imperial Emperor has laid down his judgment, and the Martial Palace is a place controlled by the Ninth Emperor, it won’t be good for me to get involved. Furthermore, with my status as the Crown Prince, if I take the initiative to seek out trouble with a young Divine Core warrior, it would be an insult to my status.”

The Crown Prince coldly harrumphed as he spoke. Regardless of

matters, he still had to give Wu Jiu some face. More importantly, the Crown Prince was a proud and arrogant man; he would never take Jiang Chen seriously.

“Of course, with Jiang Chen’s status, how could the Crown Prince be serious with him? The reason I came here today wasn’t to ask the Crown Prince to deal with Jiang Chen, but to tell you some good news.”

Wu Cong said with a smile on his face, as if the Crown Prince’s response was what he had expected.

“Oh? What good news you have?”

The Crown Prince looked at Wu Cong and asked.

“There is a girl who followed Jiang Chen here; her name is Yan Chenyu. She’s an outstanding beauty; pure as a jade! She’s like an immortal fairy walking on earth! Such an outstanding beauty, only the Crown Prince is a match for such a girl, that Jiang Chen is nothing!”

Wu Cong said while gnashing his teeth.

“Little brother, I think you’re just overreacting. I have spent my life with many girls, and I have seen all kinds of beauties.”

The Crown Prince laughed.

“It’s up to you whether or not you believe me. In any case, I was overwhelmed by her beauty when I first met her. If the Crown Prince doesn’t believe me, you can go to the Martial Palace and take a look yourself. After all, you won’t be going there to make trouble. I don’t think the Ninth Emperor will feel like his dignity is violated.”

Wu Cong greatly understood the Crown Prince. Jiang Chen alone was not enough to attract his interest, but with Yan Chenyu, Wu Cong believed that she would definitely attract the Crown Prince’s interest.

Indeed, after hearing what Wu Cong told him, the Crown Prince’s eyes immediately lit up. He slowly stood up from his seat and said, “Let’s go to the Martial Palace and have a look. If that Yan Chenyu is just an ordinary beauty, I’ll have to punish you.”

“Rest assured, Crown Prince, your little brother I can guarantee with my head, she is definitely a girl the Crown Prince will like!”

Wu Cong said with a wicked smile. The first step of his wicked plot had succeeded.

Both men immediately left the Crown Prince Palace and started flying toward the Martial Palace. With their speed, it wouldn’t take much time for them to arrive at the Martial Palace.

Soon, both men arrived at the Martial Palace. With their status in the Martial Saint Dynasty, no one would stop them from going

further. Therefore, they went straight into the Marital Palace.

“Where is that Jiang Chen? Since I’m here, I might as well meet him.”

The Crown Prince said.

“There.”

Wu Cong already knew where Jiang Chen and his friends were staying. Without hesitating, he brought the Crown Prince to their courtyard.

Right at this moment, Yan Chenyu and Big Yellow were resting within the courtyard while enjoying a sunbath. Han Yan wasn’t here, as he was trying to break through to the Combat Soul realm in secluded cultivation. Only Yan Chenyu and Big Yellow were in the courtyard right now.

Suddenly, the lazy Big Yellow stood up from the ground. Two bright beams escaped from his eyes as he opened them to look at the two men who had suddenly appeared in their courtyard.

He didn’t know who that handsome man in the imperial robe was, but Wu Cong who stood next to him was no stranger to him. Back on the Island of Ice, Wu Cong was the man who kept giving them trouble. Since that young man in the imperial robe came together with Wu Cong, he was obviously not someone good. This was Big Yellow’s first impression of the Crown Prince.

When the Crown Prince landed inside the courtyard, he immediately saw Yan Chenyu. When his eyes landed on her face, he became unable to remove them.

Pure and holy as the white snow, donning white clothes like a fairy, portraying a holy aura from all over her body. No impurities or blemishes could be found on her spectacular face. How could such a magnificent girl exist in this world? In just this short moment, the Crown Prince had been completely conquered by Yan Chenyu's beauty. Although he claimed to have seen all kinds of beautiful girls in his life, he had never met such an amazing girl before.

“What a beautiful woman.”

The Crown Prince couldn't help but praise.

The Crown Prince's gaze was very aggressive. His gaze caused Yan Chenyu to feel disgusted; she simply furrowed her brows.

Suddenly, a majestic big yellow dog inappropriately blocked in front of Yan Chenyu. He spat out his long tongue toward Wu Cong and the Crown Prince, saliva constantly dripping out. The magnificent scene was instantly interrupted, and it wasn't until now that the Crown Prince noticed that there was a dog right next to Yan Chenyu. He felt a strong desire to rip this dog to pieces.

“Who are you? What's your purpose here?”

Big Yellow asked in a rude manner.

“Ridiculous! Damned dog, do you know who you are talking to?! He is the Crown Prince!”

Wu Cong shouted out loudly.

“Can a Crown Prince intrude private property? You’re at the Martial Palace now, if you have anything to tell us, tell us now! If not, get the hell outta here!”

Big Yellow impatiently scolded, not forgetting to wave his hooves, as if he was a human.

“You’re courting death!”

Wu Cong was immediately pissed off. He had a really bad impression of this dog. Back on the Island of Ice, he strongly desired to tear off this damned dog’s skin, as this dog had a really fierce mouth.

Right before Wu Cong took any action, he was stopped by the Crown Prince, “Be a gentleman, we’re not here to fight.”

The Crown Prince tidied up his clothes in an elegant demeanor. Of course, only he thought that his actions were elegant. However, in Yan Chenyu’s eyes, the only man was Jiang Chen.

“Where is Jiang Chen? Get him out here; the Crown Prince wants to see him.”

Wu Cong said with a loud voice. As Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian had left the Martial Palace in secret to proceed to the Southern Continent, no one except his friends knew that he wasn't here.

Chapter 408 – The Duel

“Jiang Chen isn’t around; you guys can leave now.”

Big Yellow said in a rude manner. He disliked Prince Wu Cong. Back on the Island of Ice, if not for Wu Lang convincing Jiang Chen not to kill him, Wu Cong would already have been killed by Jiang Chen. As for this Crown Prince, since he was lustfully looking at Yan Chenyu, he obviously wasn’t a good man either, causing Big Yellow to hate him as well.

“Bastard, you’re just a dog, how dare you talk to me like that?! Is that Jiang Chen scared of us and hiding somewhere? Quickly ask him to come out and greet the Crown Prince, now!”

Wu Cong said while gnashing his teeth in anger. He strongly desired to rip this dog into pieces.

“Damn you, who do you think you are?! You’re just a loser who was defeated by Jiang Chen! Back on the Island of Ice, if it wasn’t for Wu Lang, you would have been killed by Jiang Chen! If Jiang Chen was here, he would throw you outta this place as if he was throwing a chicken away!”

Big Yellow truly had an abominable mouth. When faced with someone like Wu Cong, he wouldn’t hold back in the slightest.

“You’re courting death!”

Wu Cong was instantly enraged. This dog was truly fierce; no ordinary man could stand still after hearing him speaking, let alone the prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty. Without hesitating, Wu Cong stretched his arm forward, grabbing toward Big Yellow.

Big Yellow simply remained still without moving a bit; it was actually the Crown Prince who moved. The Crown Prince casually unleashed a powerful energy, blocking Wu Cong's attack. After that, he scolded, "Wu Cong, we're not here to cause trouble, watch yourself!"

"Yes!"

Wu Cong quickly bowed toward the Crown Prince. However, a sneer secretly emerged on his face. He knew the Crown Prince's character really well. If they weren't here, this dog would have long ago been killed by the Crown Prince. However, the Crown Prince wanted to maintain an elegant demeanor in front of Yan Chenyu. He clearly had his eyes set on her; he wanted to leave a good impression.

As long as the Crown Prince took a fancy to Yan Chenyu, Wu Cong's evil plot would be considered successful.

In a refined and courteous manner, the Crown Prince turned to Yan Chenyu and said, "Someone told me that young miss is an outstanding one of a kind beauty, and after witnessing it for myself, you are indeed a fairy walking on earth. I wonder, would young miss Yan do me a favor and be my guest at the Crown Prince Palace?"

The Crown Prince threw out his invitation in a straightaway manner. He had a warm smile on his face, and he portrayed an image of a gentleman. No woman would reject the invitation of a handsome man who possessed his status.

But unfortunately, Yan Chenyu was not that type of woman.

“Thank you for your invitation, Crown Prince. I do appreciate your kindness, but I won’t go to the Crown Prince Palace.”

Yan Chenyu immediately rejected the invitation. In her heart, aside from Jiang Chen, all other men were like dirt.

Ugh...

The smiling Crown Prince was suddenly startled. He had actually been rejected in such a straightforward manner. This was the first time in his life he had experienced anything like this.

However, a warm smile immediately emerged on the Crown Prince’s face once again, “Since miss Yan doesn’t want to go to the Crown Prince Palace, I will get someone to arrange a better place for you to cultivate in the Martial Palace. This place is too simple and crude.”

“No need, I like this place.”

After saying that, Yan Chenyu simply turned around and left. Her behavior instantly caused the Crown Prince's face to tremble. He had never experienced such cold treatment in his life; no woman had ever dared reject his invitation; Yan Chenyu was the first!

“Ridiculous...”

Wu Cong shouted at Yan Chenyu, but he was immediately stopped by the Crown Prince.

“Crown Prince, our Little Yu is betrothed to someone, so you better save your efforts.”

Big Yellow said to the Crown Prince with an indifferent tone. This dog didn't care who he was speaking to, if he didn't like that person, even if he was facing the Imperial Emperor, he just wouldn't give a damn.

“No man except me is good enough for a girl like Miss Yan!”

The Crown Prince glanced coldly at Big Yellow. After that, he turned around and left with Wu Cong.

“Fuck, such an arrogant asshole!”

Big Yellow cursed toward both men's back.

The Crown Prince had a gloomy expression on his face as he left. This was the first time in his entire life that he had tasted defeat.

“Crown Prince; that Yan Chenyu doesn’t take you seriously. I think you should let her have a taste of your strength! We can just bring her to the Crown Prince Palace by force; then you can treat her however you want!”

Wu Cong kept fanning the flames from the side.

“Hmph! The woman that I, the Crown Prince desire, will always be mine! Who is that Jiang Chen anyway? A girl with outstanding beauty like Yan Chenyu should only be mine! How dare she reject me like this? When I finally get her on my bed, I’ll definitely let her taste my strength!”

The Crown Prince coldly harrumphed.

“What’s your plan, Crown Prince?”

An astute glow emerged within Wu Cong’s eyes.

“No hurry, we can’t use force on a girl like this, let’s take it slow, I have plenty of time. With my charisma, I refuse to believe I can’t win her heart.”

The Crown Prince smiled, portraying utmost confidence.

“Of course, you’re a handsome and strong man, and you’re a Late Combat Soul warrior at such a young age! You’re the Crown Prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the next Imperial Emperor, and you are the commander of all Golden Guards! All women underneath the heavens dream about jumping into your embrace, and that Yan Chenyu is no exception!”

Wu Cong flattered the Crown Prince once again. He was really happy right now. Judging from how the Crown Prince was behaving, it was obvious that the Crown Prince was now determined to put his hands on Yan Chenyu, and this was exactly the result Wu Cong wanted to see. Using the Crown Prince as the trigger, there would definitely be a great conflict between him and Jiang Chen soon.

.....

Southern Continent, Nangong family!

During the past few days, Jiang Chen had been accompanying Nangong Wentian in his secluded cultivation. While Nangong Wentian was breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, Jiang Chen had been working on stabilizing his cultivation. He had obtained quite a lot of benefits after the Minor Three Tribulations. Therefore, he needed some time to digest all of them.

“The duel will be in seven days. Judging from Brother Nan’s aura, I think he’ll make it.”

Jiang Chen could clearly sense the constant changes in Nangong

Wentian's aura; it was becoming increasingly more profound. This was a good transformation for Nangong Wentian, good news.

Besides that, Jiang Chen was greatly interested in the Nangong family's secret treasure, the one that could produce Nine Solar Holy Water. However, since he was just a guest, he had no way of checking this treasure out. Therefore, he had to wait until after the duels to try and find an opportunity to get in touch with it.

The time flashed by, and seven days had passed. The Crown Prince would go to the Martial Palace every single day to look for Yan Chenyu and try his best to invite her to his Crown Prince Palace. However, his invitations had all been rejected by her.

Although the Crown Prince was still able to show an elegant demeanor, his patience had clearly started showing signs of running out.

At the same time, the Nangong family's most important day had finally arrived. Early in the morning, the entire Nangong family had become lively. Right in the city's center square, Nangong Yunzheng and his men had arrived, and were waiting for the duels to begin.

A lofty man stood next to Nangong Yunzheng. Although he looked really young, his aura was incredibly strong; he was a mighty Combat Soul warrior. He was showing a prideful yet arrogant expression. This man was none other than Nangong Yunzheng's son, Nangong Wentian's opponent; Nangong Wenyen!

Behind them were a group of men from Nangong Yunzheng's group. There were also some guest warriors mixed in with them. Each of these guests had a specific position and status.

Opposite of them was the group from the original Nangong family. The men who led them was the current family chief, Nangong Yunfan, as well as Elder Tu Yi and all the Combat Soul warriors of the Nangong family. However, some of them still had pale expressions on their faces, as Nangong Wentian was still in secluded cultivation, trying his best to break through to the Combat Soul realm. He had yet to exit his secluded cultivation.

“Nangong Yunfan, let's not waste any more time and start our duel! I heard that Nangong Wentian has come back, get him out now and fight the first duel with Wenyan! We'll decide who the winner today is with three duels; the winner will gain ownership of that treasure!”

Nangong Yunzheng said. He had prepared well for today's duel, so he was naturally very confident.

“Nangong Yunzheng; the Nangong family's traitor!”

Tu Yi became really angry with seeing Nangong Yunzheng.

“Elder Tu, save your breath. If you want, you can still join me now. I promise that you will have the same position in the Nangong family in the future.”

Nangong Yunzheng said.

“Bullshit! You ungrateful son!”

Tu Yi simply responded with a curse.

“Hmph! Let’s fight then!”

Nangong Wenyen coldly harrumphed. His body moved, and he jumped straight onto the tall fighting stage. After that, he shouted out with a loud voice, “Nangong Wentian, come here and face your death! Don’t be a coward!”

This loud shout instantly resounded throughout the entire Nangong family area. However, there was no response.

Right now, Nangong Wentian was still in his secluded cultivation. Jiang Chen who stood outside his room could clearly feel his aura. Nangong Wentian’s aura had changed significantly, and in fact, he had already broken through to the Combat Soul realm. The reason why he was still in cultivation was because he gained some new insights regarding the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, and he was at a critical moment of his cultivation of the skill.

Within the Nangong family’s center square, Nangong Wenyen stood tall all alone on the fighting stage, ridiculing his opponent. And yet, the young master of the Nangong family, Nangong Wentian was nowhere to be found. This situation embarrassed a

lot of people form the original Nangong family.

“Haha, looks like Nangong Wentian is just a coward who is afraid of death! How can a man like him be the young master of the Nangong family? I think it would be better if he just came out and surrendered, it’s truly pointless to keep hiding from us!”

One of the guest warriors from Nangong Yunzheng’s camp burst into laughter and began throwing out sarcastic words.

“That’s right; this is too embarrassing!”

“Nangong Wentian, come out and face your death!”

“Why don’t you just come out and surrender?!”

.....

Nangong Yunzheng’s group was bustling with noise. The absence of Nangong Wentian made the people from Nangong Yunfan’s group feel extremely embarrassed. This was even worse than just admitting defeat.

“What happened to Wentian? This isn’t his style at all. Even if he didn’t manage to break through to the Combat Soul realm, he would still come out and fight because of his temper.”

Tu Yi said as he furrowed his brows.

“Hmph! Nangong Yunfan, it’s meaningless to keep wasting time like this. I’ll give you five more minutes, and if Nangong Wentian still doesn’t show up, I’ll consider this first duel’s victor Wenyen!”

Nangong Yunzheng let out a cold snort and spoke.

Boom!

Right after Nangong Yunzheng finished speaking, an explosive sound could be heard from the southern side of the Nangong family. Violent airwaves shot up into the sky, and with that, a young man with a tall and robust body appeared.

“Who said that I, Nangong Wentian doesn’t dare fight this duel?!”

Nangong Wentian’s voice was so loud that it resembled a sudden clap of thunder. With a flash, he appeared on the fighting stage.

Chapter 409 – Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants

When Nangong Wentian made his appearance, a young white-clothed man could be seen following. However, since everyone was looking at Nangong Wentian now, no one really paid any attention to this white-clothed youngster.

Nangong Wentian had arrived at the last moment in a mighty manner. His arrival attracted the attention of everyone present. Right now, Nangong Wentian's energy was extremely strong, and cracking like sounds could be heard from his body. He was incredibly powerful now, as he had gone through a thorough transformation from his very roots. His aura was in no way inferior to Nangong Wenyan's.

“Wentian has broken through to the Combat Soul realm? Good, perfect!”

Nangong Yunfan was surprised. His entire body was even trembling because of the immense excitement he felt.

“Haha, good job Wentian! We can win this duel!”

Tu Yi was laughed out loudly. He was incredibly happy that Nangong Wentian had finally broken through to the Combat Soul realm at this last moment. This truly allowed the people of the Nangong family to see a ray of hope regarding today's duel.

“So young master was in the middle of breaking through to the Combat Soul realm just now, that’s why he didn’t show up! I thought he was afraid of this duel!”

“Damn you! Young master isn’t afraid of anything, how could he be a coward? Since he has now broken through to the Combat Soul realm, I’m sure he’ll beat Nangong Wenyen’s head into that of a pig!”

“It’s hard to tell. Both of them have similar talent, and Nangong Wenyen broke through to the Combat Soul realm some time ago, whereas young master just had his breakthrough. Young master isn’t in an advantageous position.”

“We still have hope. The situation is after all much better than when he was only a Divine Core warrior. Let’s just sit back and watch how things go, the duel between two elite geniuses of the younger generation will definitely be exciting!”

.....

All the people of the Nangong family were talking amongst themselves, talking about who was the stronger one. In any case, after Nangong Wentian broke through to the Combat Soul realm, this duel was finally fair. If he came here as a Divine Core warrior, he would definitely have died today.

“That little bastard really broke through to the Combat Soul realm.”

Nangong Yunzheng's face turned pale. He thought Nangong Wentian would appear on the stage a Divine Core warrior, he never expected him to break through to the Combat Soul realm in such a short amount of time. And, it seemed he had now become strong enough to fight an equal match with his son.

“Don't worry, this guy obviously just broke through to the Combat Soul realm. Compared to young master Wenyen, he is still far behind. I don't think he'll be a match for young master Wenyen.”

One of the guest warriors standing next to Nangong Yunzheng said.

“Alright, let the duel begin!”

Nangong Yunfan shouted out, signaling the beginning of today's first duel; the first of three. This first duel, the duel between the two geniuses of the younger generation was the key to both parties' victory.

On top of the fighting stage, Nangong Wentian and Nangong Wenyen were standing opposite to each other, glaring fiercely at each other.

“Wentian, if I was you, I'd just admit defeat right away and let your father give up the family chief position. With that, you can still keep your life. Let me tell you, today's duel is a life and death match, and I won't be showing you any mercy when I fight! Even now that you've broken through to the Combat Soul realm, you're

still not my match!”

Nangong Wenyen said. He was really confident in his own strength.

“I really don’t know where your confidence comes from. Nangong Wenyen, you and I have been fighting each other since we were small. Today, let’s put an end to this!”

Nangong Wentian portrayed great confidence. He too did not take Nangong Wenyen seriously.

“Hmph! Wentian, you’re just wasting your time! You’ve never been a match for me in any aspects ever since we were young, and your talent is inferior to mine. So, how are you going to fight me? Your young master position should be mine, it was just grandfather being partial and treating you better! Since you and your father refuse to realize this mistake, I’ll just kill you today and take what belongs to me!”

Nangong Wenyen coldly harrumphed. Powerful energy burst out from his body and swept across the entire fighting stage. The energy turned into a powerful wind and blew toward Nangong Wentian.

Hmph!

Nangong Wentian responded with a cold harrumph as well. He unleashed his energy as well, sending a tsunami-like wave of

energy toward his opponent.

Boom!

The two tsunami-like energies collided and produced a loud explosive sound, and an energy whirlpool was created right in the center of the collision. When the shockwaves from the collision swept across the crowds, it made all the weaker people breathe heavily. Luckily, a defense mechanism had been constructed on the fighting stage by some mighty warriors. If not, this first attack alone would simply have destroyed the entire fighting stage.

Underneath the fighting stage, everyone were watching the fight nervously. Jiang Chen squinted his eyes as he watched both fighters carefully. He was easily able to find out about the gap between these two men with his senses.

“Both men are of similar strength, and it isn’t easy for one to defeat the other. However, Brother Nan’s Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill is far stronger than what it seems from the outside, giving him incredible combat strength. Therefore, Brother Nan has the higher chance of winning this duel. He will win for sure.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. He believed that Nangong Wentian would win this first match. With that, the Nangong family would have their first victory, and as long as they won the second duel, they could just skip the third match.

“Thousand Ripples Stone Toss!”

Nangong Wenyen suddenly cried out and flew into the sky; forcefully throwing a punch at Nangong Wentian. This punch carried a strong energy which formed into an energy whirlpool. Within a split second, a gigantic fist emerged from the center of this energy whirlpool, sending powerful energy ripples that looked like sprays of seawater splashing around all over the place. It was both incredibly lethal and destructive.

The frightening attack quickly approached Nangong Wentian's face.

“Barbarian Elephant Stomping the Heavens!”

Nangong Wentian shouted out loudly as well. Then, he jumped into the sky. After that, an illusionary image of a barbarian elephant appeared outside his body. It was a gigantic golden barbarian elephant, and it had completely overlapped and merged with Nangong Wentian; giving people an impression that Nangong Wentian was now the barbarian elephant.

Bam!

The barbarian elephant unleashed by Nangong Wentian raised its huge feet and immediately stepped onto the illusionary gigantic fist. With a loud explosive sound, the fist was instantly shattered, and the energy ripples shooting out from the energy whirlpool disappeared as well. But now, the illusionary image of the barbarian elephant had started fading.

“Good!”

Tu Yi couldn't help but shout. Nangong Wentian's formidable behavior had exceeded his expectations; it looked like he had a really high chance of winning.

“Mountain Clasp!”

After the first attack failed, Nangong Wenyan immediately unleashed his second attack. He started drawing something in front of him with both hands, then he unleashed golden energies which turned into a 30 meter tall golden mountain. It was a mountain formed entirely from energy, and it carried the weight of a real mountain. This was an attack that relied on raw strength, and it wasn't an attack that anybody could withstand.

Bang!

The golden mountain produced a loud explosive sound as it was thrown by Nangong Wenyan toward Nangong Wentian.

“Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants!”

Nangong Wentian showed no signs of being scared. Once again, he transformed into a barbarian elephants. An illusionary image of a barbarian elephant appeared outside of his body, and it was just as big as the golden mountain. The elephant then charged violently toward the golden mountain.

It wasn't difficult to tell that Nangong Wentian had mastered the essence of the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, as any attack he unleashed possessed formidable strength.

Bang!

This was a collision of pure strength. Frightening energy ripples swept across the scene, causing even the air to tremble violently. Nangong Wentian and Nangong Wenyen slammed into each other with their attacks dozens of times, but neither was able to defeat the other.

“So strong! Both men are only Early Combat Soul warriors, especially Wentian who just broke through to the Combat Soul realm! And yet, he actually has the combat strength of a Mid Combat Soul warrior. Perhaps even I wouldn't be able to defeat him now.”

A Mid Combat Soul Elder who stood next to Tu Yi couldn't help but say. Although Nangong Wentian and Nangong Wenyen were only Early Combat Soul warriors, they both possessed the combat strength of someone at the Mid Combat Soul realm, more than enough for either of them to fight this Mid Combat Soul Elder.

They were geniuses with extraordinary talents and abilities.

“Enough playing around! Ancient Savaged Elephant!”

Nangong Wentian roared out, causing his energy to surge once

again. This time, an Ancient Barbarian Elephant appeared on his back. With a pressure coming from the barbarian beast, he simply charged toward Nangong Wenyen and launched his attack.

“What?!”

Nangong Wenyen cried out in shock, a look of disbelief visible in both eyes. He never thought that Nangong Wentian still had such an amazing ability up his sleeves. It increased his combat strength once again and put a huge pressure on Nangong Wenyen.

“Defend!”

Nangong Wenyen hurriedly countered with his last resort, unleashing a huge amount of energy beams toward Nangong Wentian. However, when faced with this mighty Ancient Barbarian Elephant, these attacks were useless.

Crack!

The energy beams were instantly destroyed by the Ancient Barbarian Elephant, and Nangong Wenyen was knocked dozens of meters away away, spitting out blood along his way.

The Ancient Barbarian Elephant roared out and went back into Nangong Wentian’s body. Although he had injured Nangong Wenyen and obtained unexpected results, unleashing the image of the Ancient Barbaric Elephant consumed a huge amount of Nangong Wentian’s energy. He now had less energy than Nangong

Wenye, but his current condition was much better than the injured Nangong Wenye.

“What?!”

Seeing this, Nangong Yunzheng cried out in shock and nearly jumped. All the men standing behind him had ugly expressions on their faces. No one had ever thought that this Nangong Wentian who had just broken through to the Combat Soul realm could really defeat Nangong Wenye; this had completely disrupted their original plan.

“Haha, good!”

Compared to Nangong Yunzheng, although Nangong Yunfan was shocked by what just happened as well, his shock was mixed in with pleasant surprise. His son was going to win the first duel, and as today’s matches would decide the future of the Nangong family, if Nangong Wentian could really defeat Nangong Wenye, not only would that increase their chance of final victory, more importantly, Nangong Wentian had used his own strength to defend his position as the young master. He used his formidable strength to tell everyone that he; Nangong Wentian was more capable than anyone else to hold the position of young master.

“Wentian is really amazing! It looks like Nangong Wenye is going to lose this match.”

A bright smile bloomed onto Tu Yi’s face.

Chapter 410 – Spare Your Pathetic Life

Nangong Wentian's formidable combat strength made everyone from the main Nangong family feel happy and excited. Although the fight still wasn't over, judging from the current situation, Nangong Wenyen was no longer in a good condition, and as he wasn't able to defend himself from Nangong Wentian's attack even when he was at top shape, it would be much harder now that he was injured.

“Nangong Wenyen, didn't you say you've been superior to me in all aspects since we were small? What about now?”

Nangong Wentian spoke with the same tone Nangong Wenyen used to speak to him just now. At the same time, there was a mocking expression on his face.

“Hmph! Do you really think you've won? This is a death match, and you have to kill me in order to win! You really think you can defeat me just from being in an advantageous position? You're too naïve!”

Nangong Wenyen coldly harrumphed. With a flip of his palm, he retrieved a golden pill and swallowed it. After that, his energy rose up to his peak, and within the blink of an eye, he had returned to his top shape.

“Hmph! If I can defeat you once, I can do it a second time as well!”

Nangong Wentian coldly harrumphed, then immediately struck out with his fist. The punch created tremendous energy waves that carried the mightiness of a Barbarian Elephant. A golden beam approached Nangong Wenyen's face in the blink of an eye.

Clang!

Nangong Wenyen's black hair was fluttering in the strong wind. His arm flashed, and a silver spear made from unknown materials suddenly appeared. It was a terrifying weapon; its body was fully covered with mystical patterns, and it had a razor sharp tip that looked to have been made from black ice. It was constantly emitting a cold shine, causing those who looked at it to feel slightly afraid.

Buzz!

A buzzing sound could be heard from this silver spear. The air surrounding the spear was trembling violently, and huge energy ripples could be seen around it. At the same time, Nangong Wenyen launched his attack. With the pike in his hand, he charged forward with incredible speed, causing the powerful spear to collide with the energy beam unleashed by Nangong Wentian.

Bang!

Nangong Wenyen was back at top shape, allowing him to once more possess formidable combat strength. That, combined with the help of the terrifying spear in his hand, his combat strength was higher than when the fight started, it had gone up to an

amazing level. With just a single strike, he shattered Nangong Wentian's attack. After destroying Nangong Wentian's attack, the silver spear didn't slow down, it continued piercing toward Nangong Wentian like a poisonous snake.

Although Nangong Wenyen was fast, Nangong Wentian was even faster. After mastering the essence of the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, he had experienced a transformation from his very roots. Following a bright blink of light, the Myriad Star Ruler instantly appeared in his hand. This weapon was something he had gotten when he found the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, and he had later forged it into his Natal Weapon.

Not only was this gigantic ruler a powerful weapon, it could also absorb energy from the stars. Nangong Wentian would nearly every night use the energy of the stars to temper his Combat Weapon, as well as his strength, providing himself with a great benefit.

Swoosh!

Nangong Wentian raised the gigantic ruler high up into the air and forcefully swung it forward, unleashing a huge energy beam that looked like a gigantic blue dragon made entirely from stars. In the blink of an eye, it had absorbed all the natural Yuan energy in the surrounding area.

Boom!

The energy beam unleashed by the Myriad Star Ruler instantly collided with the silver spear, producing a loud explosive sound that rang out in everyone's mind. The energy ripples produced by the collision turned into a gigantic, deadly energy tornado. If anyone were careless enough to get pulled into this tornado; that person would immediately be torn apart and die miserably.

Tap, tap, tap!

The collision caused Nangong Wenyen to take a few steps back before he could finally stabilize his body. His aura was shaking, and his arms were trembling.

“Impossible, he just broke through to the Combat Soul realm, why does he have such powerful combat strength, even stronger than mine?!”

Nangong Wenyen was terrified this time. In his mind, he had always looked down on Nangong Wentian, and had never taken this cousin of his seriously. He was more than 100 percent confident that he would defeat Nangong Wentian in this duel. However, he had now been defeated by his cousin twice; this was a reality he could never accept.

“Nangong Wenyen, take this attack next!”

Nangong Wentian's hair was violently fluttering in the strong wind, and his appearance seemed very imposing, as if he had turned into an ancient barbaric beast from the ancient era. He was portraying a wild image from all over. In an instant, the Myriad

Star Ruler in his hand transformed into a gigantic ruler dozens of meters long. Then, he simply swung it through the sky toward Nangong Wenyen's head.

“I refuse to believe that you can defeat me!”

Nangong Wenyen furiously gnashed his teeth, then gripped his silver spear tightly and dashed forward, heading toward the gigantic ruler that was approaching him.

Seeing this, Jiang Chen who stood in the crowd couldn't help but shake his head. At the same time, a faint smile appeared on his face. Nangong Wenyen's mind had been disturbed by the two losses; which affected his combat strength. Therefore, there was no way he could prevail over Nangong Wentian who had such great momentum right now. The result of this duel was now obvious; Nangong Wenyen would soon taste defeat.

Bam!

The Myriad Star Ruler came rushing down from the sky with tremendous force. The silver spear had no way of fighting against it, so once again, Nangong Wenyen was hit and forced to cough out a mouthful of blood. The silver spear was nearly knocked out from his grip, and he was instantly thrown onto the ground.

Haha...

Nangong Wentian started laughing out loudly. However, he

didn't stop attacking. His attacks rained down on Nangong Wenyen like a raging storm.

Bam!

Nangong Wenyen was finally unable to defend himself from the final strike. The silver spear in his hand was knocked out and taken away by Nangong Wentian. His body was now filled with wounds, and blood was pouring out of these wounds nonstop.

“What?!”

Nangong Yunzheng cried out in shock. He couldn't believe his own eyes; this was a scene that wouldn't appear even in his wildest dreams! Or put it this way, he had expected this result, but the characters had changed. He expected Nangong Wentian to be the one who got beaten, not his son.

“How can this be possible, young master Wenyen was defeated?”

All the guest warriors from Nangong Yunzheng's side were also shocked by the outcome. This differed completely from their original plan.

“Haha, good, perfect!”

Nangong Yunfan burst into laughter. Right at this moment, only those few positive words were capable of describing how happy he was. Nangong Wentian had won the first match! Not only did that

mean they had a chance of winning today's competition, it also meant that his strong was the strongest of the Nangong family's younger generation; the best candidate for the young master position.

“Young master is really formidable; he actually possess such incredible combat strength even though he just broke through to the Combat Soul realm! If I didn't witness this with my own eyes; I wouldn't have believed it!”

“Do you guys see that? This is what I call a true peerless genius! An amazing existence like our young master cannot be judged using ordinary logic! Even though he just broke through to the Combat Soul realm, he is not someone Nangong Wenyen can compare with!”

“Just keep watching, this is a deathmatch! I wonder, will Nangong Wenyen be killed or not? Nangong Wenyen is Nangong Yunzheng's only son, and if he dies, perhaps Nangong Yunzheng will immediately go crazy.”

.....

The crowd became restless. No one had expected this outcome; nobody had thought that Nangong Wentian would win this match. They even though he was a coward as he was a bit late to the duel. However, he had ended up winning the match, and Nangong Wenyen whom almost everyone thought would win was now lying on the ground like a dead dog.

Tap!

Nangong Wentian landed back onto the fighting stage. With one hand holding the gigantic ruler and the other hand holding the silver spear, he walked step by step toward Nangong Wenyen. Finally, he pressed the razor sharp tip of the silver spear against Nangong Wenyen's forehead.

Haa!

Right at this moment, everyone gasped as they looked at what was about to happen. All expressions changed as Nangong Wentian placed the tip of the silver spear on Nangong Wenyen's forehead. Today's match was a deathmatch, and if Nangong Wentian really killed Nangong Wenyen, it wouldn't be considered breaking the rules.

“Stop!”

Nangong Yunzheng suddenly shouted out. His body then flashed toward the fighting stage. Although he was fast, the family chief Nangong Yunfan had moved as well, and blocked Nangong Yunzheng's path.

“Elder brother, what are you trying to do?”

A sneer emerged onto Nangong Yunfan's face.

“Yunfan, Wenyen has lost this match, he doesn't have to die!”

Nangong Yunzheng loudly said.

“This is a deathmatch! You know the rules; even I am unable to interfere with what is happening on the fighting stage! Whether or not Nangong Wenyen dies, it’s all up to Wentian, and no one can stop him; including you!”

Nangong Yunfan blocked Nangong Yunzheng’s path with his tall and muscular body. It was clearly impossible for Nangong Yunzheng to get over there and save his son.

Furthermore, he had personally agreed to this rule. If he appeared on the fighting stage now, it would be no different from breaking his own rules, and how could a man like that obtain the trust of his people? If he truly became the family chief in the future, no one would have faith in him.

Crack...

Nangong Yunzheng clenched his fist so tightly that cracking sounds could be heard. However, there was nothing he could do except stare angrily at the fighting stage.

Right at this moment, everyone were looking at the fighting stage, focusing on the silver spear pressing against Nangong Wenyen’s forehead. Right now, Nangong Wenyen’s life was in Nangong Wentian’s hands, and he was at the brink of death.

“No, I refuse to give in!”

Nangong Wenyen struggled to climb up from the ground. However, he was like an arrow at the end of its flight, and he didn't even have the strength to stand up. Therefore, he was now like a limb waiting to be slaughtered by Nangong Wentian.

“Nangong Wenyen, although this is a deathmatch, and you deserve death for what you and your father have done, you are after all part of the Nangong family. I, Nangong Wentian will never kill those of my own blood! Therefore, I will spare your pathetic life today! In the future, stay out of my sight. Now, get the hell outta here!”

After Nangong Wentian finished speaking, he simply delivered a powerful kick to Nangong Wenyen, throwing him off the fighting stage and causing him to spit out another mouthful of blood. Half of this blood came out because of the powerful kick, while the other half came out because of his anger. This was an insult, an unbearable insult! From now on, he could never hold his head up high again!

“Wenyen!”

Nangong Yunzheng ran forward and caught Nangong Wenyen in his arms, then immediately gave him a pill. Although his son had been defeated, his life was at least safe now.

Above the fighting stage, Nangong Wentian stored the Myriad Star Ruler and the silver spear in his storage ring, then he returned

to the main Nangong family group. Of course, he wasn't going to return the silver spear to Nangong Wenyen. He didn't kill this cousin, therefore, this silver spear should be his reward for defeating him.

“Young man, you've done a good job! I'm proud of you!”

Nangong Yunfan forcefully patted his son's shoulder, his face covered in pride. Not only was he praising Nangong Wentian for having defeated Nangong Wenyen with his formidable strength, he was also feeling proud about Nangong Wentian's final decision. Nangong Wenyen was after all a part of the Nangong family, and if Nangong Wentian really killed him in front of everybody, it would be nothing but a huge negative impact to Nangong Wentian's image.

Chapter 411 – Second Match

“Wentian, well done!”

Tu Yi’s eyes were curved in the shape of a crescent moon as he laughed out joyfully. There was no reason for him to be any happier than he was now. He had watched Nangong Wentian grow up ever since he was born, and now, witnessing how strong Nangong Wentian had become felt really pleasant to him. Most importantly, they had won the first match, greatly raising the spirits of those from the main Nangong family and causing to see hope.

“It’s really great that Wentian was able to defeat Wenyen! As long as chief can defeat Nangong Yunzheng in the second match, we’ll be able to skip the third match. With the best of three victory in hand, even those elders from the Profound River Palace won’t be able to point their fingers at us!”

Elder Liang Zhui said.

“That’s right! Yunfan, we’ll depend on you for this second match! However, there isn’t much difference between your and Yunzheng’s strength. Not only that, all your abilities were taught to both of you by your father. I think it will be difficult for a winner to emerge.”

Tu Yi turned to Nangong Yunfan and said. They had won the first match, and although the second match wasn’t the most critical, it was still the key to victory for the Nangong family,

because as long as they won this match, the victory would be theirs. However, if they lost, the consequences would be really bad.

As the third match was fought between the helper each side found. The helper Nangong Yunzheng found had yet to show up, and although no one knew who that helper was, it wasn't difficult for them to imagine that it must be an extremely strong warrior from the Profound River Palace. Even with Tu Yi's formidable strength, he might not be a match for that person.

“En.”

Nangong Yunfan nodded his head. He knew that the second match was the key to their victory.

On the other side, Nangong Wenyan had slightly recovered from his injuries after consuming the pill. He was now able to stand by himself. Upon standing up, he immediately threw a vicious glance over to Nangong Wentian who stood prideful on the opposite side. His mind was filled with great amount of shame. Today's fight was a terrible humiliation for him, as his dad had pinned great hope on him. But in the end, he had been defeated in such a miserable way.

“Don't worry, just stand there and watch how I fight. For this second match, I will definitely defeat Nangong Yunfan! After that, with the help of that great warrior in the third match, we'll be the final winners! Initially, I thought we wouldn't have to rely on that great warrior, but we'll still need that person's help now.”

Nangong Yunzheng said with a sneer on his face. After that, with a flash he appeared on the fighting stage. This time, he was even more confident than Nangong Wenyan was when he stepped onto the fighting stage.

“Yunfan, don’t waste my time, come to the fighting stage now.”

Nangong Yunzheng looked at Nangong Yunfan and said.

“Hmph!”

Nangong Yunfan coldly harrumphed. He leapt onto the fighting stage and stood opposite of Nangong Yunzheng.

“Elder brother, it’s all your fault that we’re in this state. If father is watching us from above, I’m sure he wouldn’t want to see this happen to the Nangong family.”

Nangong Yunfan said, expressing the pain in his heart and helplessness with his words.

“If you were willing to give up the family chief position, such a thing wouldn’t have happened at all! I’m the eldest brother, the family chief position should be mine! Since dad made the decision partially, I’ll just take what belongs to me!”

Nangong Yunzheng said with a loud voice. He didn’t feel that splitting the Nangong family in two was the wrong thing to do. In his mind, he was just taking what should have originally belonged

to him.

“Even so, you can’t expose our family secret! The way you used our family’s secret treasure to get help from the Profound River Palace breaks the rules set by dad! If anything bad happens to the treasure, can you bear the responsibility?!”

Nangong Yunfan scolded loudly.

“Save your breath! All these years, the Profound River Palace has helped our Nangong family a lot! Besides, the Profound River Palace won’t take the treasure away from us! The master of the Profound River Palace only wants to take a look at the treasure! In fact, even you and I have never seen what the treasure looks like! I can take this opportunity to witness what it truly looks like!”

Nangong Yunzheng said, as if this was how things should be.

“Fat chance! Let me tell you this, Nangong Yunzheng; as long as I’m still alive, I won’t let you and your evil motives succeed! The treasure left behind by dad will never go to any outsider! I will fight you with all my strength today; let’s fight!”

Nangong Yunfan was set ablaze with anger. In order to seize the family chief position, Nangong Yunzheng had entered a state where he would employ the fiercest of tricks, and he even tried putting his hands on the secret family treasure. For the past one hundred years, it had been the Nangong family’s biggest secret, and none of them had ever leaked news about it to any outsider. Only the upper echelons of the Nangong family could learn about

the existence of the secret treasure. Since their old man was now gone, Nangong Yunfan was the current family chief, and he had the responsibility to protect the treasure.

“Come! Show me how you’re going to fight me with all your strength!”

Nangong Yunzheng’s body swayed slightly, and he released all his energy. His energy covered the skies above the entire Nangong family grounds, causing all people to breathe heavily.

On the other side, Nangong Yunfan’s gray robe was fluttering violently. He too released all his energy. When the two extremely powerful energies collided; a large amount of sparks immediately erupted.

“Incredibly strong! These mighty Late Combat Soul warriors, neither of them can be compared to any ordinary warriors! Just the energy coming out from their bodies are enough to make anyone feel a difficulty when trying to breathe!”

“That’s right, the abilities of these mighty warriors’ are not something we can ever imagine! I wonder if I’ll ever reach this level.”

“Stop dreaming! With your talent, your ancestors’ tomb would have to erupt with smoke for you to be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm in this life! It won’t be possible for you to reach the level the family chief is at right now unless the sun rises from the west!”

“Guys, who do you think are stronger? The family chief or Nangong Yunzheng? Who will win this match?”

“It’s hard to tell. They’re brothers, and they’ve cultivated the same cultivation skill and combat skills since they were young. Now, both of them are Late Combat Soul warriors, and it will be a difficult battle to find out who the winner is.”

.....

Everyone were talking amongst each other. After the first match came to an end, the situation had become more intense. Everybody were paying close attention to the match, because today’s battle would decide the Nangong family’s future.

Bang!

The fight broke out without delay. Nangong Yunfan and Nangong Yunzheng’s combat strength and skill were nearly identical, so it was really difficult to have a clear winner. It looked like it would be a long match before a winner finally emerged.

Among the crowd, Nangong Wentian turned to Jiang Chen and placed his arm around Jiang Chen’s shoulder and said, “Little Chen, thank you for the guidance. If not, I wouldn’t have been able to break through to the Combat Soul realm so easily. You have also broken through to the Combat Soul realm, that’s really good! If we can’t avoid the third match today, I will definitely need your help!”

“I hope uncle can win this match, then you won’t be needing my help.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. He wished to stay low profile in the Southern Continent. The ‘incident’ where he annihilated the Demon Palace and helped the Dancing Sun City made him extremely famous, but he luckily covered his face with a golden light.

After hearing what Jiang Chen said, Nangong Wentian raised his head and looked toward the two fighting figures on the stage. The entire stage was now filled with violent and devastating energy ripples. Two figures were dashing around in all directions, leaving behind countless afterimages. It was an extremely close fight, as both men possessed similar combat strength and skill. Therefore, it wasn’t easy for a winner to emerge in such a short amount of time.

“Little Chen, you’re an insightful man; do you think my dad will be able to defeat my uncle?”

Nangong Wentian asked. He had complete trust in Jiang Chen’s words now.

“Both men are equal in terms of cultivation and combat strength, and if they keep fighting like this, it will take years for a final victor to emerge. The key now depends on the cards they have hidden up their sleeves. Judging from this aspect, I think uncle is going to face some dangerous situations.

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent voice.

“Why?”

Nangong Wentian's expression became serious. With his senses, he was unable to find any signs showing that his dad was going to lose the match. At least, his dad was still in great shape. He had no idea how Jiang Chen came to this conclusion.

“It's very simply. If there is one person who knows everything about your father's strength, that will be Nangong Yunzheng. Since he has the courage to stand out and fight with your father, I'm sure he is well-prepared and confident enough to defeat uncle. In other words, he most likely has a secret card hidden up his sleeves that is more than enough to defeat uncle. There's also the fact that he has made connections with the Profound River Palace. With the Profound River Palace's rich resources, and their decision to get involved in the Nangong family's internal conflict, I'm sure they've provided Nangong Yunzheng with something that will help him. Therefore, I believe Nangong Yunzheng has a frightening secret card, and if uncle doesn't have anything powerful to respond with, this match will be dangerous for him.”

Jiang Chen explained tirelessly. He didn't lower his voice, so all the upper echelons of the main Nangong family around were able to hear what he said, including Tu Yi. His words caused everyone's expressions to instantly change.

If Jiang Chen didn't point this out, none of them would have

thought about it. After listening to Jiang Chen's explanation, they felt it was a really logical explanation. Since Nangong Yunzheng was the one who initiated the conflict, he must have some cards hidden up his sleeves. Not only that, Nangong Yunzheng's understanding about Nangong Yunfan, including all the skills he had; was very deep. Nangong Yunzheng knew about his brother as much as Nangong Yunfan knew about him. Therefore, the chances of Nangong Yunzheng winning this second match was really high.

Tu Yi and Liang Zhui couldn't help but look at Jiang Chen carefully. Before this, they hadn't taken this friend of Nangong Wentian seriously. However, Jiang Chen's words just now caused them to seriously change the way they thought of him. Putting aside the strength of this young man, just his senses and judgment alone proved that he was far from an ordinary man.

"Let's just find out what kind of powerful tricks Yunzheng has."

Tu Yi squinted his eyes and said.

Bang!

Explosive sounds repeatedly sounded out from the fighting stage. The entire stage was now filled with powerful ripples, and their powerful attacks had even cracked the floor of the fighting stage. One thing was for sure; this fighting stage would be useless after this match came to an end, and this was the result of them fighting in the sky. If they would directly on the stage, it would have shattered into ashes by now.

This was a duel between the two strongest men of the Nangong family. Just the energy ripples and aura that leaked out from them caused many people to feel a difficult in breathing. They could only look up on this level of mightiness.

Bam!

Another explosive sound could be heard as the men exchanged attacks. The powerful force knocked both men dozens of meters away from each other. It was once again a tie.

“Yunfan, if we keep fighting like this, it will be very difficult to find a winner amongst us.”

Nangong Yunzheng said. However, at the same time, an unusual light shone in his eyes. It seemed like he had something up his sleeve.

Chapter 412 – Who Will Fight?

“You’re right, let’s get this over with!”

Nangong Yunfan nodded his head. He agreed with what Nangong Yunzheng said. If they kept fighting like this, they wouldn’t be able to find a winner even after fighting for three days.

Clang!

Nangong Yunfan didn’t want to delay any longer either. With a sway of his arm, he retrieved a gigantic sword. It was a dazzling sword that was emitting a cold shine. The sword had a long and wide body, and its razor sharp edge had numerous mystical symbols engraved on top of it. Clearly, it was the highest grade Superior Combat Weapon.

On the other side, Nangong Yunzheng retrieved a sword as well. Compared to Nangong Yunfan’s sword, his sword looked much lighter, as the sword’s body was as thin as a cicada’s wing. However, buzzing sounds could be heard just from a casual swing, and it too was emitting a cold shine that no one dared face directly. It wasn’t difficult to see that this sword possessed incredible destructive power.

“Mighty Dipper Strike!”

Nangong Yunfan let out a loud shout as he swung the gigantic sword in his hand and unleashed countless sword beams. The sword beams weaved into a gigantic web that caused the air to

produce cracking sounds. At the same time, a powerful wind blew out from the gigantic sword. With a thunder-like energy, Nangong Yunfan simply swung his sword forward and approached Nangong Yunzheng.

“Boundless Sword Energies!”

Nangong Yunzheng didn’t want to be outdone. He immediately raised his sword and counter attacked. His strike was simple and fast, and the sword itself was emitting a bright light as if a gigantic poisonous snake.

Clang!

The two Superior Weapons collided and produced a large amount of sparks. Right at the center of the collision was a color of vagueness, as the void around them nearly exploded from their powerful attacks. The energy whirlpool formed from their collision was a dead spot, and if anyone got close to it, they would instantly be killed.

Tap, tap, tap...

Both men were knocked back dozens of meters before they could stabilize their bodies. Similar to all previous instances, their exchange ended in a tie.

“Hmph! Yunfan, enough playing around with you!”

Nangong Yunzheng coldly harrumphed. The smile on his face became thicker, and with a flip of his palm, he retrieved a golden talisman. The talisman instantly exploded upon appearing, turning into glowing dots that immediately penetrated into Nangong Yunzheng's body.

Crack... crack...

In the following moment, cracking sounds could be heard from Nangong Yunzheng's body, and his energy began surging like a fierce tsunami.

“What's going on? Why did Nangong Yunzheng's energy suddenly become so powerful?”

Tu Yi who had been watching the fight worriedly cried out in shock.

“It's because of that talisman! Nangong Yunzheng did prepare himself, he actually has the ability to increase his combat strength by such great amounts in such a short amount of time! Family chief is going to lose this time!”

“What strong energy! His combat strength is at least twice as much now as it was before; the gap between their strength is now very obvious!”

Everyone's expression changed dramatically, only the people from Nangong Yunzheng's group showed excitement on their

faces. No matter what, it looked like they would win this second match.

“Little Chen, what kind of talisman is that? Why is it so powerful? It instantly doubled uncle’s combat strength!”

Nangong Wentian was greatly shocked as well.

“That’s a Source of Combat Strength Talisman. I’m guessing it was made by a Combat King warrior. This kind of talisman is really difficult to produce, only a Combat King warrior has the ability to make one. However, no ordinary warrior would make this talisman, because not only does it require a lot of time, it will also consume a huge amount of source energy. Under normal circumstances, only those who are dying will make some for their descendants, in order to protect them. I believe Nangong Yunzheng’s Source of Combat Strength Talisman was given to him by the Profound River Palace. The Profound River Palace has truly invested heavily in order to get your family secret.”

Jiang Chen explained.

His words once again attracted many surprised glances, including from Tu Yi. No one dared underestimate this ordinary looking young man any longer, because none of them had heard about this Source of Combat Strength Talisman before, yet this young man seemed to know every detail about it. This truly surprised all of them.

“Using this Source of Combat Strength Talisman, Nangong

Yunzheng's combat strength has now doubled. Uncle is going to lose this match."

Jiang Chen shook his head and said.

"Yunfan, give up now!"

Tu Yi immediately shouted toward the fighting stage. Judging from the current situation, Nangong Yunfan was going to face certain defeat, and if that was the case, he might as well just admit defeat and save himself from unnecessary injuries.

In the sky above, an uncertain expression could be seen on Nangong Yunfan's face. This match was extremely important to him. If he lost, that meant they would have to fight the third match, and their chances of winning that was extremely slim. However, it seemed like it was meaningless for him to keep fighting with all his strength, as it would only bring him unnecessary injuries. He was no longer a match for Nangong Yunzheng, who had doubled his combat strength.

At this moment, Nangong Yunfan was facing one of the most difficult decisions in his life.

"Giving up is uncle's best option now, as it is meaningless for him to keep fighting this unwinnable match."

Jiang Chen said. Even if Nangong Yunfan gave up this second match, he wouldn't think that Nangong Yunfan was losing face, or

being a coward. Nangong Yunfan's status was after all different from that of others. He wasn't representing himself in this match, but the entire Nangong family! He was the family chief, and for them, if anything bad happened to their chief, their leader, the entire family would collapse, and the Nangong family would be struck with unprecedented chaos. At that point of time, Nangong Yunzheng would be able to take control of the Nangong family without any resistance, and become the new family chief. Since he was now going to face certain defeat, there was no need for him to take any unnecessary risks. No matter what, Nangong Wentian had won the first match, so they will had hope for the third match.

Buzz...

Energy waves were fluttering about violently. Nangong Yunzheng's energy was becoming stronger and stronger.

"Dad, just admit defeat. I promise you, we will win the third match!"

Nangong Wentian told Nangong Yunfan through his divine sense.

"Chief, just give up. There's no shame in doing so."

"That's right, they've cheated us! It's meaningless for us to fight this match any longer!"

All the people of the Nangong family were shouting out loudly.

This match was no longer fair for Nangong Yunfan. His opponent had used a Source of Combat Strength Talisman, and that was considered cheating. If Nangong Yunfan continued fighting under such a situation, it wouldn't be a brave action, but an idiotic one.

Sigh!

Nangong Yunfan let out a heavy sigh before helplessly saying, "I admit defeat."

After saying that, Nangong Yunfan put his gigantic sword back into the storage ring, turned around and returned to the Nangong family's camp.

"Haha..."

Nangong Yunzheng immediately laughed out in joy and retracted his energy. He too returned to his own group. He couldn't be any happier than he was now. As long as he won this match, he was pretty much guaranteed to win the third match, because he had invited a reputable person to help him fight the third match. With Nangong Yunfan's resources, he would at most get Tu Yi to fight the third match. Although Tu Yi was a famous man, when compared to the person he invited here, the difference between them was not small.

Nangong Yunfan's face looked pale right now. He had been badly defeated in this second match.

“Dad, don’t give up hope! Eldest uncle cheated; there is nothing we could have done about it.”

Nangong Wentian comforted his father.

“We have lost the second match, and the third match will begin immediately. I think we’re going to lose, as we have no idea what kind of warrior Nangong Yunzheng invited here.”

Nangong Yunfan said as he furrowed his brows. A worried expression covered his face.

“If there are no other options, let me fight this third match. Even if I have to die, I won’t let them get what it is they aim for!”

Tu Yi said in a resolute manner.

“Dad, let Little Chen fight the third match for us!”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Wentian, this third match will decide our future, this isn’t something funny.”

Liang Zhui said with a frown on his face. Although his impression toward Jiang Chen had changed a lot, letting Jiang Chen represent the Nangong family in the third match was just a joke in his eyes.

“Elder Liang, Little Chen has broken through to the Early Combat Soul realm now! When he was at the Divine Core realm, he was able to kill Mid Combat Soul warriors! With his current strength, unless a Combat King warrior appears to fight him personally, no one will be a match for him!”

Nangong Wentian said with a serious expression. He was really confident in Jiang Chen.

His words caused everyone to look at Jiang Chen once more. Although they were somewhat doubting Nangong Wentian's words, they did believe he wouldn't make light of the Nangong family's future.

However, could an Early Combat Soul warrior really fight a Late Combat Soul warrior? Wasn't this a joke? Did such an abnormal monster truly exist underneath the heavens?

“Let us first see who the opponent is.”

Tu Yi said. No one honestly had any confidence in Jiang Chen. In their minds, Jiang Chen was just an outsider.

On the other side, Nangong Yunzheng had fully retracted his energy. He turned to Nangong Yunfan and said with a loud voice, “Yunfan, the score is one to one! Now, we need to proceed to the third match! Just like we agreed on beforehand, the third match will be fought by the helper we get! I don't care who you got to help you out, my helper is showing up now.”

The smile on Nangong Yunzheng's face was like a blooming flower. In his eyes, the helper he got would win the third match without any questions. No person from the Nangong family would be a match for this helper.

“Young miss Wu Ningzhu, please show yourself!”

Nangong Yunzheng shouted into the sky. After that, a figure dressed in black appeared from afar. In a very shorty amount of time, she arrived above the Nangong family grounds and landed on the fighting stage.

The crowd immediately cried out in shock upon seeing who it was. It was a girl with a sexy figure, and a tight black dress on her body that caused her to look ever more seductive. Her curved figure had a perfect ratio; just this body figure alone would be enough to make almost any man go crazy.

She had black hair that fell down to her shoulders and a black veil that covered her face, barely allowing her magnificent face to be seen.

“Oh heavens, that's the Profound River Palace's Holy Maiden, Wu Ningzhu! How are we going to win this match?!”

“Nangong Yunzheng actually invited the number one genius of the Southern Continent's younger generation! Although Wu Ningzhu is still young, she has already reached the Late Combat Soul realm, and is known as the number one warrior underneath

the Combat King realm! I heard that during the incident in the Dancing Sun City not long ago, she was able to fight three great guardians of the Demon King Palace all alone without being defeated by them! There is no one from the Nangong family who can defeat her!”

“Finished, we’re done for! With Wu Ningzhu fighting in this third match, there is no way we can win! Even Elder Tu Yi won’t be able to withstand more than ten attacks from her!”

.....

The expressions of everyone changed. Nangong Yunzheng had actually invited this famous and legendary existence to help him; how were they going to fight this third match? And who were they going to send?

Chapter 413 – It's him!

Everyone present were shocked, even Jiang Chen was surprised. He never expected Wu Ningzhu to be the one to appear in this third match. In fact, back in the Dancing Sun City, Jiang Chen could be considered Wu Ningzhu's savior. The reason why Jiang Chen hid his identity and left in such a hurry was because he didn't want to have any connection with Wu Ningzhu. He had decided to not get involved in the conflict between the Demon King Palace and Profound River Palace. Once he settled all matters here regarding the Nangong family, he would return to the Eastern Continent. He was after all just a traveler in the Southern Continent.

However, things rarely went perfectly according to plan. He had once again met Wu Ningzhu, the famous number one genius of the Southern Continent. With Wu Ningzhu's excellent judgment, if Jiang Chen participated in this third match, she would definitely recognize him. However, if Jiang Chen didn't participate in this third match, no one from the Nangong family would be able to fight Wu Ningzhu.

Heavens Will!

"How could it be Wu Ningzhu? Gone, all hope for the Nangong family is now gone."

An ugly expression could be seen on Nangong Yunfan's face. As the Nangong family chief, he knew more than anyone else how frightening Wu Ningzhu was. This genius of the Profound River Palace had grown up, and she was not someone Tu Yi could hope to

match.

“Sigh... With the Profound River Palace’s Holy Maiden here, we can just skip the third match. With my strength, I won’t be able to withstand more than ten attacks from her.”

Tu Yi let out along sigh. Although he had a formidable cultivation, he knew his limits. He knew there was a huge gap between his and Wu Ningzhu’s combat strength. Judging from the current situation, the Nangong family was going to fall.

“Dad, Elder Tu, that’s nothing! Just let Jiang Chen help us! Only he has the ability to defeat Wu Ningzhu!”

Nangong Wentian said. His trust in Jiang Chen was blind. Only those who knew Jiang Chen well would have this kind of blind trust toward this amazing man.

Although the heroic incident where a white-clothed youngster faced Heavenly Tribulation in Dancing Sun City and killed three great guardians of the Demon King Palace had spread across the entire Southern Continent, including the Nangong family, Nangong Wentian had been in secluded cultivation and wasn’t aware of this. If he was, he would immediately have known that the white-clothed youngster was Jiang Chen. If there was a single man who was capable of attracting Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, that man would be Jiang Chen.

Nangong Yunfan and Tu Yi remained silent. Letting an Early

Combat Soul warrior fight Wu Ningzhu was a joke. She was the Profound River Palace's number one genius, not some ordinary Late Combat Soul warrior. No matter how much of a genius Jiang Chen was, he was at most up to par with Wu Ningzhu. However, there were two stages between their cultivation now, and this was a gap that no one could ignore.

“Wentian, our opponent is Wu Ningzhu. Although nephew Jiang might have amazing strength, he is still no match for Wu Ningzhu.”

Nangong Yunfan shook his head.

“Yunfan, have you made up your mind? Don't waste any more time, I really wish to know what kind of helper you've found to help you fight the Profound River Palace's Holy Maiden.”

Nangong Yunzheng shouted out from the opposite side. All the men from his group wore bright smiles on their faces. They had basically won the third match, as there was no warrior from the Nangong family who could defeat Wu Ningzhu.

“Chief Nangong, I don't have much time to waste here.”

Wu Ningzhu spoke with a pleasant voice. However, no one from the Nangong family had the mood to appreciate this pleasant voice.

“Dad, unless you can find someone who can fight her, just like

Jiang Chen do it.”

Nangong Wentian was starting to panic.

Nangong Yunfan and Tu Yi exchanged glances before letting out sighs. Finally, he threw his glance to Jiang Chen.

“Nephew Jiang Chen, we’ll depend on you for this last match. If you’re not a match for Wu Ningzhu, don’t force yourself; safety is the priority.”

Nangong Yunfan said.

“Rest assured, uncle. Jiang Chen knows what to do.”

Jiang Chen bowed toward Nangong Yunfan.

“Little Chen, I believe in you!”

Nangong Wentian patted Jiang Chen’s shoulder. For this third match, he would trust no one but Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. With a sway of his body, he leapt onto the fighting stage and stood opposite of Wu Ningzhu.

“Wentian, can he do it?”

Liang Zhui couldn't help but ask.

“Don't worry, there is nothing he can't do.”

Nangong Wentian's face was filled with confidence.

Actually, Nangong Wentian's confidence was the main reason why Nangong Yunfan and Tu Yi made up their minds. They didn't believe in Jiang Chen, but they knew Nangong Wentian would never do anything to hurt his own family. Also, aside from Tu Yi, the Nangong family was unable to find anyone else to help them. With Tu Yi's strength, there was no difference in fighting this third match with Wu Ningzhu or giving up. Letting Jiang Chen fight this match was just their last resort.

“Who is this guy? Why have I never seen him before? Did Nangong Yunfan simply find some nobody to fight this third match?”

One of the men from Nangong Yunzheng's group looked at Jiang Chen and asked in a surprised manner.

“This guy is only an Early Combat Soul warrior... What kind of joke is Nangong Yunfan trying to crack? If he has given up, why doesn't he just admit defeat? He doesn't have to find some nobody to fight this third match, this is an insult to the Holy Maiden!”

Nangong Yunzheng nearly burst into laughter. According to his prediction, Nangong Yunfan would have at least sent Tu Yi for this

third match. But instead, they simply sent a young man whom no one knew about. What were they thinking? Could Nangong Yunfan really believe that this Early Combat Soul warrior had the ability to defeat the Profound River Palace's Holy Maiden? This was too funny!

Not just them; even the people of the Nangong family were shocked by this. Although they had lost their hope upon seeing Wu Ningzhu appearing on the fighting stage, they still couldn't help but think of it as a joke when they saw that young man appearing on the fighting stage.

“Is this real? Who is that guy? Will he really represent the Nangong family for this third match? Can he do it or not? His opponent is Wu Ningzhu!”

“Young master is the one who brought this guy back. I heard he is a friend of the young master... could he be the helper young master invited?”

“Helper? Is this some kind of a joke? Perhaps Wu Ningzhu only need to use a single finger to crush him... sigh... Looks like chief has given up. But, even if that's the case, he can't simply drag some nobody into the third match, this only serves to damage the Nangong family's reputation! If he let Elder Tu Yi fight this match, even if he ends up losing, we'll still have our pride. So, what is this all about?”

“Let's just wait and see. Since chief has arranged for this man to fight, perhaps he has some amazing abilities...”

The people of the Nangong family became restless. Jiang Chen was a stranger to them, none of them had ever seen or heard of him before. They only knew that their young master had brought back this friend. With a mere Early Combat Soul cultivation, how was he going to fight Wu Ningzhu?

But on the fighting stage, it was a completely different situation. The moment Jiang Chen appeared, Wu Ningzhu immediately threw her bright glance over to Jiang Chen's face. She kept looking up and down in an examining manner.

“Lady Wu, looks like you’ve fully recovered.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

Jiang Chen's words immediately caused Wu Ningzhu's expression to change, and she was able to confirm who he really was.

“It's you?”

Wu Ningzhu asked in a tone filled with disbelief and shock. She then started staring at Jiang Chen's face. Back in the Dancing Sun City, she really regretted not being able to witness this young man's face. And now, she was surprised by how handsome this young man was.

“That's right, I'm the one.”

Jiang Chen nodded his head. Right now, there was no longer any need to hide his identity. With Wu Ningzhu's excellent judgment, she would be able to immediately recognize Jiang Chen.

“Ningzhu wishes to thank young master for saving my life. I never thought I'd be able to meet young master again.”

Wu Ningzhu gently bowed toward Jiang Chen, expressing her gratitude for what Jiang Chen had done. She was still able to remember what happened back in the Dancing Sun City. The entire city was completely sealed up, and if not for this young man appearing at a critical moment, the city might have been completely destroyed, and her father and family members would have been killed by those ferocious demons. Even she herself might have been captured by the Demon King Palace. Although she might still have been able to keep her life, she would surely have been greatly humiliated.

Therefore, no matter how prideful Wu Ningzhu was, she would never forget the kindness Jiang Chen had shown her, and since that day onwards, Jiang Chen's image had been deeply carved in her heart.

Although Wu Ningzhu's voice wasn't particularly loud, it was more than enough to let everyone hear what she just said.

“What's going on? Why is Wu Ningzhu thanking him? Why is she behaving so politely to this guy?”

“Wu Ningzhu thanked him for saving her life... I know! A couple of days ago, the Dancing Sun City was attacked by the Demon King Palace, and a young white-clothed man appeared at the most critical moment! He faced his Heavenly Tribulation in the city and killed three great guardians of the Demon King Palace! So, that white-clothed youngster is actually this guy!”

“Oh heavens! So this is him?! The great hero the Profound River Palace has been looking for! So, he has been staying with the Nangong family all this time? We’re so ignorant! A man who can kill great guardians of the Demon King Palace and attract Heavenly Tribulation is a monstrous existence!”

.....

Everybody became extremely excited. They had all heard about what happened in the Dancing Sun City not long ago, and when they looked at the clothing of this young man, he indeed resembled the man they had heard about! An existence who attracted Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm; that was a peerless monster!

“Haha, so it turns out that man was nephew Jiang! I’m such an old fool for not even considering that! Amazing, this is really amazing! With nephew Jiang’s help, the Nangong family will be able to safely pass through this crisis!”

Nangong Yunfan burst into laughter.

“I too never thought about this! That peerless monster was

actually hidden in the Nangong family grounds all this time! Looks like we've truly neglected him! This is what I call a true genius! Since Jiang Chen is Wu Ningzhu's savior, we're now in an advantageous position!"

Tu Yi suddenly felt relaxed, and the way he looked at Jiang Chen had slowly become serious. He wasn't alone, the way all the upper echelons of the Nangong family looked at Jiang Chen had changed tremendously. Although they hadn't seen what happened in the Dancing Sun City, they too had received news about what happened. A man who faced Heavenly Tribulation while breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, this was huge news that no one could ignore.

"Dad, what are you all talking about? How did Little Chen know Wu Ningzhu?"

Nangong Wentian asked with a curious expression.

Chapter 414 – Fighting Wu Ningzhu

Nangong Wentian's face was filled with curiosity. He had no idea what was going on, but even an idiot would be able to see the drastic change in these peoples' attitudes toward Jiang Chen, as if he had done something extraordinary. Even the Profound River Palace's Holy Maiden had to publicly express her gratitude.

“Wentian, you've been in secluded cultivation these past days, that's why you haven't heard about the recent grand incident! A couple of days ago, a young white-clothed man appeared out of nowhere and annihilated a big power belonging to the demons, called the Demon Palace. After that, when the Wu family were holding their ancestral worshiping ceremony in the Dancing Sun City, while Wu Ningzhu was there, four great guardians of the Demon King Palace suddenly attacked with an army of demons. They had secretly sealed up the entire city, and were there with the purpose of slaughtering everyone. However, that young white-clothed man struck once again, and he even attracted Heavenly Tribulation! With that, he killed three of the Demon King Palace's great guardians and forced tens of thousands of demons to retreat! He is the hero who saved the entire city all alone, and during the past few days, the Profound River Palace has been looking for this man all over, but to no avail. Who could have thought that the peerless hero has been hiding here all this time?”

Nangong Yunfan explained all the details about what had happened in the Dancing Sun City to Nangong Wentian. He spoke with great excitement, as he previously had no confidence in Jiang Chen. When he learned that Jiang Chen was that peerless hero, his attitude immediately change. Furthermore, Nangong Yunfan felt a bit ashamed right now. The hero whom everyone had been looking for had always been right next to him, and he had neglected this

hero.

“Haha!”

Nangong Wentian instantly started laughing upon hearing the story.

“Wentian, what are you laughing at?”

Tu Yi asked.

“Dad, Elder Tu, what do you think? If I had heard about this incident a day ago, I would immediately know that the white-clothed youngster is Little Chen! Let me tell you this with full confidence; Little Chen is the most amazing genius underneath the heavens! If there is a single man who has the ability to face Heavenly Tribulation when break through to the Combat Soul realm, that man would definitely be Jiang Chen! No one but him can do it!”

Although Nangong Wentian’s words sounded like a boastful statement, it was facts. No one knew what Jiang Chen had done back in the Eastern Continent, and if they did, they wouldn’t be so surprised right now.

“Wentian, do you mean that Jiang Chen really can defeat Wu Ningzhu? From what I know, Jiang Chen used the Heavenly Tribulation to kill those three great guardians, and he never showed his own abilities. Wu Ningzhu is not someone who can be

easily defeated.”

Tu Yi was still worried.

“Elder Tu, rest assured! If they really end up fighting, even two Wu Ningzhu’s wouldn’t be able to beat Jiang Chen. However, look at how they’re behaving now. I’m guessing they won’t be fighting each other. This guy is really lucky; this is his first time coming to the Southern Continent, and he has already befriended the prettiest girl here.”

Nangong Wentian said, obviously feeling prideful for having such a brother.

“That youngster is the same guy as the one in the Dancing Sun City? How can this be?”

Nangong Yunzheng’s expression was very pale at the moment.

“This isn’t good! That guy is Wu Ningzhu’s savior; how are we going to fight this match?”

The men next to him were feeling gloomy as well.

“Don’t worry, it was the Profound River Palace’s master who sent Wu Ningzhu here, she will definitely help us!”

Nangong Yunzheng said.

On the fighting stage, after Wu Ningzhu expressed her gratitude to Jiang Chen, she immediately threw him a seductive glance with her bright eyes.

“The fuck? She is seducing me...”

Wu Ningzhu’s glance caused Jiang Chen to quiver. This pair of eyes could really speak to one’s heart. In terms of beauty and figure, Wu Ningzhu was comparable to Yan Chenyu. However, she had a seductive look that men were unable to withstand.

“Hehe, I never expected my benefactor to be such a young man. Your elder sister really wants to thank you again for what you did. But, little brother, why are you staying with the Nangong family?”

A playful smile emerged onto Wu Ningzhu’s face. The way she addressed Jiang Chen as little brother nearly caused Jiang Chen to stagger and fall down from the sky.

Those who were familiar with Wu Ningzhu knew one thing; this Holy Maiden who sat above all would never speak in such a manner. But today, she actually just teased Jiang Chen, expressing an attitude that was completely different from how she usually behaved. It looked like Jiang Chen’s charisma was indeed extraordinary.

“I’m just helping my friend. Elder sister, do you think we’re going to fight?”

Jiang Chen asked with a smile.

“Although you’ve saved elder sister’s life, I’ve been given orders by the Palace Master. Therefore, I have to fight no matter what. Beside, elder sister would also like to know how strong a peerless genius who can attract Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm is. If memory serves me correct, you used the Heavenly Tribulation’s lightning to kill those three Great Guardians of the Demon King Palace. I would like you to show elder sister your true abilities. Don’t worry, elder sister will be very gentle with you.”

Wu Ningzhu threw Jiang Chen a seductive glance once again. She no longer had the same cold attitude as before, instead becoming talkative upon meeting Jiang Chen.

“Damn it! That rascal has made Wu Ningzhu speak so many words, and it seems like she’s happy!”

“The Profound River Palace’s Holy Maiden has always been prideful, she has never given any man attention! I never thought her character had this side to it, portraying such a seductive manner! I really envy that man!”

“What a lucky guy! This whole scene gives me a desire to leave a huge shoe mark on his face, though.”

“It’s called charisma, which you know nothing about! No matter how pure of an image Wu Ningzhu portrays; she is still a girl.”

.....

All men present were jealous of Jiang Chen, as they had all dreamt about being the ones to make Wu Ningzhu smile.

“Alright, I’ll take this opportunity to see whether or not you deserve the title of the Southern Continent’s number one genius.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. Similar to Wu Ningzhu, he didn’t have any bad impressions of the opponent. However, after breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, he did feel a desire to see how strong the number one genius of the Southern Continent was.

This is a fight between geniuses. Only a genius could attract another genius.

“Come, little brother!”

Wu Ningzhu blinked her eyes and snapper her fingers, instantly unleashing seven bright flowers. These flowers were formed entirely from her Yuan energy, and they looked really beautiful.

“Go!”

Wu Ningzhu shouted as she threw all seven flowers toward Jiang Chen in a spiraling motion, raising powerful winds along their

way. Each flower carried its own fragrance, and was extremely beautiful.

“Amazing.”

Jiang Chen couldn't help but praise the attack. Not only was this attack very powerful, the fragrance emitted from the flowers could also confuse the opponent's mind, causing them to be immersed in a beautiful dream, unable to focus on what was going on.

In a match such as this one, a split second out of focus could bring death. Wu Ningzhu was indeed a frightening opponent; any careless mistake would be at the cost of one's life.

However, Jiang Chen's mind was extremely strong and focused. He wasn't afraid of the Great Illusionary Realm, let alone this seductive skill.

Jiang Chen's energy shook, and he instantly unleashed three silver white flood dragons. Each one was extremely powerful, as if they were real flood dragons. When they appeared, they immediately charged forward.

Clang, clang, clang...

The flood dragons clashed with all seven flowers, causing sound resembling metals clanging to resound. Although these seven flowers were extremely powerful, they were simply unable to withstand the might of the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons. After

the seven flowers had been destroyed, there was still one Flood Dragon remaining whom continued charging toward Wu Ningzhu.

“So powerful!”

Wu Ningzhu blinked her eyes in shock, and her expression changed dramatically. She had always thought that Jiang Chen had relied on the Heavenly Tribulation to kill those great guardians of the Demon King Palace. As for his true strength; a man who had just broken through to the Combat Soul realm wouldn't be too strong. But now, she had finally tasted Jiang Chen's true mightiness.

Chapter 415 – Lift Your Veil

Jiang Chen had obtained the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons by accident, and after he absorbed the Flood Dragon's blood essence, he was able to unleash this skill at its maximum level, causing it to become one of his strongest attacks. With his current strength, he was able to unleash a fourth and a fifth Flood Dragon as well, but since his opponent was Wu Ningzhu, three flood dragons were more than enough, as Jiang Chen had didn't wish to hurt her.

Faced with the huge incoming Flood Dragon, Wu Ningzhu immediately responded. A bright light appeared around her hand, and the black ancient looking zither instantly appeared. When it appeared, she began plucking on the strings and unleashing numerous tunes, tearing the Flood Dragon into pieces.

“Little brother, looks like your elder sister has underestimated you. Although you're only an Early Combat Soul warrior, you still have the advantage when fighting me. You are indeed the abnormal monster who attracted Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, the only genius I've ever met to have done that. However, since your elder sister is here on a mission, I won't be polite with you. Have a taste of my Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes!”

Wu Ningzhu said.

“Wonderhand Thousandtunes Wu Ningzhu, you've played your zither well. Just attack with everything you got, I wish to see how strong this Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes can be.”

Jiang Chen said in an imposing manner. With his current cultivation, it was really difficult for him to find any opponent under the Combat King realm. He didn't even take Wu Ningzhu seriously. Being able to fight the number one genius of the Southern Continent, as well as the prettiest girl; it made Jiang Chen feel somewhat comfortable.

Buzz...

The air was vibrating violently, dancing along with the tunes played by Wu Ningzhu. Countless mysterious looking tunes burst out from the ancient zither. All these tunes were glowing in a wide variety of colors, each tune was unique in both form and color, as if they were filled with magical power. In the blink of an eye, the entire sky above the Nangong family had been covered with these musical tunes. The sky had become an ocean of tunes, causing it to look like something out of a fantasy world.

“Wu Ningzhu does indeed deserve the Wonderhand Thousandtunes title. I heard that her tunes are pleasant to ears, but also possess deadly strength at the same time. Look at how beautiful those tunes are! However, if we were to be trapped in the ocean of tunes, I think we'd die immediately. There is no way we would be able to escape from there!”

“Of course, she's the number one genius of the Profound River Palace! With her Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes attack, it is very difficult for her to find any worthy opponents underneath the Combat King realm. I've even heard that the respectable elders of the Profound River Palace are no match for her either.”

“That’s right! The eight great guardians of the Demon King Palace are really frightening, but if it’s a one versus one match, none of them would be a match for Wu Ningzhu! I heard that during the incident in the Dancing Sun City, even three great guardians combined were unable to defeat Wu Ningzhu! In the end, only when four of the great guardians worked together were they able to force her into a critical situation. But luckily, Jiang Chen saved her.”

“Who do you guys think will win today’s match?”

“That’s really difficult to predict. Although Wu Ningzhu is young, she is now a Late Combat Soul warrior. Her Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes skill is like a fantasy that can infatuate anyone. On the other side, that Jiang Chen is even more frightening. Although he’s only an Early Combat Soul warrior, he is an existence that has attracted Heavenly Tribulation! He is an abnormal monster, and there have been no records throughout all of history in the Southern Continent of anyone like him. In their previous exchange, he came out on top. Although he just attacked casually, Wu Ningzhu was forced to take out her ancient zither in order to defend herself. I’m guessing that Jiang Chen still some other terrifying skills up his sleeve. It’s highly possible for him to defeat Wu Ningzhu today, and create a legend for the younger generation of the Southern Continent.”

.....

Everyone was paying all their attention to this match. Most of them were optimistic about Jiang Chen. Although he had just broken through to the Combat Soul realm, he was a man who had

killed three great guardians of the Demon King Palace. Furthermore, judging from their first exchange of attacks, Jiang Chen had clearly come out on top.

The sky was filled with a wide variety of colors as well as pleasant melodies. However, when these melodious tunes fell into Jiang Chen's ears, their tunes immediately changed. As Jiang Chen was Wu Ningzhu's primary target, not only did these tunes possess devastating strength, they could also affect his mind. If he didn't pay enough attention, he might be injured badly by them.

However, since Wu Ningzhu's opponent was Jiang Chen; her Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes was going to fail today.

Faced with the colorful musical notes that were seen everywhere, Jiang Chen simply responded with a faint smile. With a sway of his body, he forcefully waved both his arm, unleashing the Nine Murdering Flood Dragons once more.

Roar...

This time, Jiang Chen unleashed five silver flood dragons. They immediately let out loud ground shaking roars after appearing, and then charged toward the ocean of tunes in front of them with tremendous force.

Clang, clang, clang...

The tunes acted like countless razor sharp blades as they

constantly collided with the flood dragons' huge bodies, causing endless metal-ringing like sounds to resound, as well as a huge amount of sparks. On the other side, Wu Ningzhu was waving both her palms in front of her, as if she was dancing to her own beautiful music, causing her palms to look like butterflies flying around. With that, she unleashed endless amounts of tunes that looked extremely frightening.

Clang, clang, clang...

The flood dragons and tunes repeatedly clashed into each other. The battle seemed to be in a stalemate at the moment, where neither could defeat the other.

However, on Jiang Chen's face there was a relaxed expression, as if he wasn't in a fight, but just playing a game.

On the opposite side, the shock in Wu Ningzhu's eyes became more and more apparent. This was because, followed by her continuously attacking with the Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes skill, she found out that Jiang Chen wasn't even distracted by her tunes, and it was the flood dragons that were fighting the powerful tunes.

"Is this guy's mind really that strong?"

Wu Ningzhu felt like coughing up blood. Her Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes had never failed her. In fact, the most frightening part of the skill wasn't the destructive power it possessed, but the ability to distract her opponent's mind. With her current strength,

even those elders from the older generation of the Profound River Palace would be affected by this skill. However, it seemed like this skill had no effect on this young man in front of her. This really shocked Wu Ningzhu.

“Dad, Elder Tu, do you see this? Jiang Chen is so relaxed while fighting Wu Ningzhu; this guy is playing around with the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent! As long as he wants to, he can easily defeat Wu Ningzhu in the next second!”

Nangong Wentian said in a prideful manner. Jiang Chen was the man whom he had recommended again and again.

“Nephew Jiang Chen is indeed an incredible genius! Even I have to admire his formidable strength! Wu Ningzhu is not nephew Jiang Chen’s match.”

Nangong Yunfan nodded his head. He was easily able to tell that Wu Ningzhu had been attacking with her most powerful skill; the Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes. However, Jiang Chen had only used one skill so far in the fight, and he hadn’t even shown his Combat Weapon yet.

“This is truly shocking, how can there be such an incredible existence underneath this heaven? I truly underestimated him!”

Tu Yi’s emotions were mixed as he spoke.

“Me too. Such a young hero, it truly is our Nangong family’s

fortune that Wentian was able to befriend this kind of man. Jiang Chen is a man with a limitless future!”

Liang Zhui who stood at the sides added his own praise as well. When he recalled the first time he met with Jiang Chen, he couldn't help but feel ashamed, as he had been throwing sarcastic remarks at this young hero. Now, he felt a desire to slap himself twice. With his strength, Jiang Chen would be able to kill him in just a few seconds. However, not only did Jiang Chen not do that, he didn't even bother arguing with Liang Zhui. He had been given a lot of face by Jiang Chen.

Suddenly, the colorful musical tunes hovering in the sky disappeared. Wu Ningzhu placed her palm on the zither and stood up in the sky. She had actually stopped all her attacks.

Jiang Chen stopped his attacks as well. In a calm manner, he looked at Wu Ningzhu who stood opposite of him, wondering what kind of tricks this young girl was going to pull.

“What's going on? Why did they stop fighting? No one has won the match yet, right?”

“I have no idea.”

Everyone who were excitingly watching the match were suddenly startled. No one knew why Wu Ningzhu had suddenly stopped attacking.

“Little brother, your elder sister admits defeat.”

Perhaps this was the first time in her life that Wu Ningzhu had admitted defeat. However, she knew she had lost this match, she understood what she had faced just now better than anyone else who were watching the match. As long as she was unable to affect Jiang Chen with her tunes, she would lose. It was meaningless for her to continue fighting.

“What?!”

Nangong Yunzheng cried out in shock. He staggered, and nearly fell down to the ground. After that, he hatefully looked at Jiang Chen. Because of this young man, the plan he had put so much effort into had just failed. This was a result he just couldn't accept.

“Oh heavens, Wu Ningzhu actually admitted defeat! This is unbelievable!”

“The invincible Holy Maiden has admitted defeat for the first time in her life!”

Everyone were shocked; Wu Ningzhu had just admitted defeat! This was the most absurd incident underneath the heavens for them. If they hadn't heard it themselves, they wouldn't have believed it.

Jiang Chen was startled for a moment as well. He never expected this Holy Maiden to be so straightforward. She knew she was going

to lose, so she admitted defeat just like that, not caring about her face as the Holy Maiden. This straightforward character of hers gave Jiang Chen a better opinion of her.

“However, although your elder sister has admitted defeat, I still want to taste defeat. Little brother, let’s attack each other one last time! Elder sister hopes you can use the sword you used that day to fight against my ancient zither. Perhaps you can even provide some help to elder sister’s cultivation?”

Wu Ningzhu said again. Her memory of that amazing gigantic sword she saw in the Dancing Sun City was still fresh. If she were to be defeated by that sword, she would still feel proud, and perhaps, in the process of her defeat, she might be able to obtain some unimaginable benefits.

“Fine. However, if I win, you’ll lift your veil and let me see your face. What do you say?”

Jiang Chen immediately agreed, but he had a condition. Faced with the prettiest girl of the Southern Continent, no man could resist the desire to lift her veil and witness her real face.

“No way, no man can lift my veil!”

Wu Ningzhu’s voice suddenly became aggressive. After that, she placed the ancient zither in front of her, and once again, she unleashing frightening tunes toward Jiang Chen.

“I am a specialist at curing all kinds of objections. Since you refuse to lift the veil, I’ll do it myself.”

A faint smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. With a sway, the Heavenly Saint Sword appeared in his hand.

After that, Jiang Chen moved. Like a powerful arrow leaving the bow, he instantly charged forward, swinging his sword at the same time. It was a very simple attack, but it was incredibly fast. The frightening Heavenly Saint Sword could break through anything; nothing could stop it!

Chapter 416 – Sudden Change, Third Broken Part Of The Heavenly Saint Sword!

Fast! The sword was extremely fast! No one could see anything but a trail of light streaking across the sky, leaving behind a trace in the ocean of tunes.

Clang!

The music instantly stopped, and Wu Ningzhu was greatly frightened. Without lowering her head to look at her zither; she knew that the string had been broken.

Swoosh!

In the following moment, Wu Ningzhu felt a cold gleam flash by next to her face. It was an extremely sharp gleam that she had no way to dodge. Right now, Wu Ningzhu had finally experienced Jiang Chen's true frightening ability; she was nowhere near this man's level! She believed that as long as Jiang Chen had the desire, he could have removed her head with this strike.

However, right as the cold gleam disappeared, the man in front of her disappeared as well. In the follow moment, all tunes were finally gone, and Jiang Chen had returned to where he originally stood, with his sword in hand. Everything had happened within seconds, it was extremely fast; as if Jiang Chen hadn't even moved.

But on the opposite side, a string on Wu Ningzhu's ancient zither

had been cut right from its center. The string was made with one of the strongest materials, and it was very difficult to cut. However, Jiang Chen had easily cut it with his sword, and that wasn't all!

The dark veil covering Wu Ningzhu's face slowly fell off, as if a warm breeze had just brought it away from her face. A flawless face was revealed to everyone.

“Ah!”

Wu Ningzhu cried out in shock. She now finally understood. That cold gleam she felt just now was the sword cutting off her veil. It didn't hurt her skin while cutting the veil. One needed to be incredibly skilled with the sword in order to accomplish something like that.

However, right now, Wu Ningzhu didn't focus on admiring that sword strike, she was focusing all her attention on her veil.

“He removed my veil... there really is a man who has lifted my, Wu Ningzhu's veil...”

Wu Ningzhu was startled and started murmuring, as if she had suffered from great shock.

And right at this moment, everyone were deadly silent. Everyone's eyes were staring widely at that magnificent face that had been revealed to them. It was definitely a breathtaking face; it

looked so unreal.

A pair of bright eyes and pure white teeth. Her lips were so beautiful even without any makeup; her fair skin shone like a dazzling pearl. A girl like this was deadly to any man.

“So beautiful! She is indeed the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent!”

“She’s so pretty! How can such a magnificent girl exist in this world? I feel so honored for being able to witness her face!”

“I’ve heard that no man has ever removed Wu Ningzhu’s veil, but this young man just did it. I wonder what will happen next.”

.....

Some instantly started discussing amongst each other, while others were still stunned by Wu Ningzhu’s beauty.

Even Jiang Chen praised Wu Ningzhu’s appearance inwardly. No matter who married that girl, it would be the greatest achievement in the life of that man.

Wu Ningzhu’s expression kept changing, as if she was facing a difficult decision. Jiang Chen removing her veil had clearly left a great impact on her. After some time, Wu Ningzhu finally responded. She raised her head and stared at Jiang Chen; her eyes filled with mixed and complicated emotions.

“You are the first man to remove my veil.”

Wu Ningzhu said with an indifferent tone.

“Just consider it my reward for victory. Wu Ningzhu is truly an outstanding beauty. After witnessing your breathtaking face, even I couldn’t help but feel my heart beating faster.”

Jiang Chen said.

“You, have you started liking me?”

Wu Ningzhu hastily asked. There was actually a longing expression on her face.

Ugh...

Jiang Chen was stunned by Wu Ningzhu’s question, and his brain immediately went blank for a moment. What did this girl mean? Jiang Chen truly started regretting his decision to remove her veil. He already had Yan Chenyu. Jiang Chen was an idiot in terms of love, he just didn’t have any experience.

Furthermore, the only reason why Jiang Chen came to the Southern Continent was to help the Nangong family. He never wanted to build any deep relationships with anyone here. Although Wu Ningzhu was a beautiful girl, Jiang Chen wasn’t a

lustful man. Almost all humans loved appreciation beautiful things, and Jiang Chen had only removed Wu Ningzhu's veil out of curiosity. He never had any thoughts regarding a relationship with this girl.

Bang!

Right as Wu Ningzhu was about to speak once more, a sudden change happened. A ground-shaking explosion suddenly came from the depths of the Nangong family grounds. It was a huge explosion, and an old building was ruined, causing bits and pieces to be sent flying in all directions.

Nangong Yunfan's expression changed dramatically. He knew that place was where the Nangong family kept their secret family treasure.

“What's going on?”

Nangong Yunfan was terrified. That family treasure was protected by the Profound Sun Formation, and it was nearly impossible for any outsider to attack it, let alone it exploding by itself. In the hundred years since the Nangong family had been established, this was the first time something like this had happened.

The expressions of all those from the Nangong family changed, especially those who knew about the family treasure. However, right at this moment, there was a person who even more shocked than anyone from the Nangong family – Jiang Chen!

The Heavenly Saint Sword in Jiang Chen's hand started shaking violently and issued ear-piercing cries. At the same time, Jiang Chen felt a very familiar aura! It was the aura of the Heavenly Saint Sword! He felt a resonance between himself and the Heavenly Saint Sword!

“The third broken piece of the Heavenly Saint Sword is here!”

Jiang Chen nearly cried out loud.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, a thunderous cry suddenly resounded from the depths of the Nangong family grounds. Following that, the crowd saw a broken part of a golden sword over 30 meters long flying into the sky. The sword shone brightly, and it looked very excited, as if it was a mighty treasure that had been suppressed for a very long time and had suddenly found its master.

Swoosh!

The Heavenly Saint Sword in Jiang Chen's hand issued cries identical to those of the broken sword. The two sword cries immediately echoed at each other, and in the following second, the sword shrank down until it was only about a meter long. Then, it immediately flew next to Jiang Chen and started flying around him, showing off its extreme intimacy.

“Haha...”

Jiang Chen joyfully laughed out. With a thought, the broken sword immediately stopped moving, and fell onto his palm. Jiang Chen was extremely excited right now, he never thought he'd see such a big find during his trip to the Southern Continent! He had actually found the third part of the Heavenly Saint Sword!

Even more unexpected, the Nangong family's secret treasure was in fact his broken sword! In his past life, Jiang Chen had used the Nine Solar Energies skill to forge the Heavenly Saint Sword, and this broken piece in front of him was what he had forged with the skill. Therefore, with the help of the Profound Sun Formation, it wasn't a surprise that it could produce Nine Solar Holy Water.

This was a huge find! The Heavenly Saint Sword had broken into seven pieces, and Jiang Chen had to find all of them one by one. He was incredibly lucky to have found this piece in the Southern Continent.

“What is that? What a mysterious sword!”

“I don't know, but it looks like a good treasure! This broken sword emerged from the Nangong family, it should be something that belongs to them. Why did it actually fall into Jiang Chen's hand?”

.....

Many people were shocked by the sudden turn of events. Wu Ningzhu stared at Jiang Chen's palm. With her intellect, she was able to guess that this broken sword was the Nangong family's secret treasure, the reason for why she came here to help Nangong Yunzheng.

“Dad, this!”

Nangong Wentian was terrified as well; this was situation he had never expected. It clearly wasn't Jiang Chen who had stolen the broken sword, it was the broken sword that had jumped out from where it was kept and fallen into Jiang Chen's hand.

“That's the treasure left behind by the old master; the Nangong family's foundation! We can't let it fall into the hands of an outsider!”

Tu Yi was really emotional now.

However, Nangong Yunfan was calm and quiet. He kept staring at Jiang Chen without blinking his eyes.

“I remember, dad! When I entered the Island of Ice, Little Chen found a broken sword that looked just like this one, and that broken sword went straight to Jiang Chen, as if it belongs to him!”

Nangong Wentian suddenly remembered what happened on the Island of Ice, and he now understood why this broken sword suddenly came out by itself.

“You rascal! Let go of that broken sword!”

Right at this moment, Nangong Yunzheng shouted at Jiang Chen with a loud voice.

Jiang Chen glared at Nangong Yunzheng disdainfully. The Heavenly Saint Sword was his! And now, it had returned to its rightful master! No one; not even the father of the Heavens could even think about taking it away from him!

“So the reason you came here was to take away our family treasure! Let me tell you this; that treasure is the foundation of our family, don’t you try to take it away from us!”

Nangong Yunzheng said with a loud voice and stern expression.

“If I really want to take it away, can you stop me?”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent voice, throwing a fierce look at Nangong Yunzheng.

Jiang Chen’s words instantly caused Nangong Yunzheng’s body to tremble and him to gasp. He finally recalled how frightening this young man was! With his strength, there was no way he could stop this young man from doing anything. If this young man really wanted to leave, perhaps even all the men of the Nangong family would be unable to stop him.

“Little brother Jiang Chen, I beg you to stay your hand out of pity. For the sake of Wentian; please give us our treasure back.”

Tu Yi said.

His words immediately caused Jiang Chen to furrow his brows. There was no way he would give them his Heavenly Saint Sword. However, Nangong Wentian was his brother, and if he simply took away his brother's family treasure, how was he going to face Nangong Wentian in the future?

“No need.”

Right at this moment, Nangong Yunfan spoke. His words immediately attracted everyone's attention.

“Yunfan, what are you talking about?”

Nangong Yunzheng turned to Nangong Yunfan and asked.

“Before father passed away, he passed his last words onto me. He told me that this treasure is a sentient object, and sooner or later, it would go look for its own master. If one day, a man who is fortunate enough to be able to move this broken sword, no man from the Nangong family is allowed to stop him. Because of this treasure, the Nangong family has been able to enjoy a hundred years of good life, and this is a gift given to us by the heavens. I think everyone saw what happened just now; Jiang Chen didn't steal our family treasure, it was this broken sword that jumped out

by itself and came to nephew Jiang Chen. This is something that has never happened before. Therefore, nephew Jiang Chen is the man mention by father, and if he takes this broken sword away today, it will be a great merit for the Nangong family!”

Nangong Yunfan said with a loud voice.

Chapter 417 – Compensation

Nangong Yunfan's voice was loud enough for everyone present to be able to hear him, and it also let all the lower ranked people in the Nangong family know one thing; there was a hidden family treasure. On in other words, the reason why the Nangong family could rise so rapidly in the past hundred years was because of this treasure.

And many of the ones from the younger generation who had been given Nine Solar Holy Water now finally understood. The source of the Nine Solar Holy Water was this broken sword.

“Nangong Yunfan, do you know what you just said? That is the treasure left behind by our father, the foundation of our family! If our foundation is taken away by someone else, how is our Nangong family going to sustain itself in the Southern Continent?”

Nangong Yunzheng said loudly. He had deliberately planned for everything in order to get the family chief position, to seize possession of that family treasure. He had even leaked the details about this treasure to the Profound River Palace just to get their help. But now, his plans had been destroyed by this man from nowhere. Not only had this guy caused his plans to fail, he now also wanted to take that treasure away. This was something Nangong Yunzheng could never accept.

“Hmph! Eldest brother, you should give up that thought! These are the instructions given to me by our father before he passed away! I don't mind telling you this; I've seen the mysterious broken sword with my own eyes before, and Jiang Chen is that

fortunate man! Since I am the Nangong family chief, I have the right to decide who gets to own that broken sword, and I am obliged to follow the instructions given to me by our father!”

Nangong Yunfan coldly harrumphed. After that, he turned to Jiang Chen and cupped his fist, “Nephew Jiang Chen, this treasure has finally found its rightful owner. Even without this treasure, the Nangong family will still be able to sustain itself.”

“Rest assured, uncle. I, Jiang Chen will compensate the Nangong family for its loss.”

Jiang Chen stood on the fighting stage and bowed toward Nangong Yunfan. It seemed wrong for him to take away a family’s foundation, but Jiang Chen had no choice when it came to the Heavenly Saint Sword. As for the losses the Nangong family were going to suffer, he would definitely find a way to compensate them for it. He would never let the Nangong family fall because of losing the possession of this treasure.

“Bullshit! Compensate? What are you going to give us in order to compensate for this huge loss? Can you really take out anything that is equal to this rare treasure?”

Nangong Yunzheng’s eyes had turned red as he roared toward Jiang Chen. Today’s outcome had greatly messed up his mind, as all his planning had been laid to waste in just a single day, and he would have no chance to seize the family chief position any longer.

“Quiet!”

Jiang Chen's expression turned cold. He then turned into a trail of light as he shot toward Nangong Yunzheng. In the blink of an eye, Jiang Chen arrived in front of Nangong Yunzheng, and the Heavenly Saint Sword's cold tip was placed against Nangong Yunzheng's throat. The razor sharp sword had slightly cut his skin, causing blood to start flowing on the surface of the sword.

Haa!

Nangong Yunzheng gasped. Only now did he wake up from his previous state. He was incredibly terrified right now. This young man's formidable strength had reached a level he just couldn't comprehend, and with his Late Combat Soul cultivation base, he didn't even have time to respond. Feeling the chilling sensation coming from the tip of the sword, Nangong Yunzheng had no doubts that if this guy had the intentions, his head would have left his neck by now. That also meant he wouldn't be able to withstand a single strike from this young man. There was no way he could be a match for an existence like this.

“One more word from you and I will kill you.”

Jiang Chen slowly took pulled the Heavenly Saint Sword away as he spoke with an extremely cruel voice. Nangong Yunzheng felt his throat completely dried up now. He wished to speak, but he just didn't have the courage. He believe that this young man in front of him was not joking with him, as that pair of cold eyes resembled something that could only be seen in the deepest depths of hell itself. The killing intent belonging to this young man was something only a man who had killed a lot of people could possess.

Beyond any doubts, Nangong Yunzheng believed that if he really spoke another word, this guy would definitely kill him.

On the other side, including Nangong Yunfan and Tu Yi, everyone's heart trembled. Only now did they realize how stupid they were for looking down on this young man. This was a peerless incredible genius. Honestly, if Jiang Chen wished to, he could just have taken the broken sword away, and no one here would have the ability to stop him.

“Jiang Chen, I'll come find you again.”

Wu Ningzhu immediately disappeared from the sky after saying that. For her, today's mission had failed. She didn't want to get any further involved in the Nangong family's internal affairs. Of course, the story between her and Jiang Chen was far from over. Since Jiang Chen had removed her veil, it was destined for the two of them to have many stories to tell in the future.

Looking at the direction where Wu Ningzhu had disappeared into, Jiang Chen couldn't help but let out a long sigh. “My fucking hands, why did I want to remove her veil? Never mind, since daddy is going to leave this place soon, I guess there won't be any chance for me to come back to the Southern Continent in the future. Just let the Profound River Palace and Demon King Palace fight themselves.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. The Nangong family's internal conflict had come to an end, and he would need to return to the Eastern Continent as soon as possible. It was very easy for him to travel from the Eastern Continent to the Southern Continent, as he

could use the Island of Ice's Teleport Formation. However, it wasn't that easy for him to return, as Jiang Chen would need to find the exact location of the Island of Ice first. And, as the Island of Ice was hidden at random depths of the ocean surrounding the Eastern Continent, Jiang Chen could only fly on his own in order to return to the Eastern Continent.

But for Jiang Chen, the trip to the Southern Continent was extremely fruitful. Not only had he broken through to the Combat Soul realm, he had also found the third broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword, something he did not expect at all.

“Let's go.”

Nangong Yunzheng waved his sleeves and left with his men. Wu Ningzhu had left, therefore it was meaningless for them to continue staying here. Furthermore, with this peerless genius here, if they kept clinging to this matter, they would be the ones to suffer in the end.

Within the Nangong family's main hall, Jiang Chen had been given a seat at the same level as Nangong Yunfan and sat on the front. In this world where strength meant everything, as long as you had formidable strength, you would receive a high status and be respected by the people.

“Thanks for your help, nephew Jiang Chen. If not for you, the Nangong family would be in great danger right now.”

Nangong Yunfan once again expressed his gratitude toward Jiang

Chen. He didn't mention anything about the broken sword. Nangong Yunfan was a wise man, and he knew it was impossible for him to retrieve the broken sword. This fact together with the instructions given to him by his father, he felt at ease for losing this family treasure.

On the other side, he knew how much potential Jiang Chen had. Maintaining a friendly relationship with a man like this could only bring benefits to his family. Even if he couldn't achieve this kind of relationship, he wouldn't risk anything to become an enemy of Jiang Chen.

"I consider Brother Nan's problems my own. Uncle, please don't mention it."

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

Hearing Jiang Chen say 'don't mention it' caused many lips to curl up. You have taken away our family's most important item, and now you're asking us not to mention it? Could you be any more despicable?

Jiang Chen knew what all these people were thinking. He wouldn't take the broken sword away just like that, he would at least give them something they could use to sustain themselves.

With a flip of his palm, Jiang Chen retrieved a milky white jade pot. In an instant, a pure Yang aura immediately leaked out from the jade pot, causing everyone who smelled it to feel refreshed.

“This is? Nine Solar Holy Water?”

Liang Zhui was the first one to speak out in surprise. All these people belonged to the upper echelons of the Nangong family, and they had been receiving Nine Solar Holy Water for many years, so its aura was very familiar to them. The aura leaking out from this jade pot was clearly the aura of Nine Solar Holy Water.

“Nephew Jiang Chen, this is?”

Nangong Yunfan turned to Jiang Chen and asked.

“This is a pot filled with Nine Solar Holy Water. This pot contains an amount equal to the amount of Nine Solar Holy Water your family has produced for these last hundred years. This is my compensation from taking that broken sword from you. I hope uncle can accept this.”

Jiang Chen handed the jade pot directly to Nangong Yunfan.

“What?! A pot filled with Nine Solar Holy Water?!”

Tu Yi instantly cried out in surprise. Everyone’s eyes were wide open, and they were unable to remain calm any longer. No one were able to remain calm when faced with this much Nine Solar Holy Water. They had no idea how Jiang Chen had done it, but this pot truly contained as much Nine Solar Holy Water as they had gotten in the past hundred years. Faced with this situation, their attitudes toward Jiang Chen had once again changed

tremendously. Not only did they no longer feel unsatisfied toward Jiang Chen; they felt grateful instead.

The their family treasure's most important function was to produce Nine Solar Holy Water, with this pot of Nine Solar Holy Water that could last them for 100 years, losing that treasure was no longer a big deal for them.

For Jiang Chen, although it took him some effort to produce this Nine Solar Holy Water, it wasn't difficult at all, as the third part of the Heavenly Saint Sword was the one he had forged with the Nine Solar Energies skill in his past life. It had the ability to absorb the sun's energy and turn it into Nine Solar Holy Water. Since it was now in Jiang Chen's possession, for Jiang Chen who was an expert in the Nine Solar Energies skill, producing Nine Solar Holy Water would only take him a bit of time.

After Jiang Chen obtained the broken sword, he immediately started producing Nine Solar Holy Water. With this newly produced Nine Solar Holy Water, he could now bring the broken sword away with a peace of mind.

“All of us from the Nangong family will never forget the kindness nephew Jiang Chen has shown us.”

Nangong Yunfan stood up from his seat and prepared to bow toward Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen was shocked. Without hesitating, he took a step forward and stopped Nangong Yunfan from bowing. If it was any

ordinary man, he would still accept this bow. However, this man in front of him was Nangong Wentian's father. For the sake of Nangong Wentian, there was no way Jiang Chen could accept this bow. Besides, if this man wasn't Nangong Wentian's father, Jiang Chen would have just brought the broken sword and left straightaway, he wouldn't go out of his way to give them a pot of Nine Solar Holy Water.

“Don't mention it uncle. Brother Nan and I are good brother who have gone through life and death together, the reason I came here was to help solve the Nangong family's crisis. Since everything has now been settled, I will not disturb you any longer. I'm going to leave soon.”

Jiang Chen said.

Chapter 418 – Something Is Going To Happen

“You’re leaving so soon? Why don’t you stay for a few more days? We’ve neglected you all this time, so do give us a chance to show our hospitality.”

Learning that Jiang Chen was leaving, Nangong Yunfan felt a bit reluctant to let him. He did wish to cultivate an even better relationship with a genius like Jiang Chen.

“Dad, Little Chen still has some important matters to attend to. We’re really lucky for him to have come to the Southern Continent this time. Since our family’s crisis has been settled, it’s time for him to return.”

Nangong Wentian said. No one here knew what Jiang Chen was facing except him. The situation in the Eastern Continent was unfavorable to Jiang Chen, so he needed to be present in the Martial Palace and Martial Saint Dynasty to face his own problems.

The situation was considered stable for the Nangong family. There was no way for Nangong Yunzheng to do them any more harm after the battle. As for the Profound River Palace, without the attraction of the family’s secret treasure, they wouldn’t involve themselves in the Nangong family’s internal affairs any longer. Furthermore, the situation in the Southern Continent was quite tense right now. The war between the Demon King Palace and the Dancing Sun City had pissed off the Demon King Palace, and they would sooner or later go to war with the Profound River Palace. Tied up by their rivals, the Profound River Palace would have no

time for the Nangong family.

Jiang Chen wouldn't be able to provide much help even if he stayed. Furthermore, he also needed to rush back to the Eastern Continent to settle his own problems.

“Alright, if that is the case, I won't be keeping you here any longer. Once nephew Jiang Chen has settled all your matters, do come visit us here; allow me to show our hospitality.”

Nangong Yunfan said.

“Certainly, uncle.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile.

On the same night, within Nangong Wentian's courtyard, two men were standing side by side.

“Little Chen, thank you for helping me this time. However, I really wish to know one thing.”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“If it's regarding the broken sword, you better not ask, because I have no idea how I should answer you.”

Jiang Chen knew what Nangong Wentian wanted to ask. This was the first time that the broken sword had flown out by itself. Not only that, Jiang Chen was also able to produce so much Nine Solar Holy Water. Therefore, even an idiot would be able to tell that there must be some unusual relationship between Jiang Chen and the broken sword.

“Fine.”

Nangong Wentian casually shrugged his shoulder. He did want to know what Jiang Chen’s relationship with the broken sword was, but since Jiang Chen didn’t want to explain, he gave up pursuing the answer.

“Little Chen, how are you going to return to the Eastern Continent? Can you still find the Teleport Formation we used?”

Nangong Wentian asked.

“I can’t. The bronze plate can only let me find the exact location of the Island of Ice. Although the Island of Ice is constantly moving around, it will always remain in the ocean surrounding the Eastern Continent. Therefore, I will have to fly back on my own.”

Jiang Chen said.

“That is going to cost you a lot of time...”

Nangong Wentian furrowed his brows.

“That’s right. With my previous speed, if I flew without stopping a single time, it would take me at least two months to return. However, since I’ve broken through to the Combat Soul realm now, combined with the help of my movement skill, I’ll be able to get there in about two weeks.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He was very confident in his own speed. Following his breakthrough to the Combat Soul realm, his Dimensional Shift skill had become stronger. Of course, before he broke through to the Combat King realm where he could utilize the Dimensional Laws, he would be unable to unleash the full power of the skill. However, since it was a really advanced skill, it was still able to provide a great boost to his speed, and once Jiang Chen broke through to the Combat King realm in the future, he would be able to fully unleash the power of his Dimensional Shift.

“Little Chen, my family’s situation isn’t really stable right now, so I won’t be going back with you this time. Once I’ve settled all matters here, I’ll proceed to the Eastern Continent and help you.”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Alright. You better put more effort into your cultivation. Once I’ve settled all matters in the Eastern Continent, we’ll proceed to the Divine Continent and continue our journey there.”

Jiang Chen patted Nangong Wentian on the shoulder.

“The Divine Continent.”

Nangong Wentian's expression became serious. The Divine Continent was a sacred land, the heart of the Saint Origin Realm, and it was also the biggest land in this realm; the place all warriors dreamt about going!

“That's right. As men who live in this world, we do not ask to live forever, but I can always aim to become as dazzling as a shooting star. Since there is a richer world out there, why don't we spend our lives experiencing it? Our passion will never die; the Divine Continent is the place where true warriors can be found! A Combat King warrior is nothing in that land, so we have to work really hard in order to land our feet there! Therefore, brother; keep working hard!”

Jiang Chen turned to Nangong Wentian and smiled at him. After that, he simply turned into a trail of light and disappeared into the night sky. He had finally begun his journey back home.

“Passion and excitement... I, Nangong Wentian lack those.”

Nangong Wentian murmured to himself as he stared into the direction Jiang Chen had disappeared into. He suddenly felt his blood starting to boil violently. At this point of time, he had finally given himself a big goal to work for.

Nangong Wentian remained standing underneath the bright moon. After some time, he turned around and proceeded to enter secluded cultivation. He knew one thing was for sure; with his cultivation and talent, he might be considered a genius in the

Southern Continent, but once he arrived at the Divine Continent; he was nothing!

Jiang Chen was finally on his way back to the Eastern Continent. He was worrying about what would happen back in the Eastern Continent, as he had too many enemies there. The Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect would never give up their hopes of revenge. He was just hoping that nothing bad had happened during the period where he wasn't around.

In fact, Jiang Chen cared little to none about the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. These two superpowers were at most up to par with the Nangong family, and with Jiang Chen's current strength, he could annihilate both of them with ease. What made Jiang Chen worry the most was the Martial Saint Dynasty, as that was the real mammoth.

.....

Eastern Continent! Within a unique courtyard in the center of the Martial Palace, two powerful energies suddenly appeared. The energies turned into two bright beams and shot into the dark night sky, and they only disappeared after some time had passed. Following that, two figures walked out from two separate rooms. One of them was a handsome young man dressed in blue clothes and white hair. The other one was a mighty being with golden fur. These two were none other than Han Yan and Big Yellow!

Right at this moment, the energies of these two were clearly much stronger than it had previously been. They exchanged glances and immediately started laughing out loud together.

“Brother Yan, Big Yellow, congratulations for breaking through to the Combat Soul realm!”

Yan Chenyu emerged from her room after sensing the powerful energies. When she saw that Big Yellow and Han Yan had both broken through to the Combat Soul realm, a joyful expression immediately emerged on her face.

“This guy actually broke through at the same time as me!”

Big Yellow said with a laugh. A few days ago, he suddenly felt sleepy and went straight to his room to sleep. However, he never thought that Han Yan who was in secluded cultivation would break through to the Combat Soul realm at the same time as him. This was something truly worth celebrating.

“The Ancient Divine Devil bloodline has awakened even further. After breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, I’ve become extremely powerful! Now, even a Mid Combat Soul warrior is no match for me!”

Han Yan’s white hair was fluttering in the breeze and he looked extremely confident. The Ancient Divine Devil’s bloodline was similar to Big Yellow’s Dragon Horse bloodline. The further they cultivated, the more frightening they would become.

“Same goes for daddy! Furthermore, after breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, daddy has awakened an extremely frightening innate ability, kaka...”

Big Yellow let out a vicious laugh.

“Abnormal.”

Han Yan couldn't help but glare at Big Yellow. For some unknown reason, he felt that this dog's laughter was really dirty. He had no idea what kind of innate ability Big Yellow had awakened, but it must be something really frightening.

“Little Chen has been gone for more than two weeks, I wonder when he's coming back.”

Han Yan said.

“He went to the Southern Continent, I don't think he'll come back here anytime soon. Oh right, Little Yu, has that bullshit Crown Prince disturbed you these few days?”

Big Yellow turned to Yan Chenyu and asked.

The Crown Prince's name immediately caused Yan Chenyu to furrow her brows as a disgusted expression emerged on her face.

“What Crown Prince?”

Han Yan was startled for a moment and asked.

“The Martial Saint Dynasty’s Crown Prince, the son of the Imperial Emperor! That fucker has a crush on Little Yu, and he keeps coming here to disturb Little Yu!”

Big Yellow cursed. He truly hated the Crown Prince.

“The Crown Prince has come here every single day, and he just came this morning. However, I’m feeling as if his patience is about to run out.”

Yan Chenyu said as she furrowed her brows.

“I’m scared something bad will happen soon.”

Han Yan furrowed his brows as well. Although they wouldn’t have to worry about the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect seeking revenge with the help of Wu Jiu, the Crown Prince was no ordinary man. Han Yan had never met the Crown Prince before, but thinking from the perspective of the Crown Prince, he would definitely try his best to get the girl he wanted.

“How about we do it like this; let’s just leave the Martial Palace!”

Yan Chenyu said. She didn’t like that Crown Prince, and ever since he came here with Wu Cong for the first time, he had kept returning every single day.

“Where can we go after leaving the Martial Palace? The entire Eastern Continent is ruled by the Martial Saint Dynasty, it’ll be really difficult for us to escape from the Crown Prince’s watch. Furthermore, if we leave, we’ll have to deal with the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect hunting us.”

Han Yan said.

.....

In the Martial Saint Dynasty, Tenth Emperor’s mansion.

“Has Jiang Chen truly left the Martial Palace?”

Shangguan Sheng asked.

“That’s right. During this period. The Crown Prince has gone to the Martial Palace and disturbed Yan Chenyu every single day, but Jiang Chen has never shown himself. With Jiang Chen’s temper, he didn’t even kneel down before the Imperial Emperor. If he is around, he would definitely have emerged because of the Crown Prince’s constant visiting.”

Wu Cong said.

“This guy actually left the Martial Palace! It’s really dangerous to let him out of our sight! He is incredibly talented, and he grows extremely quickly! If we allow him to continue growing, we’ll soon be in a disadvantageous position. We have to find a way to lure

him out!”

Tiangang Yi said with a cold expression.

“But we have no idea where he is right now... how are we going to lure him out?”

The Tenth Emperor said with a frown on his face.

“Don’t worry, we’ll just wait. The Crown Prince has started losing his patience toward Yan Chenyu, so I’m guessing he’ll soon use some dirty tricks on her. At that point of time, it will be difficult to stop things from happening.”

Wu Cong said with an evil smile on his face.

Chapter 419 – Tearing The Imperial Decree

Early morning, next day!

Within the deepest area of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Crown Prince arrived at the Imperial Emperor's bedroom early in the morning.

“My son, why are you here so early? Is there anything urgent?”

The Imperial Emperor asked. He really liked his son. Having such a strong cultivation at his young age, there was a high possibility that his son would surpass his own achievements in the future.

“Father, the reason I came here is to ask something from you.”

The Crown Prince bowed toward the Imperial Emperor.

“Oh? Is there something you can get within the Martial Saint Dynasty? Tell me.”

The Imperial Emperor was surprised. With the Crown Prince's status and position, within the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, even the entire Eastern Continent, there seemed to be nothing he couldn't get if he truly wanted.

“Father, your son has recently fallen in love with a girl.”

The Crown Prince went straight to the point.

“Being liked by my son is that girl’s fortune.”

The Imperial Emperor wasn’t surprised. He knew his son very well, and what kind of hobbies and weaknesses his son had. He was the one who knew the most. In the eyes of the Imperial Emperor, being lustful wasn’t something bad. All men underneath the heavens were fond of women. Furthermore, the Crown Prince would become the next Imperial Emperor in the future. It was perfectly normal for him to have many wives.

“Father, this girl belongs to the Martial Palace and is under the Ninth Emperor’s protection. If I use force on her, I might offend the Ninth Emperor. Therefore, I have no other choice but to ask for your help.”

The Crown Prince had run out of patience toward Yan Chenyu. He had visited her so many times during the last days at the Martial Palace, but not only had she given him a cold shoulder, she had also openly expressed her disgust toward him. This was a heavy blow to the Crown Prince’s face. He had never faced such a setback in his life before. However, his strong will to conquer her had been ignited after seeing how difficult it was to put his hands on her.

Therefore, the Crown Prince didn’t want to wait any longer. He only desired to make Yan Chenyu his girl as soon as possible.

“Ninth brother again.”

The Imperial Emperor furrowed his brows. Whenever someone mentioned the Ninth Emperor, he would begin feeling uneasy, especially when the Ninth Emperor was against him. That only made this feeling even stronger.

“Father, the Ninth Emperor has always thought he has earned great merits for what he did. He is so arrogant, and he doesn’t even take you seriously! This is something that is hurting your, the Imperial Emperor’s sovereignty! Father, you’re the emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the true Imperial Emperor! You can’t just act according to how Wu Jiu wants you to!”

The Crown Prince said in a gloomy manner.

The Crown Prince’s words were like sharp needles poking right into the Imperial Emperor’s heart. It instantly caused his expression to turn solemn, and a cold gleam to leak from his eyes.

“Fine, my son. I will declare an Imperial Decree; you’ll be married to that girl!”

The Imperial Emperor said. With a flip of his palm, a silky fabric that shone with a golden glow immediately appeared in front of him. After that, the Imperial Emperor simply waved his hand and wrote his Imperial Decree down on the silk fabric, giving it to the Crown Prince when he was done.

“Thank you, father!”

The Crown Prince rejoiced with wild excitement. The reason why he didn't use force on Yan Chenyu was because he didn't want any conflicts with Wu Jiu. But now, with this Imperial Decree from the Imperial Emperor, he could do anything he wanted. Who would dare object the marriage announced by the Imperial Emperor himself?

.....

Around noon, six powerful men suddenly appeared in the sky above the Martial Palace. They immediately alerted many people in the Martial Palace, including Yan Chenyu and her friends. When all of them saw who these people were, their expressions immediately changed dramatically.

“Something big is going to happen with the arrival of these people.”

Someone said with a low voice. There were six men who had appeared in the sky, and each of them looked poised and dignified. The leading man was Prince Wu Cong, and the other men were the Seventh Emperor, Tenth Emperor, Shangguan Clan's family chief Shangguan Sheng, Myriad Sword Sect's sect chief Tiangang Yi, and a respectable Late Combat Soul Elder from the Myriad Sword Sect.

All of these men were existences that could cause an entire territory to shake just by stomping their feet.

With a warm smile on his face, Wu Cong flipped his palm and

retrieved the golden Imperial Decree. After that, he turned toward Yan Chenyu and shouted, “The Imperial Decree is here! Yan Chenyu, proceed here to accept it!”

Wu Cong shouted with a loud and clear voice, allowing all in the Martial Palace to hear what he said.

“That’s the Imperial Emperor’s Imperial Decree! Why has the Imperial Emperor procured an Imperial Decree personally for Yan Chenyu?”

“Yan Chenyu is Jiang Chen’s wife, I don’t think she has anything to do with the Imperial Emperor?”

“Who knows? All these men have grudges against Jiang Chen, perhaps it isn’t something good.”

.....

Many people were surprised by this sudden event. The Imperial Emperor was a man who sat high above all. Even if he wanted to do something, he would just instruct verbally. It was rare for him to declare an Imperial Decree like this.

Within the courtyard, Yan Chenyu, Han Yan and Big Yellow all had a bad feeling about this.

“What’s going on?”

Right at this moment, a loud shout suddenly resounded. The majestic looking Wu Jiu suddenly flew up from the Martial Palace, arriving in front of Wu Cong and the others.

“I was ordered by the Imperial Emperor to announce his Imperial Decree here. Uncle Jiu, don’t you think you should bow upon seeing this Imperial Decree?”

Wu Cong told Wu Jiu while holding the Imperial Decree in hand.

Wu Jiu furrowed his brows and looked at the Imperial Decree. He could easily tell that this was a genuine Imperial Decree; there was no way they could have fake it. Therefore, Wu Jiu immediately bowed toward the Imperial Decree and said, “Why does the Imperial Emperor want to declare this Imperial Decree to Yan Chenyu?”

“Of course, this is something that everyone has to celebrate! The Crown Prince has his eyes set on young lady Yan Chenyu! Therefore, the Imperial Emperor has made this Imperial Decree for their marriage! Yan Chenyu and the Crown Prince will be married in the Crown Prince Palace in three days! Uncle Jiu, this is great news, don’t you know? Every single girl underneath the heavens dream about this!”

Wu Cong’s smile was so big that his eyes could barely be seen. Although he was congratulating for this incident, he was actually portraying a complacent attitude.

“What?!”

Wu Jiu instantly cried out in shock.

Yan Chenyu and Han Yan’s expressions changed dramatically at the same time as well.

“Fuck you!”

Han Yan couldn’t help but curse. Their worst nightmare had finally arrived. Now, with the Imperial Decree personally declared by the Imperial Emperor himself, the matter had gone to the worst possible state. Perhaps even the Ninth Emperor would be unable to do anything about it now.

At this moment, Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan who were in secluded cultivation left their courtyards and came to Yan Chenyu’s courtyard. They too had heard the Imperial Decree, causing their faces to be covered with anger.

“Damn it, how could this happen?!”

Yu Zihan clenched his fist tightly.

“Fuck! Asking Little Yu to marry that bullshit Crown Prince, this is bullshit! We’d rather fight them all!”

Han Yan’s white hair was fluttering around. Not only would Yan

Chenyu herself never agree to marry the Crown Prince, Han Yan would never agree either.

“We can never agree to this! Who does that Crown Prince think he is? He is no match for Little Yu!”

Yu Zihan was a man with a fiery temper as well. On the other side, Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan were furious as well. But at the same time, they all knew this matter was going to be very difficult to solve.

A cold and stern expression covered Yan Chenyu’s face, but she simply remained silent.

In the sky, Wu Cong threw his glance to Yan Chenyu and said with a smile on his face, “Young lady Yan, quickly come over and accept the Imperial Decree! The Crown Prince will later come here to fetch you personally! Becoming the Crown Prince’s wife is an ultimate honor! Young lady Yan, you really have to appreciate this lucky moment in your life!”

“No way!”

Before Yan Chenyu could say anything, Wu Jiu became the first one to jump in.

“Old Jiu, are you trying to object the Imperial Decree?”

The Seventh Emperor said in a cold manner.

“I said no way! Yan Chenyu is a married woman! She and Jiang Chen got married long before this; how can she be married to the Crown Prince?!”

Wu Jiu said. He actually had no idea whether or not Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu were married, but one thing was for sure; he couldn't let the Crown Prince marry Yan Chenyu, as no one would be able to withstand Jiang Chen's fury!

“So what if she's married? All that matters is that the Crown Prince likes her.”

Wu Cong responded with a smile.

“I said there is no way! Tell the Crown Prince to give up on his lustful thoughts! Give me that Imperial Decree!”

Wu Jiu moved and appeared right in front of Wu Cong. He stretched his arm forward and snatched the Imperial Decree within a split second. Wu Cong was scared by this action, and quickly hid behind the Tenth Emperor.

“Old Jiu, what are you trying to do? How dare you snatch the Imperial Decree?!”

The Tenth Emperor shouted out loudly.

“Not only this mere Imperial Decree, even if the Imperial Emperor came here himself, I would leave no room for negotiation on this matter!”

Wu Jiu was extremely aggressive. With both hands, he instantly tore the Imperial Decree into pieces. Wu Jiu was a trustworthy man, and since Jiang Chen had saved his life from the Poisonous Miasma Space, he began treating this brother of his as one of the most important parts of his life. He owed Jiang Chen his life. Therefore, in a critical moment like this, he wouldn't have any hesitation, even if it ended up being at the cost of his own life.

Wu Jiu knew how important Yan Chenyu was to Jiang Chen, and if something bad happened to her while Jiang Chen wasn't around, he would simply be unable to face Jiang Chen.

“Ridiculous! Wu Jiu, you're really daring! How dare you tear the Imperial Decree?! This is a capital offense!”

The Seventh Emperor unleashed his energy and shouted at Wu Jiu. At the same time, what just happened brought a storm to those who were watching. Tearing an Imperial Decree to pieces was something that had never happened before. Perhaps in the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, Wu Jiu was the only one who could have done it, as this was a capital offense where death was the only punishment!

“Lord Jiu is such a trustworthy man, I like him!”

Yu Zihan felt a strong desire to prostrate himself in front of Wu

Jiu in admiration.

“Sigh, we’re done for.”

However, Big Yellow just shook his head and let out a long sigh. Jiang Chen had actually told him about what happened in the Martial Saint Dynasty. Although Wu Jiu had a prestigious status, the Imperial Emperor had ill feeling toward him. The reason why the Imperial Emperor declared this Imperial Decree was to show his powers to Wu Jiu, letting Wu Jiu know he was the ultimate ruler of this land, and that his sovereignty was not to be challenged. But now, not only had Wu Jiu objected his Imperial Decree, he had also torn it publicly. This was equal to slapping the Imperial Emperor’s face openly, and it had also given the Imperial Emperor a perfect excuse to execute Wu Jiu.

“Hmph! I’m going to see the Imperial Emperor now!”

Wu Jiu coldly harrumphed and prepared to fly toward the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“No need.”

At this moment, another figure suddenly emerged from afar. It was a handsome young man dressed in a golden robe. Behind them was a few dozen golden guards, all dressed in golden armor. The Crown Prince had finally arrived.

“Wu Jiu, you’ve torn the Imperial Decree in front of everyone,

that's the same as slapping the Imperial Emperor's face in public! This is a capital offense! I, as the next Imperial Emperor, will take you down in front of everyone!"

The Crown Prince acted in an extremely aggressive way.

Chapter 420 – I'll Leave With You

The Crown Prince was extremely aggressive, and he had arrived at the perfect time, as if everything had been carefully planned. This was clearly a trap for Wu Jiu. The Crown Prince was a clever man, and he knew what the Imperial Emperor was thinking. In order to get rid of Wu Jiu, all he needed was just an excuse.

Tearing the Imperial Decree, this was a huge offense! It was more than enough reason to kill the Ninth Emperor a few times.

“Hmph! You dare arrest me? I’m going to meet the Imperial Emperor now!”

Wu Jiu showed no signs of being afraid. In his life, he had never been scared of anything. He had promised Jiang Chen to protect all of his friends, and if anything bad happened to Yan Chenyu, how was he going to face Jiang Chen when he returned?

“You can meet my father, but I’ll have to tie you up before bringing you there. Men, take Wu Jiu down right now!”

The Crown Prince shouted out.

“Yes!”

Over twenty Golden Guards surrounded Wu Jiu. At the same time, the Seventh Emperor, Tenth Emperor, Shangguan Sheng, Tiangang Yi, as well as the Late Combat Soul warrior from the

Myriad Sword Sect joined the Golden Guards.

“Bastard, how dare you attack me?!”

Wu Jiu was furious.

“Old Jiu, just surrender! You’ve torn the Imperial Decree, that’s like slapping the Imperial Emperor’s face; a capital offense! We are just obeying the Crown Prince’s order to bring you in front of the Imperial Emperor to face your judgment.”

The Seventh Emperor said with a sneer on his face.

“What should we do? This is getting serious!”

Guan Yiyun asked with a solemn expression. All the others wore similar expressions as him. No one expected things to develop to this stage in such a short amount of time.

“Don’t you guys see this? That Imperial Decree was in fact declared for Lord Jiu! If the Imperial Emperor really wanted Yan Chenyu to marry the Crown Prince, he would just declare it verbally, there would be no need for him to bring out an Imperial Decree. What Jiang Chen said was right; in the Imperial Emperor’s heart, there is no more room left for Lord Jiu. What happened today was a trap. Lord Jiu is a trustworthy man who cherishes his relationship with Jiang Chen, therefore he would definitely fall into this trap. Sigh...”

Big Yellow let out a long sigh. What happened today was unavoidable.

“What should we do now? Are we just going to watch them bring Lord Jiu away without doing anything?”

Yu Zihan clenched his fists tightly, causing some cracking sounds to be produced. All of them felt guilty regarding today's events. If they hadn't come here, Wu Jiu wouldn't have had to face all of this today.

“Not only Lord Jiu, even we are going to face a crisis soon. The Shangguan Clan, Myriad Sword Sect, and Wu Cong are obviously using the Crown Prince to get rid of us.”

Han Yan said with a pale expression. The situation was now clear to him. Since the Imperial Emperor failed to have Jiang Chen killed when he sent Jiang Chen to repair the Dimensional Crack on Mount Origin, these enemies would never let this matter off so easily. Therefore, they dragged the Crown Prince into their plans.

“Haha, who dares touch me!?”

Wu Jiu showed no signs of being afraid, he still portrayed the same aggressive image as he unleashed a frightening aura from his body. He was already at the peak of the Combat Soul realm, he was just a single step from breaking through to the Combat King realm.

“Hmph! I'll capture you personally! Wu Jiu, if you surrender

now, I can still spare your life and let father sentence you himself! However, if you dare fight back, I'll kill you on the spot!"

The Crown Prince coldly harrumphed. After that, he took out a golden halberd that looked extremely powerful. As the Martial Saint Dynasty's number one genius, he did not have any fear of Wu Jiu.

"Hold on!"

A crystal clear voice could suddenly be heard. After that, like a white-clothed fairy, Yan Chenyu flew into the sky, arriving close to these people.

"I will marry you. However, there is one condition; you have to let the Ninth Emperor go."

Yan Chenyu said.

"What?!"

Her words immediately caused Wu Jiu, Han Yan and the others to cry out in shock. They all looked at Yan Chenyu, shocked.

"No way, I don't agree with this!"

Wu Jiu said in a stern manner. He knew Yan Chenyu said this in order to save him, but he would never allow Yan Chenyu to

surrender herself to the Crown Prince. Even if doing that would allow him to live, he would have no way of facing Jiang Chen.

“Little Yu, come back! We’ll just fight them with our lives!”

Han Yan’s body was covered with powerful devilish energy, and his white hair was fluttering messily, as if he was a devil king waiting to launch his attack. If worse came to worst, he would rather fight them than surrender like this.

“Yea! That Crown Prince is nothing! How dare he try to force Little Yu to be his wife?!”

Yu Zihan’s eyes turned red as he spoke. Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan who stood next to him were already preparing themselves for a tough fight. Jiang Chen had saved their lives, and since Yan Chenyu was now facing a dangerous situation, there was no way they could just sit back and do nothing.

Only Big Yellow was still able to remain silent without expressing any opinion. He knew about Yan Chenyu and Jiang Chen’s relationship very well, and he believed that Yan Chenyu would rather die than marry someone who wasn’t Jiang Chen. Not only that, Yan Chenyu wasn’t the same naïve girl that she once was when he had just left her home. After having gone through all those life and death experiences, she had completely transformed. Therefore, she must have some plan in mind.

In the sky, when the Crown Prince heard Yan Chenyu finally agreeing to marry him, his face was immediately covered with wild

excitement. Now, he only cared about how Yan Chenyu treated him.

“Young lady Yan, what you said is true?”

The Crown Prince turned to Yan Chenyu and asked.

“Yes, I will marry you, but you’ll have to promise me to let the Ninth Emperor go.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“Bastard!”

Wu Jiu was completely furious right now. He simply unleashed his energy and prepared to launch an attack toward Shangguan Sheng, who stood closest to him.

“Stop!”

Yan Chenyu shouted with an indifferent voice. “Ninth Emperor, this is my own matter. No matter who I marry, it has nothing to do with you.”

Yan Chenyu’s voice was cold. However, right after she finished speaking, she immediately sent a message to Wu Jiu, Han Yan and the others through her Divine Sense, “Ninth Emperor, Brother Yan, Big Yellow, I’ll follow the Crown Prince now and leave later.

Once I've left, you guys need to find a way to run away from this place. Don't worry about me, I have my own ways of escaping."

Just as Big Yellow thought; Yan Chenyu was no longer the same naïve girl who had just left her home. After following Jiang Chen for such a long time, she had learned how to calm down. More importantly, she was able to remain calm when facing a critical situation.

Faced with this situation, if she didn't stand out and say something, Wu Jiu would have been finished, and all of her friends would follow in his footsteps shortly afterwards. The Crown Prince was well prepared for this, and he would definitely not let anyone off the hook. Not only that, Wu Jiu was too impulsive, tearing the Imperial Decree, giving the Crown Prince a perfect excuse to attack Wu Jiu. Because of this, Yan Chenyu pretended to agree to marry the Crown Prince, giving her friends room to leave this place.

Yan Chenyu's words caused the enraged Wu Jiu to calm down a bit. Only now did he realize that he had almost brought everyone down with his impulsive actions. Not only had he dragged himself into this trap, he had dragged all of Jiang Chen's brothers as well; the brothers Jiang Chen cherished like his own life.

Finally, Wu Jiu shook his head helplessly. He wouldn't leave the Martial Saint Dynasty and run for his life, but he had to give Han Yan and the others some time to run away.

"Alright, I promise you."

The Crown Prince put away his golden halberd and looked at Yan Chenyu with a smile. As long as he could get Yan Chenyu, he was willing to let Wu Jiu off for now. After all, there was no way Wu Jiu could run away from them, and there were still plenty of chances for him to deal with Wu Jiu.

“Crown Prince, Wu Jiu has torn the Imperial Decree, that’s a capital offense.”

The Seventh Emperor looked at the Crown Prince and said.

“Seventh Imperial Uncle, I’ll report Wu Jiu’s crime to father accordingly. Today is a happy day for me, you guys just go back to where you came from.”

The Crown Prince waved his hand, causing all Golden Guards to fall back. As the commander of the Golden Guards, the Crown Prince was their boss. Therefore, these Golden Guards would obey anything the Crown Prince said.

The Seventh Emperor and the others retreated as well. Although they weren’t happy about Wu Jiu not getting assaulted today, they were no idiots. They knew they couldn’t make the Crown Prince unhappy. And besides, Wu Jiu tearing the Imperial Decree had been witnessed by many; Wu Jiu would be punished sooner or later.

“Young lady Yan, now can you come to the Crown Prince Palace with me?”

The Crown Prince turned to Yan Chenyu and showed her what he thought was the gentlest smile he could muster.

“En.”

Yan Chenyu nodded her head and arrived next to the Crown Prince. Without hesitating, the Crown Prince tried putting his arm around Yan Chenyu’s waist. However, his move was immediately noticed by Yan Chenyu. She avoided the grab and said, “Crown Prince, I’ve agreed to marry you, but before we are officially married, I hope the Crown Prince can show me some respect.”

“Alright, sorry for being rude.”

The Crown Prince quickly responded with a smile. Inwardly, he was actually cursing at Yan Chenyu. However, he actually liked a girl who was being conservative and protected her own purity at all costs, because the more difficult it was for him to touch Yan Chenyu, the more excited he got.

“I’ll let you be pure and lofty for now. In three days, you’ll be officially married to me, and I’ll let you taste my strength.”

The Crown Prince thought to himself. In his mind, he had already began imagining how he was going to bring Yan Chenyu under his control.

“Let’s go.”

Yan Chenyu said.

After saying that, they both flew into the sky and left, followed by all the Golden Guards who came with the Crown Prince.

Seeing this, Yan Chenyu immediately stopped and spoke with a frown on her face, “I want to be alone with the Crown Prince; you guys just leave us alone.”

Hearing this, all the Golden Guards immediately turned to the Crown Prince, as they only obeyed the Crown Prince’s orders.

“Didn’t you guys hear what young lady Yan said? We want to be alone, why are you still following us?”

The Crown Prince scolded those Golden Guards. After that, the Golden Guards simply bowed toward the Crown Prince and started flying in another direction.

The Crown Prince didn’t take what Yan Chenyu said to heart, as Yan Chenyu was just a girl with an Early Combat Soul cultivation. Even if she was given a pair of wings, it would be impossible for her to escape from him.

“Crown Prince, let’s go now.”

After saying that, Yan Chenyu and the Crown Prince turned into

two trails of light and disappeared from the scene.

Wu Jiu stared into the direction where the two of them had disappeared with a gloomy expression. He turned around and glanced at the Seventh Emperor and the others, then shouted with a loud voice, “Get the hell outta here!”

“Hmph! Old Jiu, don’t you be so arrogant now! You have committed a capital offense by tearing the Imperial Decree! Sooner or later, the Imperial Emperor will give you your rightful punishment!”

The Seventh Emperor coldly harrumphed.

“Do you believe I won’t tear you apart like I did the Imperial Decree?”

Wu Jiu said with a fierce voice. He was like a lion on the brink of exploding with fury, as if he could go on a rampage at any moment.

“Let’s go!”

The Seventh Emperor brought the other men and left. All of them knew how strong Wu Jiu was, and they didn’t want to have any unnecessary conflicts with him right now. After all, they had completed today’s goal, and sooner or later, Wu Jiu would be gone.

Chapter 421 – Sudden Strike

Outside the Martial Palace, while on their way back, the Seventh Emperor and the rest of the men were laughing out loud. Today was a really joyful day for them.

“Old Jiu is finished this time! He always thinks so highly of himself! He thought that by helping the Imperial Emperor so many years ago he is exempted from the punishment of offending the Imperial Sovereignty! Little to his knowledge, he has actually provoked the Imperial Emperor, and now, by tearing the Imperial Decree with his own hands, he has just given the Imperial Emperor a perfect reason to get rid of him.”

Said the delighted Tenth Emperor.

“That Jiang Chen didn’t appear even at a time like this, it looks like he really isn’t in the Martial Palace. That man is a dangerous man, we have to lure him out and kill him; we can’t give him any more room to grow!”

Shangguan Sheng said.

“No worries. No matter how frightening that Jiang Chen is, he just can’t take on the entire Martial Saint Dynasty by himself. The Crown Prince has the main role in the event, and if Jiang Chen fights him, that will be equal to fighting the entire Martial Saint Dynasty.”

The Seventh Emperor said, expressing his disdain for Jiang

Chen.

“Regardless, let’s spread the news about Yan Chenyu and the Crown Prince. We need to lure Jiang Chen out! Faced with a genius like him, only killing him can make us feel at ease. If not, if he hides somewhere for a couple of years, he might break through to the Combat King realm, and at that point of time, even the Martial Saint Dynasty will be unable to defeat him.”

Tiangang Yi said.

“Dad, what Sect Chief Tiangang said is correct. This Jiang Chen is an extremely dangerous man; we have to kill him as soon as possible!”

Wu Cong’s eyes flickered viciously. He had personally tasted how frightening Jiang Chen was. Although he was Jiang Chen’s enemy, he had to admit that if Jiang Chen was given enough time, he would grow into a ferocious enemy who would bring them devastation.

.....

Within the Martial Palace. After Wu Jiu returned, he immediately went to wake Wu Lang who was in secluded cultivation. After that, both of them gathered with Han Yan and the rest.

After Wu Lang learned what had happened, his expression

instantly changed.

“How could this have happen?!”

Wu Lang nearly shouted out loudly. He had never thought so many things could possibly happen while he was in secluded cultivation. Today's events was even a risk to the lives of all these people.

“Lang'er, there is a secret door behind the Martial Palace. I want you all to leave right now, go away as far as you can. Until Jiang Chen returns, do not show yourselves in public.”

Wu Jiu said in a serious tone.

“Lord Jiu, what about you?”

Han Yan asked.

“I can't leave. I really want to see if the Imperial Emperor will attack me like brother Jiang Chen said.”

In fact, Wu Jiu had in fact become more aware of the situation. He did relate all of the recent events to what Jiang Chen had told him. He had never expected Jiang Chen to actually be right.

“Lord Jiu, don't be so naïve. Today's Imperial Decree was clearly a trap set specifically for you. I'm certain the Imperial Emperor

wants to do something to you, because you've offended his sovereignty."

Han Yan said.

"He's right! Father, let us leave here together! There is nothing left in the Martial Saint Dynasty that we care about, and since the Imperial Emperor has done this to us, there is nothing we need to consider."

Wu Lang added. Although Wu Jiu was the Martial Saint Dynasty's Lord Ninth Emperor, he had only married a single wife and had a single son. Wu Lang's mother passed away a long time ago, and ever since then, he and Wu Jiu had just stayed in the Martial Palace, they didn't even have a mansion in the Martial Saint Dynasty like all the other emperors. Therefore, there was nothing worth staying here for.

"Lord Jiu, let's leave this place together!"

Xuan Ye also tried to persuade him.

"Things aren't as simple as you guys think. We have no idea if Little Yu can escape from the Crown Prince's captivity, so I can't leave now. Furthermore, if we all just leave like this, I'm sure the Imperial Emperor will issue an order to have us killed. I can be of big use if I stay here, and besides, I don't truly believe that the Imperial Emperor will harm me."

Even now, Wu Jiu still had hope in the kinship between himself and the Imperial Emperor.

“Dad, if you don’t leave, I will stay back as well.”

Wu Lang said with a serious expression.

“Just leave with Han Yan and the others. If something bad truly happens to me, at least my bloodline will still go on.”

Wu Jiu glared at Wu Lang.

“Lord Jiu, I have been following you my entire life. Therefore, even if certain death lays ahead, I will still want to die together with you. So, don’t ask me to leave with them.”

Xuan Ye said with a casual expression, expressing his determination to follow Wu Jiu.

Wu Jiu stared at Xuan Ye. After some time, he let out a long sigh and said, “Xuan Ye, you’ve suffer a lot by following me.”

Wu Jiu patted Xuan Ye’s shoulder. He knew that Xuan Ye was very loyal to him, and that there was no way he could chase him away. When he was trapped in Inferno Hell for ten years, Xuan Ye had spent the same amount of time staying there, always looking for him, and Wu Jiu would never forget that. In Wu Jiu’s mind, Xuan Ye was no longer his subordinate, but his own brother.

Han Yan and Big Yellow both sighed at the same time. They knew Wu Jiu would refuse to leave, and that it was useless to keep persuading him. However, they still had to leave no matter what. If not, Yan Chenyu's risky decision would have been for nothing.

Finally, Han Yan and the others took the secret passage hidden behind the Martial Palace and left. Although Wu Lang didn't want to leave, he had no choice.

Outside of Mount Wufu, near a desolate field, this group of people were just as gloomy as this place was desolate.

“We're out, but where should we go now?”

Yu Zihan asked, feeling extremely sullen.

“Let's find a secret place and hide for now. We'll keep close watch on the situation.”

Big Yellow suggested.

“I wonder how Little Yu is going to get herself out from that dangerous situation. The Crown Prince isn't someone who's easy to deal with.”

Han Yan said in a worried manner.

“You guys leave this place first, I’ll go check on her situation.”

After saying that, Big Yellow moved, disappearing from the scene.

“Brother Yan, will Big Yellow face any danger?”

Guan Yiyun worriedly asked.

“Don’t worry, that dog is very clever, and it’s not easy to kill him.”

Han Yan was very confident in Big Yellow. The dog was very smart, and there weren’t many people underneath the heavens who had the ability to kill him.

.....

On the other side, along the way going to the Martial Saint Dynasty from the Martial Palace, there was a mountain range. Yan Chenyu who was flying at an incredible speed suddenly slowed down and fell behind the Crown Prince.

A cold glint flickered within her eyes. Without hesitating, she simply unleashed an icy sword and threw it at the Crown Prince’s back.

As if the Crown Prince had noticed the attack, he instantly

turned around and delivered a powerful punch onto the icy sword, causing it to immediately shatter.

“How dare you attack from my back?!”

An angry expression immediately emerged on the Crown Prince’s face.

“It’s a shame I didn’t kill you with that attack.”

Yan Chenyu responded with an extremely cold expression. Although she was able to defeat any Mid Combat Soul existence with her Early Combat Soul cultivation and Nine Yin Meridians, but when she was faced with the Crown Prince, she was not a match for him at all. Not only that, the Crown Prince had also reached the Late Combat Soul realm; the gap between their cultivations was simply too big. Only Jiang Chen who was an abnormal genius capable of attracting Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm could defeat someone like the Crown Prince.

“Good! Yan Chenyu, although I am so in love with you, you actually deceived me, and you also tried to attack me! Looks like I can’t be courteous with you any longer!”

The Crown Prince’s expression changed. With a sneer on his face, he started walking step by step toward Yan Chenyu.

“Hmph!”

Yan Chenyu coldly harrumphed. She then waved her sleeve, unleashing dozens of icy swords toward the Crown Prince at the same time.

“I never expected you to have a unique physique! You’re really making me like you more and more! However, it’s too bad, you are simply too weak; you are unable to pose any threat to me! In front of me, you’re just a tame sheep waiting to be slaughtered!”

The Crown Prince licked his lips as an evil smile emerged on his face. He casually unleashed a bright beam, shattering all the icy swords thrown out by Yan Chenyu.

“Bitch! Since you don’t appreciate my kindness, I’ll just make you my woman right here!”

The Crown Prince finally showed his true colors.

Swoosh!

Suddenly, an extremely powerful wind swept toward the Crown Prince from his back, causing his expression to instantly change. This wind was much stronger than Yan Chenyu’s attacks. Without hesitating, the Crown Prince quickly turned around and was met a 30 meter tall gigantic monster throwing its huge fist toward his face.

The Crown Prince didn’t dare neglect this attack, because he had

noticed one thing; not only did this monster who came out of nowhere have a weird appearance, it also carried a powerful aura. It was in fact a Late Combat Soul existence.

But regardless of that, the Crown Prince was a mighty warrior by himself. With incredible reflexes, he immediately threw out a powerful punch in order to counter the attack. The punch carried a tremendous force, and not only did it shine brightly, it had also merged with his formidable combat skill. The two punches quickly collided.

Boom!

The atmosphere was shaking violently from this incredible collision. The gigantic monster was the Ice Demon King that was let out by Yan Chenyu.

Tap, tap, tap...

The Ice Demon King was knocked back a couple of steps before it could stabilize its body. Although it had a formidable cultivation, it was unable to withstand the Crown Prince's attack, who was also a Late Combat Soul warrior.

Right as the Ice Demon King was knocked back, Yan Chenyu's attack arrived from behind the Crown Prince. She had unleashed a razor sharp sword that was condensed from her Dark Ice Energy, and she was slashing it toward the Crown Prince's body.

The Crown Prince waved his hand, retrieving his golden halberd. Then, he simply turned around and swung his weapon, instantly shattering Yan Chenyu's attack.

Roar...

The Ice Demon King would never give the Crown Prince any opportunity to hurt Yan Chenyu. With incredible speed, it leapt toward the Crown Prince, arriving in front of him in an instant.

"Yan Chenyu, I never expected you to have this monster helper. No wonder you had the courage to attack me. However, if you think this is your savior, you're just being naïve! I'll let you witness my abilities, and after killing this monster, I'll settle everything with you."

With imposing energy and the golden halberd in hand, the Crown Prince thrust the halberd forcefully into the Ice Demon King's head.

Although the Ice Demon King possessed tremendous strength, it didn't know how to use any combat skills. Therefore, it was no match for someone as strong as the Crown Prince. Of course, the Ice Demon King did have its own incredible ability. It was nearly impossible to kill, even more so when it was around Yan Chenyu, almost making it an immortal existence.

Bam!

After the golden halberd pierced the Ice Demon King's head, a powerful force erupted from it, instantly shattering the Ice Demon King's body.

“It can't even withstand a single blow.”

The Crown Prince then turned around and looked at Yan Chenyu, “So this is your savior? It's too weak!”

“Is that so? Turn around and see for yourself.”

Yan Chenyu said with an indifferent tone.

When the Crown Prince was about to tease Yan Chenyu for playing with him, he suddenly felt another powerful energy coming from his back, causing his expression to change once again.

Chapter 422 – Big Yellow's Peerless Fart

Regardless of whether or not Yan Chenyu was trying to fool the Crown Prince, the powerful attack coming from his back was real, and it forced the Crown Prince to turn around immediately. What he saw terrified him greatly.

What he saw was a gigantic monster completely made from solid ice, and it had launched another powerful and extremely fast attack, just like before.

“What?!”

The Crown Prince cried out in shock. He couldn't believe what he was seeing, as he had just killed this monster with his golden halberd. However, not only was the monster no dead, it had appeared in front of him once again, and without any injuries! Although the Crown Prince was rich with extraordinary experience, he had never faced such a bizarre situation before, and he had never met such a weird monster either.

Roar!

The Ice Demon King let out a furious roar as it crashed down toward the Crown Prince like a gigantic ice mountain, attacking in a fearless manner.

“Ice Cage, trap him!”

Of course, Yan Chenyu wouldn't let go of this opportunity to combine attacks with the Ice Demon King. She immediately unleashed a white mist which then turned into an ice cage that enveloped the Crown Prince from above.

“You two are not fit to fight against me!”

The Crown Prince was extremely angry. He once more retrieved his golden halberd. The razor sharp halberd was like an invincible weapon, and it immediately destroyed the ice cage unleashed by Yan Chenyu.

Yan Chenyu's ice cage was a frightening skill, and even a Mid Combat Soul warrior would be trapped for it. However, the gap between herself and the Crown Prince was too big, so Yan Chenyu was no match for him. All she could do was disturb the Crown Prince, taking a supportive role while the Ice Demon King took the main role.

Although the Ice Demon King was not the Crown Prince's match either, it was an immortal existence, and if it kept resurrecting, the Crown Prince's state of mind would definitely be greatly distracted. Not only that, it would also consume the Crown Prince's combat strength, as he wasn't able to fight infinitely.

The Crown Prince swung his golden halberd, slicing the Ice Demon King in half once again. However, in the following second, another intact Ice Demon King appeared once again, just like the one that the Crown Prince had just killed. Its energy had not weakened at all, and it was no weaker than when it had first started fighting him.

“Damn it, am I fighting a ghost now?!”

The Crown Prince couldn't help but curse. Anyone would have cursed if they had to face this monster. No matter how formidable a person was, what could he do when faced with an immortal existence?

Boom!

Moments after the Ice Demon King appeared, the Crown Prince killed it once again with his golden halberd. However, the Ice Demon King's ability to resurrect was too powerful; it could appear immediately after being killed.

After being killed by the Crown Prince more than ten times, the Ice Demon King was still brimming with energy. It was simply an existence that couldn't be killed.”

“Fuck you!”

The Crown Prince cursed while gnashing his teeth. He felt like he was about to go nuts. He felt that even if this monster just stood there to let him kill it, he wouldn't have any ways of killing it. The Ice Demon King's ability to hide its demon soul and resurrect immediately when it was close to the Dark Ice Talisman was very terrifying, as not everyone had mastered the Great Soul Derivation skill, and not everyone were like Jiang Chen, a reincarnated Saint.

For a long time, Yan Chenyu and the Ice Demon King kept attacking, locking the Crown Prince down in a fight. The more he fought, the more depressed he became. Towards the end, he was simply yelling around, his mind greatly distressed. He was extremely pissed off. What could he possibly do to win this fight?

Faced with this duo, the best way for the Crown Prince to win was to first kill Yan Chenyu, and then find a way to kill the Ice Demon King. But of course, the Crown Prince wouldn't do that. This was the girl he had used a lot of effort to get, and he hadn't even been able to touch her hand, so how could he possibly kill her now?

The Crown Prince's mind was greatly distressed by the Ice Demon King's immortality. He had completely forgotten the fact that he could just capture Yan Chenyu and use her as his hostage. In fact, capturing Yan Chenyu was a piece of cake for the Crown Prince.

But too bad, the Crown Prince's mind was in a complete mess right now. He just kept fighting with the Ice Demon King, trying his best to completely kill this monster. Therefore, he didn't try thinking about other strategies. Little to his knowledge, if he kept fighting like this, he would eventually enter a disadvantageous position, because no matter how strong he was, his energy would deplete at some point of time, and this was the result Yan Chenyu was waiting for.

None of them had realized that a sneaky big yellow dog had appeared not far away from them, carrying an evil smile on its face.

“Jiejie, Little Yu has become more sinister after learning from us. She fooled the Crown Prince into following her here before fighting him. That monster is truly terrifying, it really can’t be killed at all. Compared to the Ninelife Crystal Beast in Inferno Hell, it is much more horrifying. I wonder how Little Chen made it surrender to him.”

Big Yellow murmured to himself. He had actually arrived quite some time ago, and he had seen the three fight for a while, but he had yet to do anything.

This was a clever dog. The reason why he hadn’t attacked yet was because he had yet to find a good timing. Big Yellow knew one thing; although he had just broken through to the Combat Soul realm, his combat strength was at most similar to Yan Chenyu’s. If he joined the fight, they still wouldn’t be able to defeat the Crown Prince.

Argh!!

The Crown Prince suddenly let out a furious roar. Using his golden halberd, he shattered the Ice Demon King once more and knocked Yan Chenyu more than 30 meters back.

“This is it!”

Big Yellow’s eyes lit up. He immediately unleashed his wings of light and dashed out with great speed. He had been waiting for this opportunity for a long time.

The Crown Prince who was greatly distressed had not expected a big yellow dog to suddenly jump out from hiding. As Big Yellow was flying toward him with incredible speed, when the Crown Prince finally noticed this uninvited guest, all he could see was a perfectly round dog butt covered with golden fur purposely shaking at him.

In the following moment, the Crown Prince felt as if the dog but suddenly double in size. After that, an extremely wicked sound entered his ears.

“Big Yellow’s Peerless Fart!”

Before these words had completely left his mouth, a thunderous sound immediately emerged from the perfectly round dog butt. It was even louder than the sound of thunder.

Boom!

Just this sound alone was enough to make someone deaf. However, the real frightening part was definitely not this sound, but the green air that shot out from the dog’s butt. That’s right, green air, or better, just a fart.

The green air shot out like a missile, instantly exploding around the Crown Prince, causing him to be completely covered with a green mist.

Everything happened so fast and so unexpectedly. Therefore, the distressed Crown Prince didn't even have the chance to respond. The green mist had hit him without much effort. With the Crown Prince's strength, if he was at top shape, he might have been able to dodge this attack. However, since Big Yellow had aimed for this perfect opportunity, he obviously wouldn't give the Crown Prince any time to react.

Therefore!

Blergh!

“What the fuck?! This f-blergh! Fuck y-blergh!”

The Crown Prince was completely furious, and his image as a Crown Prince was completely gone. He started vomiting out like crazy while cursing and yelling as much as he could. Although he tried running away from the green mist, it was just like a shadow that couldn't be escaped. No matter where the Crown Prince went, it just kept following him, and there was no way he could get rid of it.

“Wakaka...”

Big Yellow turned around and laughed into the sky, “How does this master dog's fart taste?”

Yan Chenyu stood next to Big Yellow with furrowed brows. Even though she stood far away from the Crown Prince, she was still

able to smell that foul odor. This dog's fart stank like hell, it wasn't difficult for her to imagine what kind of inhumane torture the Crown Prince was going through right now!

“Puppy dog, you...”

Yan Chenyu was overwhelmed. Only now did she remember that Big Yellow had told her about his newly awakened innate ability after breaking through to the Combat Soul realm. During that time, she only felt that the way Big Yellow told her about it was pretty obscene, and now she finally understood; this innate ability couldn't be described as obscene at all.

Big Yellow's Peerless Fart, just the name alone was enough to make anyone faint. Looking at the way the Crown Prince was being tortured, it wasn't difficult to tell how powerful this fart was.

“Bastard-bleergh! I-bleergh! Want to kill you... blergh...”

The Crown Prince felt like he was going to go nuts soon. He never knew there was an existence underneath the heavens that could let out such a heavenly defying fart.

“ARGH!! GO AWAY!!”

The Crown Prince couldn't take it any longer. With all his effort, he finally managed to get rid of the green mist. However, he wasn't in a good shape right now, as he was breathing rapidly, and both his eyes had turned red.

“Let’s attack, don’t give him any chance to recover!”

Big Yellow shouted out. Without having to be informed by him, the Ice Demon king had already arrived in front of the Crown Prince. It used its gigantic fist to deliver a punch straight onto the Crown Prince’s chest.

Crack!

The Crown Prince had just used up all his strength to get rid of Big Yellow’s fart, causing him to fall into a defenseless state. There was no way he could withstand the Ice Demon King’s heavy blow. Blood instantly shot out from his mouth, and his body was like a kite with no string as he was sent flying uncontrollably.

Swoosh!

Yan Chenyu immediately chased up. In her hand there was another icy sword made from solid ice. Without heisting, he simply slashed it toward the Crown Prince’s crotch.

Puchi!

The razor sharp icy sword slashed through the Crown Prince’s crotch. He could only feel a shivering sensation before something very important to him fell off from his body. Blood instantly burst out from his wound, smearing his pants red.

As if the Crown Prince had noticed something, he instantly let out a miserable blood-curdling shriek. It was a man's most important part, and if it was cut away, no matter how heavenly defying a pill was, there was no way he could grow it back.

The Crown Prince immediately yelled out crazily after fear and pain struck him. He knew he had been crippled, this was something that no man had could accept, and it had actually happened to him. How was he going to live his life in the future?

“Let's just kill him.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“Don't kill him, we have to spare his life. Lord Jiu is still staying at the Martial Palace, and if we kill the Crown Prince now, the Imperial Emperor will immediately explode with fury, and Wu Jiu will be the first one to face that disaster. Look at him, I'm sure him being in this state is a fate worse than death.”

Big Yellow said.

Chapter 423 – The Imperial Emperor's Fury

Near the border of the Southern Continent, a white figure could be seen streaking across the sky at an incredible speed. This white figure was none other than Jiang Chen who was currently rushing back to the Eastern Continent.

While streaking across the sky, Jiang Chen suddenly felt an emotional turmoil. This feeling was similar to the one he felt when he was killing Blood Devils back in Yellowstone.

“Damn it, I hate this feeling! I hope nothing bad is going on.”

Jiang Chen cursed. He then started using the Dimensional Shift at its full power, instantly doubling his speed. It would take him at least two weeks in order to return to the Eastern Continent, provided he wasn't delayed by anything along his journey. A journey like this where he did nothing but fly forward at maximum speed was really boring, so Jiang Chen simply retrieved the third broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword.

“Whenever I forge a broken part with the Heavenly Saint Sword, its strength will increase significantly. I have now found three of them, and perhaps I'll only be able to find the last four in the Divine Continent. I'll now forge all three of them together, that will give the Heavenly Saint Sword the strength of a King Weapon, more than enough for me to fight some ordinary King Weapon.

Jiang Chen thought to himself. He was very confident in the Heavenly Saint Sword. Furthermore, after obtaining this third

broken part, he now had the ability to produce Nine Solar Holy Water whenever he wanted.

The material that was used to produce the Heavenly Saint Sword was extremely powerful, therefore it was very difficult to forge it together. However, Jiang Chen was different. He was the master of the Heavenly Saint Sword, and his life was connected to its very source. Also, not only did he possess the True Dragon Flame, he also had the Heavenly Thunder Flame. With the combination of these two flames, the strength he could utilize was unimaginable. With the help of his two flames and Great Soul Derivation skill, forging the Heavenly Saint Sword was just a piece of cake.

While Jiang Chen was simultaneously rushing back and forging the Heavenly Saint Sword, a storm had erupted in the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Within the Martial Saint Dynasty's main palace, the Imperial Emperor was looking at the Crown Prince who was laying on the floor with a vicious expression. The Crown Prince was unconscious, and his precious thing had been cut off. This was a deadly injury for any man. Although the Crown Prince was a Late Combat Soul warrior, he was still unable to withstand this severe pain, and combined with the great insult and fury he felt, he had fainted on the spot.

Within the main palace, a couple of emperors, as well as Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi were present. None of them dared breathe loudly. They were no idiots; they all knew the Imperial Emperor was at the brink of exploding with fury. Although he wasn't showing it on his face; now was not the time to

do anything that might provoke him.

“Tell me, who did this?”

The Imperial Emperor asked with an extremely cold voice, causing all those who heard it to feel as if they had been brought into a freezing cellar. It was the pressure of a Combat King warrior leaking out from his body that gave everyone that suffocating feeling. It was the huge gap between the Combat Soul realm and Combat King realm; a pressure that only a supreme existence could emit.

The Imperial Emperor was furious; there was no way he could remain calm! The Crown Prince had been castrated; this had never before happened in the Martial Saint Dynasty. The Crown Prince was to be the next Imperial Emperor, but he had now been castrated. And, things weren't as simple as that. This was a heavy blow to the Imperial Emperor's face; a huge challenge to the entire Martial Saint Dynasty.

And aside from this, the Crown Prince was the Imperial Emperor's own son; he was a son the Imperial Emperor was very proud of. If not for this, the Imperial Emperor wouldn't have made him the Crown Prince. Now, the Imperial Emperor very own son had been castrated by someone. As a father, it wasn't difficult to imagine how angry he was.

A Late Combat Soul Golden Guard suddenly kneeled down on the floor and spoke with a trembling voice, “Imperial Emperor, when I found the Crown Prince, he was still conscious, and he said that it was Yan Chenyu who did this to him.”

“I thought that Yan Chenyu was only an Early Combat Soul warrior? How could she possibly have hurt the Crown Prince?!”

The Imperial Emperor’s voice became louder and louder as he spoke

“I have no idea; that’s what the Crown Prince told me before he fainted.”

The Golden Guard told truthfully.

“Imperial Emperor, this is a huge insult to the Imperial Sovereignty, we can’t let this matter off the hook so easily!”

The Seventh Emperor took a step forward and said loudly.

“Imperial Emperor, I’m sure this has something to do with Wu Jiu! When the Crown Prince went to the Martial Palace to announce the Imperial Decree today, Wu Jiu tore the Imperial Decree in front of everyone, completely ignored the Imperial Emperor’s Imperial Sovereignty! That Yan Chenyu even conspired with Wu Jiu and assaulted the Crown Prince! Perhaps Wu Jiu was behind the Crown Prince’s injury! I suggest the Imperial Emperor passes down an Imperial Decree to capture Wu Jiu and all the others who are related to Jiang Chen, and then punish all of them with a death sentence, especially that Yan Chenyu!”

The Tenth Emperor said with a vicious expression.

Although Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi only showed indifferent expressions, they were laughing with great joy inwardly. They never thought things would develop to this stage! The Crown Prince had been castrated, and with that, no one would be able to escape! The Imperial Emperor would definitely not forget about this matter. This result was much better than the one they wanted.

“Wu Jiu, I have treated you nicely, I never thought you’d conspire with an outsider to hurt your own family!”

The Imperial Emperor clenched his fists tightly until cracking sounds could be heard. After that, he turned to everyone and said, “Announce my Imperial Decree; proceed to the Martial Palace and capture Wu Jiu, Yan Chenyu, and all others related to them! Take all of them down, and if they fight back; kill them on the spot!”

“Understood, Imperial Emperor!”

Everyone cupped their fist toward the Imperial Emperor and left the main palace. This time, all the emperors and Late Combat Soul Golden Guards set off together. The Imperial Emperor was clearly serious this time.

After all these people left, the Imperial looked at the Crown Prince who was laying on the floor. Killing intent started leaking from his body, “How dare you do this?! I’m going to kill you all!”

Martial Palace.

It was late in the afternoon. The storm brought by the earlier incident had yet to settle down, the entire Martial Palace was still in a restless state. Everyone were discussing what happened, and what would happen. However, they knew one thing for sure; their Palace Chief was done for!

The Martial Palace belonged to the Martial Saint Dynasty, and it wasn't owned by any individual. Therefore, although Wu Jiu was the Palace Chief, everything in the Martial Palace was in fact still under the Martial Saint Dynasty's control. In other words, all the geniuses cultivating here were being prepared for the future of the Martial Saint Dynasty. It didn't really matter who the Palace Chief. Wu Jiu had been missing for ten years, so there weren't many people here who were loyal to him. As for those younger generation geniuses, all of them dreamt about becoming one of the Golden Guards. Therefore, they weren't really concerned about whether or not Wu Jiu died.

Tearing the Imperial Decree was a serious offense. Even if the Crown Prince had let Wu Jiu off the hook, the Imperial Emperor would not let this matter go so easily.

Within the depths of the Martial Palace, Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye stood side by side, as if they were waiting for something. Of course, they still didn't know that the Crown Prince had been castrated.

“Xuan Ye, do you think the Imperial Emperor will punish me?”

Wu Jiu asked. He did still consider the Imperial Emperor his

brother, the same brother as the one he had given up his chance to enter the Island of Ice many years ago for.

Xuan Ye shook his head and said nothing. A bystander was able to view a situation with a clear mind. Xuan Ye was no idiot, and he believe that Jiang Chen was right. Furthermore, as the supreme ruler of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Imperial Emperor did not wish for anyone to leave any negative marks in his period of life.

“I’ll just wait here. Let’s see what the Imperial Emperor is going to do to me.”

A smile emerged on Wu Jiu’s face, “I just hope Little Yu can escape from that dangerous situation.”

“Don’t worry! Little Yu is not a reckless girl, I’m sure she’ll find a way to escape.”

Xuan Ye said.

Right after Xuan Ye finished speaking, dozens of powerful auras suddenly appeared from a distance. Those powerful auras quickly arrived in the sky above the Martial Palace. All of them were unleashing their formidable energy; they were all Late Combat Soul warrior. Those among them who wore golden robes all belonged to the upper echelons of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and they sat at the top in terms of status and position. These people were all the emperors, brothers of the Imperial Emperor!

“Let’s go.”

Seeing this, Wu Jiu started flying toward those men. Xuan Ye quickly followed after him. Xuan Ye’s heart had sunk to the bottom; he never expected to face such a grand scene. Furthermore, these men clearly came here with bad intentions.

“Do as the Imperial Decree says; arrest Wu Jiu!”

When one of the emperors saw Wu Jiu, he immediately shouted out.

Right after his words escaped his mouth, all the other men immediately moved. They surrounded Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye, trapping them and preparing to strike.

“Hold on.”

Wu Jiu was still calm and composed, and no signs of panicking could be seen. “Is this what the Imperial Emperor wants?”

“Of course! Wu Jiu, you’ve committed a terrible crime! The Imperial Emperor can no longer tolerate your actions! This is the Imperial Decree personally passed down by the Imperial Emperor; we’re here to arrest you!”

The Seventh Emperor said with a loud voice.

“Good, good! You don’t have to do it, I’ll surrender by myself.”

Wu Jiu let out a loud laughter, a laughter filled with sorrow.

“Wu Jiu; that is your best option. Let me ask you; where are Yan Chenyu and her friends?”

The Tenth Emperor asked.

“It was me who tore the Imperial Decree, it had nothing to do with them.”

Wu Jiu said.

“Nothing to do with them? What a joke! Looks like you still have no idea what is going on. Let me tell you what happened. Yan Chenyu launched a sneak attack at the Crown Prince, and with a cruel approach she castrated him. Right now, he lay unconscious in the main palace! Not only are they involved directly in this matter, more people will be involved soon as well! This is an offense that will result in all their family members being killed! Wu Jiu, hurry up and hand them over to us!”

The Seventh Emperor said.

“What?!”

Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye cried out in shock at the same time. They

now understood why the Imperial Emperor was angry enough to send so many mighty warriors to the Martial Palace; the Crown Prince had actually been castrated by Yan Chenyu.

Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye couldn't help but tremble. Who would have thought that a young girl like Yan Chenyu was decisive enough to cut off the Crown Prince's penis? Not only that, how did she even manage to do it?

Of course, how Yan Chenyu managed to do those things was not important anymore. What happens next was the important question. Wu Jiu clearly understood the importance of the Crown Prince. It was just like the Seventh Emperor had said; Yan Chenyu's actions would drag many people into a terrible heap of trouble.

Chapter 424 – Guilty By Association

“That girl is extremely impulsive. This time we’re going to have to face serious consequences.”

Wu Jiu couldn’t help but let out a long sigh.

“Lord Jiu, why are you still defending the Dynasty? In fact, even if Little Yu didn’t hurt the Crown Prince, the situation we’re facing right now would still be unavoidable. The Imperial Emperor wants to get rid of you, and since the Crown Prince can’t get Yan Chenyu, he will definitely be crazy about it. The Seventh Emperor, Shangguan Clan, and Myriad Sword Sect are determined to kill Jiang Chen. In the end, none of us were able to escape their evil plan. Therefore, in my opinion, even if Yan Chenyu killed the Crown Prince directly, the consequences would still be the same, and this was all in Jiang Chen’s prediction. The only thing different is that they came much faster than he had expected.

Xuan Ye said after letting out a long sigh. Although he was part of the Martial Saint Dynasty, he didn’t work directly underneath the Dynasty itself. He would only follow Wu Jiu for his entire life. Since the Imperial Emperor was going to stand against Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye’s impression toward the Martial Saint Dynasty had sunk to the bottom.

“Wu Jiu, don’t waste our time, hurry up and hand over all those related to this event! That includes your son, Wu Lang! He has to follow us to the Martial Saint Palace and receive the Imperial Emperor’s punishment!”

The Tenth Emperor said with a loud voice.

“All of them have left, I’m the only person you’re looking for who is still staying in the Martial Palace.”

Wu Jiu said, showing no signs of fearing the situation on his face.

“What?! They’ve escaped?”

The third emperor who hadn’t yet said anything suddenly scolded.

“Hmph! Search every inch of the Martial Palace and find them! If they fight back, kill them on the spot!”

The Seventh Emperor coldly harrumphed. Right after he finished speaking, Shangguan Sheng, Tiangang Yi and the others immediately started flying toward the Martial Palace. A few of the emperors also started searching for the people they were seeking. They didn’t believe Wu Jiu.

Seeing the situation, Wu Jiu suddenly felt that Yan Chenyu had made a wise decision earlier today. Her actions gave Han Yan and the others enough time to run away from this place. If she hadn’t done that, none of them would have been able to escape.

Wu Jiu’s face was covered with indifference. He believed that with Han Yan and the others’ abilities, they would have already found a hiding place where no one would be able to find them.

These people searching for them in the Martial Palace were simply just wasting their time.

It didn't take much time for these Late Combat Soul warriors to search every inch of the Martial Palace. When they returned, one could easily tell from their expressions that they hadn't found anything.

“They’ve escaped from here.”

Shangguan Sheng said.

“Hmph! This continent is ruled by the Martial Saint Dynasty, there is no way they can run away from us! Let’s go, we’ll bring Wu Jiu back for now.”

The Third Emperor coldly harrumphed. He then started flying toward the Martial Saint Palace with all his men, as well as Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye following.

“Oh heavens, did you guys hear that? The Crown Prince has been castrated by Yan Chenyu! Is this for real?”

“It was mentioned by the emperors, so I’m sure it really happened! I never expected that weak and gentle looking Yan Chenyu to actually be such a fierce girl!”

“The question is; how did she do it? The Crown Prince is the commander of the Golden Guards, and he’s a Late Combat Soul

warrior! With Yan Chenyu's strength, even if it was a sneak attack, I can't see how she could have possibly done it. This is really strange."

"The Palace Chief is done for. Something so serious has happened to the Crown Prince, I'm certain the Imperial Emperor is furious right now. All those people who are related to Jiang Chen will be dragged in this matter as well. This is too frightening, I'm lucky I'm not friends with any of them."

.....

Martial Saint Palace!

When Wu Jiu was brought to the palace, the Crown Prince had already awakened and was sitting on a rattan chair. Although he still looked to be in great pain, he had overall recovered a lot. The Crown Prince was after all a Late Combat Soul warrior, and although he had now become a eunuch, his ability to recover was still not something those ordinary people could compare with. The main reason why he fainted previously was because he felt humiliated.

Even at this point of time, the Crown Prince was still unable to accept the fact that he had been castrated. Whenever he felt pain coming from his crotch, he would immediately roar out furiously then gnash his teeth in anger as both his eyes turned red. When he saw Wu Jiu, he felt a strong desire to leap forward and bite him.

Seeing the Crown Prince's miserable state, even Wu Jiu couldn't

help but feel a bit of pain. No man could withstand this kind of injury, let alone the Crown Prince.

“Imperial Emperor, we’ve brought Wu Jiu here, but all the others have escaped.”

The Third Emperor said.

“Imperial Emperor, I’m sure Wu Jiu planned all of this a long time ago, that’s the reason why they had time to escape!”

The Seventh Emperor said in a vicious manner.

“All of you must go find that bitch Yan Chenyu for me! I want to peel her skin off while she’s still alive!”

The Crown Prince was extremely agitated. Unconsciously, his voice had actually become sharp and high pitched, lacking the manner of a man. As if having sensed the transformation of his voice, the Crown Prince started trembling. This was an insult, the greatest insult a man could suffer!

“Old Jiu, you’ve disappointed me.”

The Imperial Emperor turned to Wu Jiu and said with a cold and eerie voice.

“What is the Imperial Emperor’s plan for me?”

Wu Jiu asked.

“You have torn the Imperial Decree and conspired with our enemies to hurt the Crown Prince! Each one of these crimes is a capital offense! However, I won’t be killing you now, I’ll imprison you in the Heavenly Jail and focus my time on those damned people!”

The Imperial Emperor said.

Being imprisoned in the Heavenly Jail seemed like nothing, but Wu Jiu could clearly see a killing intent in the Imperial Emperor’s eyes. He knew that the Imperial Emperor would kill him sooner or later.

“Issue an arrest warrant; find that Yan Chenyu and her friends! Anyone who are related to her will have all their family members slaughtered; no survivors left behind!”

Word by word, the Imperial Emperor passed down his orders. His words immediately caused Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye’s expressions to change dramatically. They never thought the Imperial Emperor would approach this matter in such a vicious manner.

“Imperial Emperor, I am the one who did all of this! If you want to kill someone, please kill me now! This matter has nothing to do with them!”

Wu Jiu hastily said. This wasn't a joke! Too many innocent people would die because of this order! Anyone who were related to Yan Chenyu, Jiang Chen, and the others would be killed. The punishment wasn't just focused on them, but all their family members.

If this order was truly passed down, the Black Sect would be the first to face this disaster. Even the Jiang family and Yan family on the other side of Mount Origin, as well as all those related to them would be dragged into this matter.

What's even worse, the familiar of Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and all the others would all be involved in this as well! This was how serious the order was! Too many innocent people would be dragged into this matter, and the consequences were unimaginable!

“You'll face your death soon enough.”

The Imperial Emperor glared at Wu Jiu and said. After that, he turned to the others who stood within the palace, “Old Third, Old Forth, Old Seventh, Old Ten, Shangguan Sheng, Tiangang Yi; I'll let all of you handles this matter. I want the family members of all those related to this incident dead; I want no survivor!”

The Imperial Emperor had never been this angry before. Even Yan Chenyu hadn't expected this to happen; her castrating the Crown Prince bringing such serious consequences.

Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye staggered and felt dizzy. Now, they had no

ability to stop this. With the Imperial Decree passed down by the Imperial Emperor; many innocent lives would be sacrificed, and blood would flow like rivers. It was really difficult to imagine how Jiang Chen would react when he returned and found out about this.

“Understood, Imperial Emperor.”

The emperors accepted the order while cupping their fists toward the Imperial Emperor.

“Imperial Emperor, I don’t think this is the right decision.”

Tiangang Yi said.

“En?”

The Imperial Emperor furrowed his brows. He was in a really bad mood right now, so Tiangang Yi’s doubt regarding his decision made him angry.

“Please don’t get angry, Imperial Emperor. Yan Chenyu has committed a terrible crime, and she has to face the punishments you’ve announced! However, Imperial Emperor, you’ve forgotten one man; Jiang Chen.”

Without delaying, Tiangang Yi quickly elaborated.

“Jiang Chen?”

The Imperial Emperor’s eyes trembled. It wasn’t until now that he finally recalled that miraculous young man.

“That’s right, Jiang Chen. That guy has extraordinary potential, and I’ve never met anyone like him in my entire life. All those people we’re about to kill are related to him. Now, Jiang Chen is nowhere to be found. In my opinion, we should put the punishment on hold temporarily and just keep all those people in captivity. We’ll use them to lure Jiang Chen out of hiding and let none of them escape. If we kill all of them in one go, Jiang Chen will definitely be very enraged. If he just hides somewhere for a couple of years and return for revenge once he has obtained a mighty cultivation, perhaps he will bring a catastrophe to the entire Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Shangguan Sheng added. What these people were most worried about was naturally Jiang Chen.

Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi’s words caused Wu Jiu to silently let out a sigh of relief. As long as they didn’t kill everyone now, there would still be chances to save these people once Jiang Chen returned. He would definitely find a way to save them! Wu Jiu was very confident in Jiang Chen. This little brother of his was capable of creating countless miracles; it seemed like there was nothing he couldn’t achieve. If Jiang Chen was here, he wouldn’t let such a tragedy play out.”

The Imperial Emperor furrowed his brows. If it was any other man, he wouldn’t even have bothered to think twice. However,

since the man was Jiang Chen, he would definitely have to take it into consideration. He had personally witnessed how amazing Jiang Chen was! With just a Divine Core cultivation, Jiang Chen had been able to seal the Dimensional Crack. He knew no one other than Jiang Chen capable of such a feat. A young seventeen year old man at the Peak Divine Core realm with the combat strength to kill Mid Combat Soul geniuses, this kind of talent, even the Imperial Emperor was far from being able to compare to him when he was at the same age.

If he had to get rid of a genius like this, he would have to do it as early as possible. Therefore, Tiangang Yi and Shangguan Sheng's words made sense to him. If they killed everyone now, Jiang Chen would definitely go into hiding and return after a couple of years when he had obtained a mighty cultivation. At that point of time, perhaps no one in the Martial Saint Dynasty would have the ability to defeat that abnormal genius, and he might really bring a catastrophe to the Martial Saint Dynasty.

As long as they didn't kill those important to him, Jiang Chen would definitely show himself upon learning about this, and then they would be able to take him down and eliminated the huge potential future threat.

“Imperial Emperor, what Clan Chief Shangguan and Sect Chief Tiangang said is correct. We need to think twice before we act; that Jiang Chen is a real threat to us.”

The Seventh Emperor said.

“If that is the case, just do as you suggested. Keep everyone that

are related to this in captivity, and spread news in order to lure Jiang Chen out.

After spending some time thinking, the Imperial Emperor finally made up his mind.

“Find that bitch Yan Chenyu and give her to me! That damned dog as well!”

The Crown Prince furiously roared out. Every time he recalled that damn dog, he felt like he was about to go nuts.

Chapter 425 – The Black Sect's Crisis

It had been a long time since the Martial Saint Dynasty had made such a huge move. This time, the Imperial Emperor was greatly infuriated. Not only had he sent out all the emperors, he had also dispatched the entire army of Golden Guards, and the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were also helping. Without any doubts, the entire Eastern Continent would be in a huge turmoil.

Right now, all the upper echelons of the Martial Saint Dynasty had gathered together. They were having a meeting.

“The Imperial Emperor has never been so infuriated before, and he has never given out orders to slaughter someone's entire family. This time, we can't let anyone related escape!”

The Third Emperor said.

“But we aren't clear about Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu's backgrounds, and those who are related to them. I only know that Jiang Chen was once part of the Black Sect. Let's spend two days finding out the backgrounds of all these people, but we have to do it discreetly. We will commence the operation once we've cleared everything; no one is to escape from this warrant!”

The Seventh Emperor said.

“What Seventh Emperor said is right. I think we should start from the Black Sect. Let our Shangguan Clan handle this. Within two days, I will come back with all details about them, and none

shall be spared from their fates.”

Shangguan Sheng promised the group.

“Alright, we’ll let you do the hard work for now.”

The Third Emperor nodded his head toward Shangguan Sheng.

.....

Midnight!

Yan Chenyu and Big Yellow finally regrouped with Han Yan and the others.

“Wahaha, what a pleasant day! I don’t think the Crown Prince can be considered a man any longer!”

When Big Yellow saw the group, he immediately burst into laughter.

“Big Yellow, what happened?”

Han Yan asked. Everyone felt relieved upon finding out that Yan Chenyu and Big Yellow were safe.

“Little Yu has done something really fierce! She cut that Crown

Prince's little friend right off, so he can no longer be considered a man!"

Big Yellow said.

"What the fuck?! So brutal! I never knew Little Yu was such a person; you really know how to hide your true colors!"

Han Yan opened his eyes widely and stared at Yan Chenyu as if he was looking at a different person.

"So you think I'm just a weak and gentle girl?"

Yan Chenyu gazed at Han Yan and said.

"Of course not! Little Yu is on her way to become a heroine!"

Yu Zihan said with a smile on his face.

"However, that Crown Prince has suffered a serious injury and humiliation, I'm sure the Imperial Emperor won't be happy with this matter. Lord Jiu is going to face serious consequences."

Guan Yiyun said as he furrowed his brows.

"I just hope my dad won't have to face any life threatening situations."

Wu Lang said with a gloomy expression.

“This matter has become extremely huge now. I don’t think Little Chen will be back any time soon, so what should we do now?”

Tian Yishan asked. With their current strength, even though they had escaped from the Martial Palace, they had no idea where to go next.

“Before Jiang Chen returns, we should find some place to hide ourselves. The most dangerous place is usually the safest place. I suggest we split into different groups and hide in different cities around the Martial Saint Dynasty. With this, we can ensure our safety. I’m certain the Martial Saint Dynasty won’t expect us to hide near them. Secondly, we can receive the latest news while hiding near them, we’ll be able to learn what the Imperial Emperor’s next step is. Also, we can’t just leave this place while still uncertain about what situation Lord Jiu is facing.”

Big Yellow suggested. Little to their knowledge, the consequences of what they had done were much more serious than they imagined.

“What Big Yellow said is correct. The most dangerous place is usually the safest place. The Crown Prince has been castrated, and none of us can away from this. Our best option right now is to hide ourselves and wait for Little Chen to return, after that we can discuss how we’re going to rescue Lord Jiu.”

Han Yan nodded his head, agreeing with Big Yellow's suggestion.

"But if we stay together, we'll easily be spotted by them."

Yu Zihan said.

"We'll split up. Big Yellow, Brother Yan, Prince Wu Lang, and I will go our own ways, as we're their biggest targets. We're all Combat Soul warriors and we possess great combat strength, so even if we bump into a bad situation, we'll still be able to handle it by ourselves. Senior disciple Guan, senior disciple Tian, Zihan, you three will be in a group so you can watch each other's backs. You're not their primary targets, so with a slight disguise, I don't think anyone will be able to recognize you."

Yan Chenyu said. After having followed Jiang Chen for so long, she had learned how to face any emergency with calmness. Since Jiang Chen was not with them right now, Yan Chenyu's abilities had started to shine. How she had handled the situation with the Crown Prince proved this. The once naïve girl had become mature.

"Alright, we'll use this plan for now."

Everyone nodded their heads. They all agreed that Yan Chenyu's decision was the best for now.

After that, the group split into five smaller groups and proceeded in different directions.

Two days later, Shangguan Sheng returned once again to the Third Emperor's mansion. With these two days, all news had been confined. Shangguan Sheng had acted in secret, so Han Yan and the others didn't receive any news about this incident.

"Clan Chief Shangguan, did you find out anything about our targets?"

The Third Emperor asked.

"I've found out everything about them. These are the people who came to the Martial Palace: Jiang Chen, Yan Chenyu, Han Yan, Guan Yiyun, Tian Yishan, and Yu Zihan. These are the people Wu Jiu brought here. Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu both came from the other side of Mount Origin. Jiang Chen is from the Fragrant Sky City, a city near the Red City region, and is the City Lord's son. His father's name is Jiang Zhenhai. As for Yan Chenyu, she is the beloved daughter of the Red City's Yan family, and her father's name is Yan Zhanyun. Yu Zihan came from the Yellowstone region in the Qi Province. The Yu family is considered the rulers of the Yellowstone region. I've also found out about Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan's families. Once we commence our operation, none of these people are going to escape."

It was worth mentioning that Shangguan Sheng's ability to gather information was superb. He had nearly dug out the roots of all these people, having gathered every single detail about their families.

“Good! Let’s move now; we’ll capture them all and put them in jail.”

The Third Emperor stood up from his seat and said.

“However, all these people are scattered around, and there are simply too many people involved. It’s not an easy task to gather all of them together. Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu’s hometown is really far away from here. Even if we go there at full speed, it will still take us at least one day to arrive. And, bringing them to the Martial Saint Dynasty will be extremely troublesome as well.”

The Seventh Emperor said.

“We don’t have to do that. The Imperial Emperor’s order is to use them to lure Jiang Chen out and then kill them all. Their only purpose right now is to lure Jiang Chen out, that’s why we’re temporarily sparing their lives. In my opinion, we should split into different groups and imprison these people separately. I think this will give us even better results. If Jiang Chen shows himself and tries finding out what is going on, he’ll get a headache trying to save them all.”

The Tenth Emperor said.

“Alright, let’s assign our tasks now. We can send two Late Combat Soul warriors to each place, and they will bring a group of Golden Guards and warriors from the Martial Saint Dynasty. We have to imprison all people related to him and let no one escape. If they fight back, we’ll kill them on the spot. With this, no matter

where Jiang Chen shows himself, he'll only face certain death.

The Third Emperor immediately made up his mind.

“That's right. No matter how talented Jiang Chen is, he's still just a Divine Core warrior! If he dares show up, he will only meet certain death when faced with two Late Combat Soul warriors! Not only Jiang Chen; Yan Chenyu and all the other escapees might get lured out as well. At that point of time, we'll be able to capture them all.”

Tiangang Yi said, a sinister expression visible on his face. The Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan's hatred for Jiang Chen was deep as the abyss. The revenge they had been waiting for was finally here, and they were extremely joyful.

“I don't think we have to go all out to deal with those small fries.”

The Fourth Emperor who had been quiet all this time shook his head, showing his indifference toward this operation.

“I'll assign tasks now. Clan Chief Shangguan, Sect Chief Tiangang, the Qi Province is where Jiang Chen came from. You two superpowers will control those people there who are related to him.”

The Third Emperor turned to Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi.

“Rest assured, Third Emperor. We guarantee you we’ll complete our mission!”

Both men cupped their fists toward the Third Emperor, then they turned around and left. Not only did these two men represent themselves; they were two superpowers; the mammoths of the Jian Province! A casual fart from them would be enough to shatter the entire Qi Province! If it was under normal circumstances, none of these two superpowers would waste their time and effort to handle this tiny Qi Province.

However, in order to lure Jiang Chen out, as well as the Imperial Emperor’s order; they had to handle this matter with an utmost serious attitude. They were also perfectly happy to carry out this mission.

“Old Seven and Old Ten, you will proceed to Mount Origin together with the Deputy Commander of the Golden Guards. You will seize control of the Jiang family and Yan Family. As for the rest of the people, prepare yourselves for the right moment.”

The Third Emperor said.

“Alright.”

The Seventh Emperor, Tenth Emperor and the Deputy Commander of the Golden Guards turned around and left toward Mount Origin at once. Even with their speed, it would take them at least one day to reach Mount Origin.

Late in the afternoon – Black Sect!

The Black Sect had shifted location to the Yellowstone region. After taking control of the Qi Province, the Black Sect had become the ultimate superpower in this place; the leader of all powers. No one in the Qi Province dared disobey their orders.

Following the expansion of the Black Sect, more and more people joined them and became their disciples. Daoist Black had also broken through to the Combat Soul realm, causing the Qi Province to no longer be the lowest ranked province in the entire Eastern Continent.

The people of Redsun Town had also benefited a lot from this. The entire town was protected by the Black Sect, and all the youngsters had unconditionally become disciples of the Black Sect. All of this was because that white-clothed youngster. In the center of the Black Sect, there stood a huge statue of Jiang Chen.

The Black Sect didn't see any peaceful times since Jiang Chen had joined them, but after he left, although the amount of disciples had increased by a lot, the entire sect had become a lot quieter.

Before nightfall, explosive sounds suddenly echoed out across the sky above the Black Sect. After that, many powerful auras began descending from above. Strong wind was blowing in the sky, and everyone could feel a tremendous pressure from above them that caused them to pant heavily.

“What happened? What's going on?!”

Someone cried out in shock. Many disciples left their rooms and looked into the sky that was filled with fierce tornados.

Chapter 426 – Doomsday Has Arrived

“Such powerful energy! Why did these powerful people come to the Black Sect?”

“Why can I sense dangerous auras? I don’t think these people came here with friendly intentions!”

“Something serious is going to happen.”

No one from the Black Sect were able to remain calm. Everyone walked out from where they were and looked into the sky above them.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

All of the Divine Core warriors in the Black Sect flew out from where they were as well, joined by some Heavenly Core geniuses and sect elders. The two leading men were Daoist Black and Alchemist Guo Shan. Everyone had pale expressions, as no one had any idea what the purpose of this storm was.

“Sect Chief, what is this exactly?”

Someone asked. When that person first looked into the sky, he saw countless tornados swirling around, causing his expression to turn ugly.

“So many mighty warriors, I’ve never seen so many of them at the same time!”

A solemn expression emerged on Daoist Black’s face. He was easily able to tell that all those mighty warriors who arrived here were humans.

Soon, the tornados disappeared, and a group of more than a hundred people were revealed floating above the Black Sect. Each one of these persons were glowing brightly, as they were unleashing their Yuan energy, causing the dark sky to look like it belonged to daytime.

Beneath the dark sky, it was destined that tonight would be a night of violence.

The hundred men group was led by two men with very powerful auras, and only Daoist Black was capable of sensing that. Both these men were Late Combat Soul warriors, and behind them were over thirty Divine Core warriors. The rest were all Heavenly Core warriors.

Haa!

Even just the two Combat Soul warriors were enough to make Daoist Black gasp, because just one of these two Combat Soul warriors was more than enough to annihilate the Black Sect.

Perhaps only the three strongest provinces of the Eastern

Continent had Late Combat Soul warriors. As for those two in front of him, no matter their attitude or the manner they portrayed, they looked like someone who sat in high places. They were clearly no ordinary warriors.

“Listen up everyone from the Black Sect! I am the Shangguan Clan Chief from the Jian Province, and this man behind me is the Myriad Sword Sect Chief from the Jian Province as well; Tiangang Yi! The disciples of the Black Sect; Jiang Chen, Yan Chenyu, Han Yan, Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan have committed a capital offense, and the Martial Saint Dynasty’s Imperial Emperor has declared his Imperial Decree! Those who are related to these people will be punished with a death sentence! From now on, everyone in the Black Sect are criminals, and you’ll be put in captivity immediately!”

Shangguan Sheng said with a loud voice. Each word was like a clap of thunder that echoed throughout the entire Black Sect, causing everyone to be able to hear him loud and clear. His words immediately struck the Black Sect with panic.

“How could this happen? The two mammoths of the Jian Province actually came here personally? The Black Sect is finished!”

“Oh heavens, what did Jiang Chen do?! Not only did he offend the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, he actually offended the Martial Saint Dynasty! His offense was so great that all those related to him has to be killed! What should we do? Do we really want to get involved in this?”

“What an unexpected disaster! Done for, this time we’re completely done for! If I had known this beforehand, I wouldn’t have joined the Black Sect!”

“Bullshit! Without senior disciple, the Black Sect would have been long gone! If any one of you who joined the Black Sect late dare say anything bad about senior disciple Jiang again, I will be the first one to kill you!”

.....

The faces of all the disciples from the Black Sect had turned extremely ugly. They were instantly filled with despair. They all knew about the hatred between Jiang Chen and the two mammoths of the Jian Province. However, Jiang Chen had withdrawn from the Black Sect, so why were they still getting involved in this?

Daoist Black and Guo Shan were terrified as well. They had not expected anything like this to happen. The Black Sect had been propelling towards prosperity, so why would this unexpected disaster strike them?

But with their knowledge about Jiang Chen, they knew Shangguan Sheng wasn’t lying, as this young man was an existence who dared to do anything.

“Why do you want to drag the Black Sect into this matter? Jiang Chen has withdrawn from the Black Sect; what he did has nothing to do with us!”

A young and impetuous Heavenly Core warrior stood out and asked with a loud voice.

“Hmph!”

Tiangang Yi coldly harrumphed, then threw his razor sharp glance over to the young man who had just spoken. He casually waved his hand, unleashing a bright beam that instantly pierced the young man’s body.

Argh!

The young man let out a miserable shriek, then fell down from the sky, dead.

“Lock up the entire Black Sect and capture every single person! If anyone dares fight back, kill them on the spot!”

Tiangang Yi cruelly gave out his order. Without hesitating, the hundred men behind him immediately began their mission.

The combined force of the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect was a catastrophe for any sects and clans in the Eastern Continent, with the exception of the Martial Saint Dynasty.

In fact, it wasn’t necessary for both mammoths to be present here in order to accomplish their task. The reason they came here

was because of Jiang Chen. They knew very well how strong Jiang Chen was. As long as Jiang Chen showed up, only Late Combat Soul warriors would have the ability to take him down.

“Why?! Why is this happening?!”

“This is too unfair!”

.....

All disciples of the Black Sect started crying and yelling. Some tried to fight back, but they were immediately killed on the spot. No mercy was shown in this mission.

“Everyone listen up! Do not fight back!”

Daoist Black circulated his Yuan energy and shouted out loud. The enemy appeared in an imposing manner, and they clearly did not want to show any mercy. Those who dared fight back would have to face certain death, but if they didn’t fight back, they could at least keep their lives for now.

The Black Sect simply did not possess the strength to fight either of the two mammoths, let alone both of them.

Sorrow and complaints filled the entire place; it was a gray night for the Black Sect. None of them knew how they should deal with this situation; there was simply no way for them to fight back. Compared to the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, they

were just some tiny ants. These ferocious enemies could crush them whenever they wanted.

“You are Daoist Black?”

Shangguan Sheng turned to Daoist Black and asked.

“That’s right, I am. Whether you want to torture me or kill me, do as you please.”

Daoist Black said with an extremely indifferent expression. If it was under normal circumstance, he would have to bow and greet Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi upon seeing them, and express his awe. But now, he wouldn’t do that. These guys were here to kill him, so did he still have to be polite to his enemies?

“Killing you is very simple, but I’ll let you stay alive for a few more days. Who is Guo Shan?”

Shangguan Sheng asked with a sneer on his face. Shangguan Sheng had obviously found out about every single person who were close to Jiang Chen. In the Black Sect, Guo Shan was the one with the closest relationship with Jiang Chen, and Shangguan Sheng would definitely not let this guy off easily.

“I, your father am Guo Shan!”

Guo Shan’s attitude was even more arrogant than Daoist Black’s. There were many was for a man to die, but if the death was

because one was friends with Jiang Chen, Guo Shan would have nothing to complain about; he wouldn't even furrow his brows.

“Keep these two in solitary confinement! We'll wait for Jiang Chen to come here to rescue them.”

Tiangang Yi said in a cold manner.

Daoist Black and Guo Shan's eyes lit up after hearing what he said. Judging from his words, it seemed like the reason they came here to imprison them was because they couldn't find Jiang Chen, and their primary objective was to lure Jiang Chen out. Since that was the case, the Black Sect might still have hope, because Jiang Chen himself was a huge variable; an extremely frightening one! Jiang Chen's enemies had never met good endings!

“Hahaha! The day Jiang Chen shows up is your final day spent alive!”

Daoist Black burst into laughter.

“You're seeking death!”

Shangguan Sheng was startled for a moment, then he simply struck his palm against Daoist Black's chest with tremendous force.

Pu!

Daoist Black sustained a severe blow, causing a mouthful of blood to immediately burst out from his mouth. His entire body was shaking as if he was about to fall over at any moment. Guo Shan who stood on the side immediately moved forward and supported him with his arm.

“This is just a small punishment! Don’t talk so much trash in front of me; that Jiang Chen is nothing, if he dares show up; I’ll make sure he dies without a proper burial ground!”

Shangguan Sheng said in a mocking manner.

Daoist Black had suffered a bad injury. When he tried to say something else, Guo Shan immediately stopped him. There was a saying; a wise man knew better than to fight when the odds were against him. Since they were the hostages now, it would be better for them to just keep low. Although scolding these enemies would make them feel better; it just couldn’t change anything.

In less than an hour, the Myriad Sword Sect and Shangguan Clan had gained complete control over the Black Sect. From the outer circle disciple to the Divine Core Sect Elders; every single one of them was imprisoned, while Daoist Black and Guo Shan were in solitary confinement.

Neither of the superpowers took anyone from the Black Sect seriously. They were treating these people as if they were slaves. If anyone dared disobey their instructions; they would give that person a round of beating, and if anyone dared fight back; they

would kill that person on the spot, never showing any mercy.

This was doomsday in the eyes of all those from the Black Sect. Only that white-clothed youngster was capable of changing their ill fates.

At the same time!

Two Combat Soul warriors from the Shangguan Clan brought a group of men and arrived at the Yu family in the Yellowstone region. The entire Yu family was struck with the same fate as those from the Black Sect, and every single person in their family was imprisoned, including those ordinary servants.

The same thing happened to Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan's family. All of them were put under the control of the Martial Saint Dynasty. In just a single night, a drastic change had occurred in the Qi Province. The supreme Black Sect had now become prisoners, and many people were dragged into this incident. The Imperial Emperor's punishment was extremely ruthless; it simply dragged too many innocent people into this. At this moment, the land was filled with grief and sorrow, and the people of the Qi Province were in a state of anxiety.

Around noon on the second day, a large group of uninvited guests suddenly appeared on Mount Origin. The Seventh Emperor, Tenth Emperor, and Deputy Commander of the Golden Guards, Yuan Long; three Late Combat Soul warriors, as well as dozens of Golden Guards were flying toward the Red City region.

They had actually deployed such a frightening force just to deal with the Jiang family and Yan family. This was a typical example of killing a chicken with the butcher's knife. However, this ferocious force wasn't really meant for the Jiang family or the Yan family, but for Jiang Chen.

“Yuan Long, bring thirty Golden Guards to the Red City and capture all the people of the Yan family! Bring them to the Fragrant Sky City and imprison them with the Jiang family!”

The Seventh Emperor told Yuan Long.

“Yes, Seventh Emperor.”

After Yuan Long received the order, he brought thirty Golden Guards with him and started flying toward the Red City. In the Seventh Emperor's mind, there wasn't any powerful families in this remote land. Therefore, it wasn't necessary to imprison them separately.

“Seventh brother, let's proceed to the Fragrant Sky City now. Once we've taken Jiang Chen's hometown under our control, Jiang Chen won't have ability to fight us!”

The Tenth Emperor said with a sinister smile on his face, as if he had already pictured Jiang Chen's death.

Chapter 427 – The Uproar

Fragrant Sky City, Jiang family!

Since the crisis with the Dimensional Creature, many cities in this region were still being rebuilt, including Fragrant Sky City. As the ultimate leaders of all the people in this region, the Jiang family had contributed a lot. During this period of time, the Jiang family had brought people out from aftershock. Many cities were nearly fully rebuilt, and the Fragrant Sky City was that one that took the least amount of time to recover. Most of their buildings had been repaired or rebuilt, causing it to look much more luxurious than before.

As inhabitants of the Fragrant Sky City, everyone was grateful toward the Jiang family. All of these people felt thankful toward the Jiang family's young master who was capable of achieving anything. For these people, the Jiang family had given them a new life; their lives had been saved by them. All these people represented the prosperity of the Jiang family, at least in this region. Jiang Chen had a great reputation, and the Jiang family chief, Jiang Zhenhai, he had become like a local emperor to these people.

Everything in the Jiang family was as usual. Jiang Zhenhai was cultivation the Profound Origin skill, as noon was the perfect time to cultivate this skill. He was now sitting quietly in his courtyard, circulating the Profound Origin skill and absorbing pure Yang energy from the sky.

Boom!

Suddenly, a strong wind appeared, and powerful energies swept across the quiet sky. Numerous golden beams appeared in the sky, and soon, a few dozen formidable figures were revealed in the sky above the Jiang family.

Jiang Zhenhai immediately woke up from his cultivation upon sensing the tremendous pressure coming from the sky. The pressure was so powerful that he was forced to pant heavily. He opened his eyes and threw his glance over to those uninvited guests in the sky.

“What powerful auras!”

Jiang Zhenhai’s expression changed dramatically. Although he was a mighty Divine Core warrior, but when he sensed the auras of these people, he felt that even if he fought them with all his strength, he would still get crushed by them as if he was a tiny ant. He just didn’t have any ability to defend himself from them.

These mighty warriors were considered rare existences even in the eyes of some of the strongest provinces in the Eastern Continent, let alone this Red City region. Because of Mount Origin, this region was like an isolated land. Those clans and sects on the other side of Mount Origin would never put their hands on this place. So, why did so many mighty warriors come to the Jiang family today?

But Jiang Zhenhai was no idiot. He knew that with his ability, there was absolutely no way for him to attract so many mighty

warriors to the Jiang family. Only his son, Jiang Chen had this ability.

Faced with this situation, Jiang Zhenhai showed no signs of panicking. Regardless of what the intentions of these people were, as long as it was related to his son, he wouldn't show any fear.

“Listen up, people of the Jiang family! Jiang Chen has offended the Martial Saint Dynasty and committed a capital offense! The Imperial Emperor has given an Imperial Decree to kill all members of the Jiang family because of this! Therefore, every single member of the Jiang family will be imprisoned at once! If any one of you dares fight back, you'll be killed on the spot!”

The Seventh Emperor's words were like a clap of thunder that kept rocking in the sky. As the people here were relatively weaker than those in the Black Sect, none of them had ever seen a Combat Soul warrior before, let alone a Late Combat Soul warrior like the Seventh Emperor. Some of the weaker people nearly fainted upon hearing the voice.

The Jiang family was instantly struck with panic. This group of unexpected enemies and news had caught them off guard. The Martial Saint Dynasty, what kind of powerful existence was that? They had never even heard of it before. However, they did learn one thing from the Seventh Emperor's words; their mischievous young master had offended the Martial Saint Dynasty, a very formidable enemy, bringing a huge crisis to the Jiang family. All of them were going to die because of that.

“We're finished! A huge disaster has struck the once prosperous

Jiang family! These guys are too strong; I can feel that with a glance from that guy, I'll die immediately! We're all going to die!"

"Don't be afraid. Our lives were saved by young master Jiang Chen, and if we have to face death because of young master... well, just consider it us paying our lives back to him."

"That's right. Without young master, all of us would have been killed by those foul monsters! If we calculate like this, we've earned a few more days to live because of him; worth it!"

.....

The people of the Jiang family had the most united spirits. Even when faced with this terrible crisis, it only brought a short moment of restlessness upon them. Once they learned it was because of Jiang Chen, they all accepted their fates with heroic and helpless expressions on their faces. None of them were crying or yelling because of this disaster.

Witnessing the calm attitudes of those from the Jiang family, even the Seventh Emperor, Tenth Emperor, and all those Golden Guards were surprised. In their minds, these people in front of them were the lowest ranked civilians; the true mortals. They should be crying their lungs out after finding out that they would be killed because of what Jiang Chen did; be immersed in despair and even kneel down to beg for forgiveness. Instead, they kept their peaceful manner. This odd situation caused their sense of accomplishment to instantly disappear.

These people didn't know Jiang Chen's status and reputation in the Jiang family, or even in the entire Fragrant Sky City. All people here had been on the brink of death, and they were only still alive because of Jiang Chen. Some of them had even lost family members during the crisis. Because of that, these survivors had a calm attitude toward death, and since this crisis was because of Jiang Chen, they had nothing to complain about.

“Who is Jiang Zhenhai?”

The Seventh Emperor shouted.

Jiang Zhenhai calmly walked out from his courtyard and came to an empty field. With both hands placed behind his back, he raised his head to look at those mighty warriors. Without any signs of being afraid on his face, he said, “I am.”

“Hmph! Jiang Zhenhai, why are you not kneeling down after seeing us Lord Emperors?”

The Seventh Emperor coldly harrumphed. In his mind, Jiang Zhenhai was just a small-fry, a tiny ant. However, this tiny ant had actually refused to kneel down before him; this was something he couldn't accept.

“Kneel down? Even if I agreed, my son wouldn't allow me to do it! You guys can't defeat my son, so you actually use such a despicable method to attack his family instead! As mighty warriors of this generation; do you feel no shame?”

Jiang Zhenhai said with a sneer on his face. He was a wise man, and from what the Seventh Emperor had said, he knew they were here to imprison the Jiang family because they couldn't find Jiang Chen. If they really wanted to slaughter all his family, they would have started slaughtering them after arriving, without talking so much trash. Furthermore, if they really wanted to annihilate a small family like the Jiang family, why would they send so many strong warriors here? The reason they didn't kill anyone just now and wanted to imprison them instead was clearly because they wanted to lure Jiang Chen out.

“Bastard!”

The Tenth Emperor became extremely angry and prepared to attack Jiang Zhenhai, but the Seventh Emperor immediately stopped him. Jiang Zhenhai was their most important hostage, and if they accidentally killed him, they would have lost one of their biggest bargaining chips.

After hearing what Jiang Zhenhai said, the Seventh Emperor and Tenth Emperor's faces became pale. His words were correct; using Jiang Chen's family to threaten him when they couldn't find him was extremely shameful. However, since Jiang Chen was a man with huge potential, and he was nowhere to be found, they had no choice but to use this shameful method.

“Kill me now if you dare! I'm sure my son will avenge me!”

Jiang Zhenhai said in an imposing manner, portraying the attitude of a true man. As a father, no matter how big of a hole Jiang Chen poked in the sky; he would try his best to patch it up

for him. Even if he was unable to do so, he would not make his son feel ashamed of him. He could withstand any consequences that were related to Jiang Chen, even at the cost of his own life.

“I never expected you to be such a tough man! Don’t worry, Jiang Chen will definitely show himself! At that point of time, I’ll let you both regroup and enter hell together! Golden Guards, imprison them all at once!”

The Seventh Emperor ordered.

For these formidable Golden Guards, a small clan like the Jiang family were unable to withstand even a single blow from them. In just a couple of minutes, they imprisoned every single one of them.

“What are you looking at?! Are you seeking death?!”

A Golden Guard noticed a servant of the Jiang family was looking at him, so he simply slapped that servant’s face.

Clasp!

When the slap landed on the servant’s face, the head instantly exploded.

“Damn it, so weak.”

The Golden Guard cursed in a bored manner.

“Looks like I can’t beat these people as I wish. Any casual blow from me will instantly kill them.”

Another Golden Guard murmured. What happened caused the faces of all servants to turn pale. These enemies were too strong; any one of them could easily kill them all, and there was no way they could defend themselves.

Not long after the Jiang family was imprisoned, Deputy Commander Yuan Long came to the Fragrant Sky City with all the members of the Yan family and put both families together. The people of the Yan family clearly knew the root of this crisis, and since it was because of Yan Chenyu, there was nothing they could complain about. Yan Chenyu was their Yan family’s precious daughter. Therefore, they were willing to accept any punishment because of what she had done.

Within the Jiang family’s main hall, Jiang Zhenhai met with Yan Zhanyun. These two most important people were kept in captivity together. They exchanged glances and smiled at the same time.

“Brother Yan, do you have any regrets?”

Jiang Zhenhai asked.

“Why would I? Having a daughter and son-in-law like those are my greatest pride! Even if I were to die now, I would still be smiling in the underworld!”

Yan Zhanyun faced the situation with no fear at all.

“Seventh brother, these two men are the most important persons. In my opinion, we should ask Yuan Long to bring them to the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

The Tenth Emperor said.

“Alright. Yuan Long, you’ll bring these two men to the Martial Saint Dynasty and imprison them there.”

The Seventh Emperor told Yuan Long.

“Understood.”

Yuan Long cupped his fist toward both emperors, then he waved his sleeve and disappeared from the scene together with Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun.

Three days later, the Martial Saint Dynasty suddenly announced some news. The Imperial Emperor had personally ordered that all people associated with Jiang Chen, Yan Chenyu, and their friends would face a death sentence. Everyone in the Black Sect had been imprisoned, as well as the families of all the others. There was another piece of special news as well; Jiang Chen’s hometown on the other side of the Mount Origin had been imprisoned as well.

These news instantly brought a huge storm to the entire Eastern Continent.

“Oh heavens, all their family members and friends are to be slaughtered to punish them?! What did Jiang Chen do this time? Why is the Imperial Emperor so angry?”

“So cruel! This is the first time the Martial Saint Dynasty has given an Imperial Decree to slaughter all the family members and friends of someone!”

“They say slaughter, but they just imprisoned all of them without killing them. It looks like they don’t know where Jiang Chen is; I think their motive is to lure Jiang Chen out.”

Chapter 428 – Fury Of The King (Part 1)

The news spread with incredible speed, as if someone was purposely controlling it from the back. In just a single day, the news spread across the entire Eastern Continent. It had become a huge sensation that everyone were talking about. Jiang Chen had been enjoying a widespread reputation long before this, and with the latest incident, he had once again been put in the teeth of the storm.

Within the city closest to the Martial Palace, Yu Zihan and the other two were furious upon learning the latest development.

“Slaughtering my entire family and all my friends?! Fuck! The Imperial Emperor is actually using such a ruthless tactic! My entire family has been imprisoned by them, I need to save them!”

Yu Zihan’s eyes had already turned red.

“My family is facing the same situation as yours! I wonder how they’re doing right now. A man must bear the consequences for his own actions, and as the ultimate ruler of this land, how could the Imperial Emperor involves our families in this matter?! This is ridiculous!”

Guan Yiyun clenched his fist so tightly that cracking sounds could be heard. He was greatly distressed upon learning these news, and couldn’t keep calm any longer.

“Damn it! Let’s go back and deal with them! If my family gets

killed because of me, I won't be able to rest in peace even after I die!"

Although Tian Yishan had previously always been calm, he had also become furious now. No one could remain calm when faced with this situation; knowing that their family had been imprisoned and about to be slaughtered. It was like a sharp blade constantly cutting their hearts.

"Senior disciple Tian, senior disciple Guan; let's work together and save our families!"

Yu Zihan said.

"Alright. Even if it's a dragon's pond or a tiger's cave; we'll still face it! If anything bad happens to my father; I'll never forgive myself!"

Guan Yiyun strengthened his spirit.

"Damn it! If they want my head; I only have one! If they want my life; I also only have one! Let's fight them!"

Tian Yishan gnashed his teeth as he spoke. The trio made up their minds in just a short moment, and were about to head out to save their families back in the Qi Province. There were always times where people would make impulsive decisions in their lives. These three men had been completely consumed by their fury and impulsive minds, so it was really difficult for them to think

logically. None of them knew exactly what the situation in the Qi Province was like right now, and with their cultivations, if they really went to the Qi Province to try and save their families; they were basically guaranteed to fail.

Right as the trio was about to leave, two figures suddenly entered their secret courtyard. These two men were none other than Wu Lang and Han Yan.

“Are you crazy?! You’re seeking death!”

Han Yan immediately scolded them. He had obviously heard their conversation just now.

“Senior disciple Han, my family is being imprisoned right now, do you think I can still sit here and do nothing?”

Yu Zihan asked.

“Do you guys even know what the current situation in the Qi Province is like? Do you know who imprisoned the Black Sect?”

Han Yan continued scolding them with a loud voice. He and Wu Lang were hiding in the Imperial Capital before this, and as a prince himself, Wu Lang still had some trustworthy subordinates in the Imperial Capital. Therefore, the news he received were much more accurate than those that were floating around on the outside.

“Guys, take it easy. It’s the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect who are controlling the Qi Province now. Both of them have combined forces to completely control the Black Sect and your families. According to the information I’ve received, the Imperial Emperor is furious this time, and he truly plans on killing all related friends and family. Therefore, there are at least two Late Combat Soul warriors at each location, and the one who controls the Qi Province is the Myriad Sword Sect Chief and Shangguan Clan Chief, Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi. They’ve teamed up in attempt to lure Jiang Chen out to face them. I know how you guys are feeling right now, because I feel the same way. My dad is imprisoned in the Heavenly Jail, and I have no idea what his situation is like. This time, we need to be patient.”

Wu Lang said.

“Senior disciple Tian, senior disciple Guan, Zihan, this is clearly a trap set by the Martial Saint Dynasty. With our strength, if we face them, not only will we not be able to save our families, we will be caught by them as well.”

Han Yan said.

After hearing what the two men said, the trio finally calmed down from their impulsive states. Although they were still panicking, they knew that Han Yan and Wu Lang’s words were true. With their current cultivation, going to the Qi Province would be no different than throwing their lives away.

“Brother Yan, what should we do now? We can’t just keep hiding like this, right?”

Guan Yiyun asked. Since Jiang Chen wasn't around, Han Yan had become their leader.

“Wait, we need to wait for Little Chen.”

Han Yan said in a serious manner.

“Han Yan is right. You guys should know this; when the Imperial Decree saying that our families and friends are to be slaughtered was passed down, it means that all people associated with us are to be killed with no survivors left behind. But now, they've only imprisoned them, and haven't killed them. What does this tell us? It simply means that the Imperial Emperor is worried about Jiang Chen taking revenge in the future. The reason why they haven't started killing them yet is because they want to lure Jiang Chen out and kill them all at once. Everyone has seen how frightening Jiang Chen is, including the Imperial Emperor himself. If the Imperial Emperor simply slaughtered his entire family and all his friends at once, he's scared Jiang Chen might hide himself for a couple of years before showing, and when Jiang Chen shows up, the Martial Saint Dynasty will meet its biggest crisis yet. Therefore, they won't slaughter his friends or the families of his friends before he shows up. Their main goal is to eliminate this huge potential future threat; they want to kill the abnormal genius.”

Wu Lang stopped for a moment before continuing, “Furthermore, with the current situation that we are facing now and with our strength, do we have any other options than to wait for Jiang Chen to return?”

“That’s right, they are afraid of elder brother Jiang’s revenge, that’s why they’ve just imprisoned our families and not killed them yet. If we strike now, we’ll fall right into their trap.”

Yu Zihan nodded his head. He had finally recovered from his impulsive state.

“Agreed! We were too impulsive just now.”

Tian Yishan nodded his head as well.

“But, our enemy this time is the Martial Saint Dynasty; they are simply too powerful. Junior disciple Jiang has created many miracles, and I just hope he can do it again. If not, I just can’t imagine what kind of consequences we’ll have to face. Too many people have been dragged into this matter.”

Guan Yiyun said. Right now, Jiang Chen was their only hope. No matter what, it was still better than having nothing to hope for. Furthermore, they had been following Jiang Chen for quite some time, and it seemed like underneath this heaven, there was nothing Jiang Chen couldn’t achieve. All those people who had chosen to become Jiang Chen’s enemies had all faced miserable endings.

“Of course, we can’t just sit here and do nothing; we need to proceed to the Qi Province now. At least, we can find out more about the current situation there. We need to be extra careful when we arrived in the Qi Province; we can’t let them find us.”

Han Yan suggested.

“Well, finding out about the current situation is better than doing nothing. How about this; you proceed to the Qi Province while I continue hiding in the Imperial Capital. If any more news appears, I’ll inform you at once.”

Wu Lang said.

“Alright. Brother Wu, we’ll see you later!”

Han Yan cupped his fist toward Wu Lang. After that, he brought the trio with him and started sneaking their way toward the Qi Province.

“I wonder what Little Yu and Big Yellow will do upon finding out about this.”

While rushing toward the Qi Province, Yu Zihan said in a worried manner.

“I was thinking the same. I believe the Yan family has been imprisoned as well. I just hope Little Yu doesn’t do anything silly.”

Guan Yiyun said.

“Don’t worry. Little Yu is no longer the same Little Yu that we

knew, she has learned to face any crisis with a calm mind. If my guess is correct, Little Yu and Big Yellow are on their way to Mount Origin right now, or they're already there. She and Big Yellow both have strong cultivations, so they shouldn't face any trouble."

Han Yan said. As long as Yan Chenyu was with Big Yellow, nothing bad would happen to her.

"Sigh... I wonder when elder brother Jiang will return?"

Yu Zihan let out a long sigh.

"Hmph! The day Little Chen returns is the day doomsday arrives for those evil guys! They dare touch Little Chen's family and friends; they're simply just courting death!"

Han Yan coldly harrumphed. He knew Jiang Chen very well, and he knew that the Imperial Emperor had touched Jiang Chen reverse dragon scale. It was a terrible mistake that could never be forgiven, and with Jiang Chen's approach, it wasn't difficult to imagine what kind of consequences they would have to face.

One day later, Yan Chenyu and Big Yellow secretly arrived at Mount Origin without alerting anyone. Yan Chenyu's face was covered with a somber expression. After learning that the Yan family and Jiang family had been imprisoned, she had barely been able to remain calm.

"No way, I have to save them! I can't let anything bad happen to

either Yan family or the Jiang family! The Yan family was dragged into this matter because of me; I have to save them no matter what, and I also have to protect the Jiang family! If anything bad happens to father-in-law, Chen Gege's fury will definitely sweep across the entire Eastern Continent!"

Yan Chenyu was extremely agitated, as her own family's life was at risk.

"After everything the Imperial Emperor has done, it doesn't matter if anything bad happens to Jiang Chen's father or not; his fury will rain down upon the entire Eastern Continent no matter what! Little Yu, I know you can't wait to save them, and I know you have the Ice Demon King to help you. However, before we do anything, we should gather more information about our enemies! There are no one around here, so you just wait for me here while I go and gather some information about the Jiang family and Yan family. After that, we'll continue our discussion."

Big Yellow said.

"It's better that way. But, Big Yellow, be careful!"

Yan Chenyu nodded her head. She knew that launching a reckless attack without knowing anything about their enemies would bring serious consequences. When she and Big Yellow heard the news, they immediately rushed over here and didn't meet up with Wu Lang. That's why they had no idea who the enemies here were.

Big Yellow was an amazing and unpredictable being. Yan Chenyu was confident in him spying on the enemy situation.

“Don’t worry! If this master dog wants to hide; even a Combat King warrior won’t be able to find me!”

Big Yellow wiggled his head with a confident expression. After that, he simply disappeared.

Yan Chenyu threw her glance into the sky, and with tears in her eyes, she murmured, “Chen Gege, when are you coming back?”

In a different location, Jiang Chen who had been rushing continuously for seven days, as if he had just heard Yan Chenyu’s calling, his calm heart suddenly trembled.

“Something must have happened.”

Jiang Chen’s mind instantly became somber. During his journey during the past few days, he had felt an uneasy feeling in his mind. For the once greatest Saint underneath the heavens, it was rare to feel this way, and now it had just happened again, even stronger than the previous time. This all gave Jiang Chen a really bad feeling.

“I don’t care who you are! Those who dare hurt my friends and family; prepare yourselves for my fury!”

Two cold and bright beams shot out from Jiang Chen’s eyes. He

took out the Heavenly Saint Sword and stood on top of it, once again giving him a huge boost in speed.

Chapter 429 – Fury Of The King (Part 2)

After forging the third broken piece, the Heavenly Saint Sword's power had increased to a whole other level. Although it was constrained by Jiang Chen's cultivation base and was still classified as a Superior Weapon, it was capable of unleash more than enough power to compare with King Weapons.

With help from the Heavenly Saint Sword, Jiang Chen's speed had once again increased by a lot. He wanted to rush back as soon as possible, so he was using all the skills that could help him increase his speed, including the Dimensional Shift and Nine Phantom Wolves skills. With his current speed, it would only take him another four days to arrive at the Eastern Continent.

Eastern Continent, Mount Origin.

Big Yellow returned and regrouped with Yan Chenyu after two hours.

“Big Yellow, what's the situation like?”

Yan Chenyu asked.

“It's really bad. They've brought everyone from the Yan family to Fragrant Sky City and imprisoned them together with the Jiang men. Also, the men leading this mission is the Seventh Emperor and Tenth Emperor, as well as a few dozen Golden Guards. With our strength, it is absolutely impossible for us to save these people, and even if we somehow did manage to save them, we would have

nowhere to run.”

Big Yellow’s words made sense. With his and Yan Chenyu’s strength, not only were they unable to defeat the Seventh and Tenth Emperor, even if they did and then managed to save all those imprisoned, they would have no place to run, and the ones they saved would only serve as burdens.

“They actually sent such a powerful force to handle the Jiang family and Yan family, it looks like their primary target is Chen Gege.”

Yan Chenyu was no idiot; she immediately understood the point behind this. If they really wanted to just handle the Jiang family and Yan family, a single Golden Guard was more than enough to slaughter every single person from both families. However, they had sent two emperors to such a remote place. They were obviously aiming at Jiang Chen.

“Oh right, how is my father and father-in-law’s conditions?”

Yan Chen Yu asked.

Her question caused Big Yellow to furrow his brows, but he still told her the truth, “I believe they aren’t in any life threatening situations, but they aren’t in any good situations either. They’ve been brought to the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

It was worth mentioning that Big Yellow’s ability to gather

information was superb. Within just two hours, he had learned all the details about the current situation, and he did it underneath the nose of two Late Combat Soul warriors without being noticed. Just this ability alone was enough to overwhelm anyone.

“What?!”

Yan Chenyu’s expression instantly changed. Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun were brought and imprisoned in the Martial Saint Dynasty. It looked like the Martial Saint Dynasty were planning on using them as their last resort.

Yan Chenyu managed to calm down after expressing her worry. A cold light flickered in her eyes, and with a solemn expression she said, “I hope they’ll be alright. It looks like we can only wait for Chen Gege to return now.”

“Little Yu; how about we do it like this; you just keep hiding here and pay close attention to the situation in the Fragrant Sky City, while I’ll start flying to the Southern Continent. If I bump into Jiang Chen along the way, I’ll inform him about what’s going on here.”

Big Yellow said.

“Alright, you be careful.”

Yan Chenyu nodded her head. They were facing a critical situation now, and only Jiang Chen’s return could turn the whole

situation around. With their strength, they were simply unable to make any changes.

Big Yellow then left and started rushing toward the Southern Continent. The situation was considered somewhat stable right now. Before Jiang Chen shows himself, the imprisoned people should be safe.

Big Yellow was flying at an incredible speed. On the other side, Jiang Chen who stood on top of the Heavenly Saint Sword was flying at an even greater speed. He didn't hide his aura, so all the demons who wanted to stop him trembled in fear and lost all courage to try anything.

Two days later!

Jiang Chen was still flying at an incredible speed. Then, he suddenly saw a golden beam flashing in the far distance. The golden beam was flying in the direction of the Southern Continent, and when Jiang Chen saw this golden beam, his eyes immediately lit up.

“Big Yellow!”

Jiang Chen was very familiar with Big Yellow, so he was easily able to confirm that it was Big Yellow just from the outline of the figure. He immediately sent forth his Divine Sense.

Big Yellow hadn't noticed Jiang Chen before he received the

message, so when he received the message through Jiang Chen's Divine Sense, he immediately changed his course and flew toward Jiang Chen. The man and dog had finally regrouped.

“Buddy, you're finally back!”

Meeting with Jiang Chen again caused Big Yellow to feel very excited, especially when he saw that Jiang Chen had broken through to the Combat Soul realm. He had finally seen hope.

“Big Yellow, what has happened?”

Jiang Chen's face suddenly darkened. He knew Big Yellow well, and if something serious hadn't happened, this dog would never have talked in such a serious tone, and he wouldn't spend any effort to look for Jiang Chen in the Southern Continent.

“Something terrible happened. After you left, the Crown Prince appeared with evil intentions toward Little Yu, and the Imperial Emperor even declared an Imperial Decree that the two of them are to be married...”

Big Yellow went on to tell Jiang Chen everything that had happened while he wasn't around. The Imperial Emperor declaring an Imperial Decree telling Yan Chenyu to marry the Crown Prince, how Wu Jiu tore the Imperial Decree with his hands, how Yan Chenyu had castrated the Crown Prince, and eventually how the Imperial Emperor had become extremely furious and declared an Imperial Decree saying that all people related to Jiang Chen, Yan Chenyu and the rest are to be

slaughtered.

Boom!

Right after Big Yellow finished speaking, real flames of fury instantly burst out from Jiang Chen's body, and two visible cold beams shot out from his eyes, causing him to look extremely frightening.

“Slaughter all my friends and family?”

Jiang Chen then said with a fierce voice, “My family and friends; anyone that are related to me... if anything happens to them, I will let the Imperial Emperor taste my fury!”

Jiang Chen had had many enemies in his life. No matter what tricks those enemies used against him, he would still be able to accept them, even if it meant a bloody fight, he would still face it with his head held high. However, Jiang Chen really hated it when someone used his friends or family to threaten him. This had no doubts violated Jiang Chen's reverse dragon scale. Right at the moment Jiang Chen found out about what had happened, the Martial Saint Dynasty's fate had been determined.

“Too many innocent people have been dragged into this incident; we need to rush back as soon as possible. The reason the Imperial Emperor hasn't had them all killed yet is because he wants to lure you out. If you don't show yourself, I'm afraid they might resort to some other extreme measures.”

Big Yellow said in a worried manner.

“Let’s go.”

Without hesitating, Jiang Chen immediately increased his speed to his fastest. Big Yellow was also standing on the Heavenly Saint Sword. Jiang Chen’s heart was burning with anxiety at this moment. During the past few days, an uneasy feeling had been wandering around in his mind, causing him to feel as if something bad had happened. However, never thought it was something so terrible. All those people were imprisoned because of him, and Jiang Chen would never allow anyone who were related to him face anything bad, much less because of him. Not only that, Jiang Zhenhai was his father, and Jiang Chen couldn’t afford to lose him.

“Imperial Emperor, you better pray that no one has been hurt.”

Jiang Chen’s eyes flickered with coldness. He was like a profound king whose fury had just been ignited – the fury of the king!

With Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s current speed, they would need at least another two days before finally arriving in the Eastern Continent. Within this period, some new development took place in the Eastern Continent.

It had been more than ten days since those people who were related to Jiang Chen was imprisoned. However, the primary target, Jiang Chen had still now shown himself. Even Yan Chenyu and the others had yet to reveal themselves. This situation

infuriated the Martial Saint Dynasty, and even caused them to feel ashamed.

And new news came from the Fragrant Sky City yesterday. The Seventh and Tenth Emperor were going to use a new cruel tactic; they would kill one person every day until Jiang Chen showed himself. Today, an important alchemist of the Jiang family was beheaded in front of everyone, and his head was hung high up on the city wall.

Around noon the next day, one more day before Jiang Chen's return, in the sky outside Fragrant Sky City, three Golden Guards surrounded a young man who was wearing the clothing of an ordinary guard. This young man wore a calm expression; showing no fear.

Many people of the Fragrant Sky City had gathered around underneath this group of people and were watching the scene closely. All of them were gnashing their teeth in anger, as they had yesterday witnessed an alchemist of the Jiang family being beheaded without being able to do anything about it. The people of the Fragrant Sky City felt like they owed the Jiang family a great debt of gratitude, and now, having to watch the people of the Jiang family being killed one after the other caused them to feel gloomier and gloomier.

“These butchers will definitely get what they deserve!”

“Damn it! Jiang Cheng has helped me a lot, but now he's going to die! Watching this makes me furious!”

“I just hope young master Jiang Chen can return as soon as possible.”

Many people faced this extremely cruel and brutal scene with tears covering their faces.

The man who was surrounded by three Golden Guards was none other than the Jiang family's current housekeeper, Jiang Cheng, who carried a big weight in the Jiang family.

“I heard that you and Jiang Chen have a good relationship. Do you think Jiang Chen will come back and rescue you now?”

A Golden Guard looked at Jiang Cheng with a sneer on his face.

“Cut the bullshit! I'm willing to die for young master without any regrets!”

Jiang Chen spoke in a manly manner. He was once a man who cared about nothing else but saving his own skin. In fact, he was still afraid of death. However, since these people wanted to kill him because of his young master, he had no regrets.

“You can be considered a real man. Since that's the case, I'll send you to hell now.”

Another Golden Guard slowly drew out a huge shiny blade and

placed it on Jiang Cheng's neck.

“Is there anything you want to say before we kill you?”

The Golden Guard asked.

“Haha! My, Jiang Cheng's death is nothing worth mentioning! Young master, in my next life, I'll still want to serve you! Come, give your grandpa a quick death!”

Jiang Cheng laughed out loudly, showing no signs of being afraid. Faced with the cold blade, he didn't even frown.

The Golden Guard shook his head, then applied force to his hand and prepared to swing the blade. After this strike landed, Jiang Cheng's head would no longer be connected to his neck.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, the sound of an object flying through the air was heard. An ice-cold beam was unleashed from afar and hit the blade.

Clang!

The blade was instantly knocked away. The three Golden Guards were terrified, and quickly turned to the direction where it came from. What they saw was a young girl who looked like a fairy.

Jiang Cheng could also see the person who just saved his life, but not only was he not happy, he felt scared. Without hesitating, he shouted, “Young lady, don’t come here, leave quickly!”

The person who showed up was none other than Yan Chenyu. She had been hiding in Mount Origin all this time. After she learned that a new person would be killed in the Fragrant Sky City every day, she couldn’t help but come hide close to the city. When she saw that it was Jiang Cheng who was getting killed today, she immediately made up her mind to save him. She knew about the relationship between Jiang Chen and Jiang Cheng; although they had a master and servant relationship, Jiang Cheng had always been loyal to Jiang Chen.

Chapter 430 – Mighty Return

Yan Chenyu didn't know if she would be able to save Jiang Cheng's life, but she felt like she had to at least show herself. She couldn't just watch those people close to Jiang Chen die in front of her without doing anything. Even if it was just to make herself feel better, she still had to try her best.

Even if it was just an act of seeking death, so what?

Who could remain completely calm when watching their closest getting killed?

“Yan Chenyu!”

When one of the Golden Guards saw this girl, not only did he not feel afraid, he was actually feeling joyful. It looked like the Seventh Emperor's method worked like they had expected. This was only the second day, and they had lured Yan Chenyu here.

“Young lady, quickly get away from here!”

Jiang Cheng was yelling with all his strength, but Yan Chenyu didn't listen to him. With incredible speed, she arrived near them. An ice-cold beam impaled a Golden Guard's head. However, before Yan Chenyu reached Jiang Cheng, three powerful auras suddenly appeared and approached Yan Chenyu.

“Yan Chenyu, what a surprise! I thought Jiang Chen would be

here and not you. Never mind that, the Crown Prince keeps asking us where you are.”

The Seventh Emperor said with a sneer on his face. The other two mighty warriors were the Tenth Emperor and Yuan Long, who had just returned from the Martial Saint Dynasty. All three of them were Late Combat Soul warriors.

Yan Chenyu’s face darkened. The executions were obviously a trap, and with her abilities, there was no way she could save Jiang Cheng now, as she just didn’t have the ability to fight three Late Combat Soul warriors.

“You’re the emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and you actually used such despicable methods and slaughtered ordinary civilians! I really wish to know where you’ve placed all your face! Since I dared show myself here today, I’m not afraid of you!”

Yan Chenyu said with a cold voice.

“Hmph! Since you’re here, don’t even think about leaving! Don’t worry, we won’t kill you. Your life belongs to the Crown Prince!”

The Seventh Emperor coldly harrumphed.

“Let’s make a deal; I’ll stay back, but you have to let Jiang Cheng go.”

Yan Chenyu still spoke with the same indifference.

“Young lady.”

Jiang Cheng immediately burst into tears. He couldn't hold his emotions any longer. As a man, he wouldn't easily shed tears. He didn't even frown when faced with the razor sharp blade just now. However, Yan Chenyu's words immediately caused him to cry his lungs out. He was just a mere servant; a slave! His life was worthless, so how could he let his young lady sacrifice herself in order to save his life?

“Young lady, because of your words, I, Jiang Cheng will die smiling! Help me inform young master; Jiang Cheng died without any regrets!”

An aggressive look suddenly flickered in Jiang Cheng's eyes. He lowered his head and looked at the razor sharp blade placed on his throat by another Golden Guard. Without hesitating, he pushed himself toward it with great speed.

Puchi!

The blade was extremely sharp, and immediately slashed through half of Jiang Cheng's throat, causing blood to shoot out like a fountain.

The Golden Guard was terrified. He next expected this guy to have such incredible courage; using this kind of method to end his own life.

“Jiang Cheng!”

Yan Chenyu’s trembled and let out a loud cry. Her eyes were instantly glistened with tears. After that, she turned around and started fleeing in a random direction. She would never forget Jiang Cheng’s last expression.

He died with a smile on his face!

He died without any regrets, he just wanted to let Yan Chenyu run away from here as soon as possible.

Yan Chenyu didn’t let Jiang Cheng down. Without hesitating, she immediately turned around and left. She had to make sure Jiang Cheng didn’t die for nothing.

“Where are you going?!”

The Seventh Emperor was the first one to respond. He quickly chase after Yan Chenyu.

Roar!

A monster made entirely from solid ice suddenly descended from the sky, blocking the Seventh Emperor.

“Die!”

The Seventh Emperor's palm shone with countless golden beams as he simply struck his palm toward the Ice Demon King.

Bang!

The Ice Demon King wasn't afraid of death. It immediately countered the attack with its gigantic fist. Although it was knocked back several dozen meters by the Seventh Emperor, it simply leapt right back toward the Seventh Emperor.

“What a powerful monster!”

The Seventh Emperor was startled for a moment. This monster was at the Late Combat Soul realm, and he had no idea how this monster appeared. The weird thing for him was that he was unable to detect this monster with his cultivation.

“Yuan Long, you stay here and guard this place. Old Tenth, you go and hunt Yan Chenyu down.”

The Seventh Emperor turned his head toward the other two men and said. Yan Chenyu had disappeared from their sights after being held back by the Ice Demon King.

“Alright!”

The Tenth Emperor unleashed his energy and chased into the

direction where Yan Chenyu had fled.

Seeing this, the Ice Demon King responded in a quick manner. It immediately ditched the Seventh Emperor and began chasing after the Tenth Emperor.

“Hmph! Stay here!”

The Seventh Emperor coldly harrumphed. He took out a razor sharp sword and swung it toward the Ice Demon King. The Ice Demon King didn’t even try to evade it, as it didn’t have any ways to defend itself, and was thus instantly sliced in half by the Seventh Emperor.

“Can’t even withstand a single blow from me.”

The Seventh Emperor said with a sneer on his face. However, before his smile disappeared, his face was completely frozen, because the monster he had just sliced in half had reappeared in front of the Tenth Emperor, preventing him from going further.

“What?! How can this be possible?!”

The Seventh and Tenth Emperor both cried out in shock at the same time. They were looking at the Ice Demon King as if they were looking at a ghost. A monster had resurrected itself immediately after being killed! This didn’t make any sense, even with these two emperor’s rich experience, this was the first time they had encountered such a weird situation.

The Tenth Emperor was struck with great shock, and the Ice Demon King wasn't planning on slowing down because of that. It was not afraid of death, as death was simpler than eating to it. Without hesitating, it threw its gigantic fist toward the Tenth Emperor.

When the Ice Demon King launched its attack toward the Tenth Emperor, the Seventh Emperor immediately chased into the direction where Yan Chenyu had disappeared into. However, the Ice Demon King quickly responded. It immediately gave up on the Tenth Emperor and caught up with the Seventh Emperor. Like this, the Ice Demon King held back both emperors, while getting killed several dozen times doing so. After it was killed for the last time, it simply never appeared again.

The emperors grouped together and chased after Yan Chenyu, but even after flying several thousand kilometers, they were simply unable to find any traces of her.

“Damn it, what kind of insane existence is that monster?! Why wouldn't it just die?!”

The Seventh Emperor couldn't help but curse out loudly.

“Although that monster is at the Late Combat Soul realm, it only knows how to attack with raw strength. It's unable to cultivate Yuan energy or use any combat skills, so it's unable to withstand even a single blow from us. However, its ability to resurrect is truly a headache, as it gave Yan Chenyu the time to escape.”

The Tenth Emperor's face darkened as well. They had finally lured Yan Chenyu out, but in the end, they had still let her slip away. This was something really shameful for both of them.

“Hmph! Let's kill three men tomorrow! I'll pick three important people from the Yan family when we return. I don't believe that Yan Chenyu will still be able to hide herself then. We'll have the snare well prepared, and with all three of us, I don't want that Yan Chenyu to be able to escape even if she was given wings!”

The Seventh Emperor said with a sinister expression. As neither of them had found any traces of Yan Chenyu, they had no choice but to return from where they came.

Within a quiet valley, Yan Chenyu stood quietly while facing a lake. With a piercing gaze and an expressionless face, she murmured, “Jiang Cheng, rest in peace. Chen Gege will definitely avenge you.”

In the end, Jiang Cheng was unable to escape from death. Although Yan Chenyu showed up and tried saving his life, she had failed to do so. Still, her appearance was very important, she had at least seen Jiang Cheng's final moment, allowing him to die without any regrets. Furthermore, Jiang Cheng wasn't killed by their enemy, he had actually committed suicide. The last smile he had on his face was a calm and peaceful smile.

And this was the value of Yan Chenyu's appearance today.

“Chen Gege, when are you coming back? Little Yu can’t hold on much longer.”

Yan Chenyu squatted down and folded her arms around her shoulders. Though she had grown a lot since she first met Jiang Chen, she was still just a little girl.

Early morning the next day, Yan Chenyu had calmed herself down. She was once again on her way to the Fragrant Sky City. When she secretly arrived outside of the city, she immediately saw two wooden pillars placed above the city walls. On top of these two pillars were two human heads. One belonged to an alchemist from the Jiang family, and the other Jiang Cheng.

“Who will die next? What can I do to stop this?”

Yan Chenyu felt really gloomy. Although she possessed the Nine Yin Meridians, something only existed in the Nine Yin Body, a Divine Body; her cultivation was too weak, and her enemies were too strong. If she didn’t have the Ice Demon King to help her, she wouldn’t be able to do anything at all.

An hour later, a few dozen Golden Guards flew out from the Fragrant Sky City. They brought three men with them, and when Yan Chenyu saw who these three people were, her expression immediately changed.

Yan Hongtai, Yan Meng, Yan Xing. All three of them were important people of the Yan family. For Yan Chenyu, these were her seniors. Ever since she had been young, these people were the

ones who had been showing care and concern for her.

“No!”

Yan Chenyu cried out in her mind. They had killed one person yesterday, and they were going to kill three today, and all of them were from the Yan family. This was obviously brought by her appearance yesterday. Today's scene was purposely prepared for her.

Yan Meng and the other two wore resolute expressions on their faces, just like Jiang Cheng the day before. They showed no signs of fear, as if death was something perfectly normal.

Soon, noon arrived. The sun shone brightly above their heads, giving the trio a scorching sensation as three razor sharp blades were placed on the necks of the trio.

When the hidden Yan Chenyu saw this, her gaze became determined. Regardless of whether or not she would be able to save their lives; she couldn't just sit back and watch as her own family members got killed.

“Stop!”

Yan Chenyu shouted out. Like a fairy descending from the sky, she once again arrived in the city. Right when Yan Chenyu showed herself, three extremely powerful energies suddenly erupted forth from three different locations, trapping her tightly. The Seventh

Emperor, Tenth Emperor, and Yuan Long appeared at the same time.

They had prepared well for this moment. As long as Yan Chenyu showed up, the three would strike at the same time and trap her in the middle. Therefore, even if that monster appeared again, there was no way she would be able to run away from them.

“Little Yu, run for your life!”

When Yan Hongtai saw Yan Chenyu, he immediately yelled out like a crazy person.

“Haha, Yan Chenyu, it looks like you’re a girl who cares very much about family and friends. However, there is no way you can escape from us today!”

The Seventh Emperor burst into laughter. However, right after he finished speaking, something unexpected suddenly occurred. Two imposing auras appeared in the distance, and at the same time, a thunderous voice violently rocked through the sky.

“If you dare touch her, I will make sure you regret ever being born!”

The voice echoed across the sky, showing how mighty the man who was about to show himself was.

Chapter 431 – Apologize To My Brother!

His voice immediately caused everyone to throw their glances toward the source. What they saw was two golden trails of light shooting toward them at an incredible speed, and in the blink of an eye, they arrived at the outer perimeter of the Fragrant Sky City. One of these two was a handsome young man dressed in white clothes, and the other one was a big yellow dog that looks as big as a bull. A combination like this was truly unique underneath the heavens.

“Chen Gege!”

Yan Chenyu was extremely thrilled upon seeing the incoming man, and tears burst out from her eyes in an instant. During the past few days, she had been suffering from huge pressure all by herself, and it nearly caused her to suffocate, as she was still just a young girl in her teens. She had never expected such a huge crisis to emerge before. She just couldn't compare to Jiang Chen who had a mind that had gone through over a thousand years of hardships.

When Jiang Chen returned, Yan Chenyu felt as if the huge burden on her shoulders had finally been lifted. She knew that as long as her Chen Gege was with her; everything would be fine.

“Jiang Chen!”

The emperors and Yuan Long cried out in shock together. However, their shock soon turned into excitement. Their primary

target was here; Jiang Chen had finally shown himself!

“Haha, we’re safe now!”

Yan Meng suddenly started laughing. He was the first person in the Yan family who met Jiang Chen, and he was also the one who brought Jiang Chen to the Yan family. Had had an unspeakable confidence in this young man, as if there would no longer be any danger for them now that Jiang Chen had returned.

“Look, young master Jiang Chen is back! This is great! With young master Jiang Chen’s return, everything is possible! He will definitely wipe out all of those bastards!”

“I told you young master Jiang Chen would definitely return! But too bad, he is two days late, sigh...”

“No matter what, it is good that he has returned! I hope he can chase those butchers out from the Fragrant Sky City and bring back peace!”

.....

During this period, the people of the Fragrant Sky City felt indignant, but none of them dared to speak out. They could only watch as the people from the Jiang family and Yan family got bullied without the ability to do anything. But now, with Jiang Chen’s return, they had finally found their backbone.

“Jiang Chen, you’ve decided to stop being a coward and show yourself? With your current strength, don’t you think you’re just seeking death by showing yourself now?”

The Seventh Emperor’s face was covered with a victorious sneer. As long as they killed Jiang Chen, this incident would come to a perfect end. Once Jiang Chen was dead, they would be able to execute the will of the Imperial Decree and slaughter all his friends and family. They would show the Martial Saint Dynasty’s sovereignty to the entire world.

Jiang Chen wasn’t bothered by what the Seventh Emperor said, he didn’t even look at him. His gaze was fixed on Jiang Cheng’s head right now. He couldn’t remove his gaze from it, especially when he saw the smile and satisfied expression hanging on Jiang Cheng’s face. He suddenly felt as if his heart had been stabbed by something sharp, and an unbearable pain instantly struck him.

Taking the opportunity where all three mighty enemies had their eyes fixed on Jiang Chen, Yan Chenyu escaped from their surrounding and arrived next to Jiang Chen.

These three men weren’t bothered by Yan Chenyu’s escape. In their minds, Jiang Chen was far more important than Yan Chenyu.

“Chen Gege, Jiang Cheng asked me to let you know that he still wants to be your servant in his next life. He was willing to die for you, and he had no regrets doing so. Little Yu is useless, I was unable to save his life.”

Yan Chenyu said with a sorrowful voice, tears raining down from her face.

Boom!

Yan Chenyu's words caused Jiang Chen's fury to erupt like a violent volcano. He couldn't suppress his fury any longer. A golden colored flame of fury shot out from the top of his head. It looked like a golden dragon capable of burning anything in its path.

Two human heads, as well as Yan Meng and the other two's positions allowed Jiang Chen to immediately understand what had happened. These people must have lost their patience as he hadn't showed himself. Therefore, they decided to use such a brutal tactic.

Anger, anger, anger!

Jiang Chen's flame of fury was burning stronger and stronger with each passing moment. These guys had jumped long past his bottom line, causing his fury to burn like the most violent flame. Under the impact of his fury, his Dragon Transformation skill once again began circulating without his control. As his flames of fury raged above his head, Jiang Chen didn't notice that new Dragon Marks had started forming within his body.

Agitation; a transformation! Jiang Chen was now becoming stronger.

“Servant? No, he is my brother; my family.”

Jiang Chen spoke word by word as he stared at Jiang Cheng’s head. His voice was soft and gentle, yet it was cold at the same time.

“You have killed my family; killed my brother. I want you to die, all of you!”

Jiang Chen was still looking at Jiang Cheng’s head, but his words were obviously targeted at the ones from the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Kill them all!”

Someone within the crowd suddenly shouted out in a furious manner.

Tap!

Jiang Chen finally moved! With a sway of his body, he arrived in the sky. He stretched both hands forward and grabbed both heads. He bowed toward the alchemist’s head and put it into his storage ring. As for Jiang Cheng’s head, he placed it on his shoulder and covered it with golden light, causing it to look extremely sacred.

Clang!

A bright light flickered; Jiang Chen took out the Heavenly Saint Sword and held it in his hand. Freezing killing intent instantly spread across the scene. Jiang Chen slowly turned around and looked at the Seventh Emperor and the others.

“Attack together and take him down!”

The Seventh Emperor shouted out. With a prideful smile, the Tenth Emperor and Yuan Long were about to attack together. In their minds, Jiang Chen was still the same genius with unique talents, but he was far too weak when compared to a Late Combat Soul warrior.

However, they had made a terrible mistake, as the growth speed of a genius was not something they could imagine.

“Brother, let’s kill these bastards together.”

Jiang Chen gently said to Jiang Cheng’s head. In his mind, all the memories he had with Jiang Cheng flashed by. The flatterer who had always loyally followed him around; he could imagine how Jiang Cheng had died with no regrets yesterday.

The Seventh Emperor was the first one to approach Jiang Chen. With imposing energy and sword in hand shining brightly, he forcefully swung his sword toward Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen’s eyes lit up and he attacked with his sword. The Heavenly Saint Sword was engulfed in flames. The True Dragon

Flame, the Heavenly Thunder Flame, and Jiang Chen's flame of fury had merged together, causing it to become a dazzling sword of flame as it descended toward the Seventh Emperor.

Clang!

Both sword collided! The Seventh Emperor's sword was like a bubble that couldn't even withstand a single blow, and it immediately shattered into two pieces after colliding with the Heavenly Saint Sword.

“What?!”

The Seventh Emperor instantly cried out in shock, and he looked at Jiang Chen as if he was looking at a ghost. His Combat Weapon was a top-tier Superior Weapon, and it was considered a weapon that could destroy everything. But now, his opponent had just broken it with but a single strike. This was really frightening.

However, what made the Seventh Emperor even more shocked was that after exchanging an attack with Jiang Chen, he had finally found out about Jiang Chen's frightening strength. This young man's strength was like a gigantic mountain pressing down on him, causing him to feel so heavy that he could barely even breathe.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen didn't slow down his attack even when the Seventh

Emperor was startled. His sword shot forward and immediately sliced off one of the Seventh Emperor's arms, causing blood to instantly burst out. Underneath the sunlight's reflection, it looked extremely shiny.

Before the Seventh Emperor could cry out, Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword had already arrived near his throat. The razor sharp sword tip had cut his skin, causing him to start bleeding.

This was incredibly fast! Before the Tenth Emperor and Yuan Long could even come near him, the Seventh Emperor had been defeated in a miserable manner. His life was now in Jiang Chen's hands.

“So strong!”

Big Yellow was momentarily shocked, then great joy emerged on his face shortly afterwards. He knew Jiang Chen would be very strong after breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, but he never expected him to be this strong. On the other side, Yan Chenyu just stood on the side with a smile on her face. In her mind, Jiang Chen had always been an invincible existence, so she didn't feel any shock.

The Seventh Emperor's forehead was covered with sweat, and his body was trembling with fear. He no longer portrayed the same mighty attitude as before. Sensing the freezing killing intent coming from Jiang Chen, he became afraid. He knew about Jiang Chen's approaches very well, but he just didn't expect Jiang Chen to be this strong.

“Kneel down and apologize to my brother!”

Jiang Chen's black hair was dancing in the wind, and he was portraying a cold and indifferent image like a mighty God of Slaughter. He now controlled the Seventh Emperor's fate, leaving this enemy with no alternative.

“What did you just say?! You asked me to kneel down?!”

The Seventh Emperor was furious! He was a man of great nobility; the Lord Emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty! He was a man who sat on the peak and overlooked thousands of people; he would never kneel down before a servant's head.

Boom!

Argh!

A tremendous force immediately came from the Heavenly Saint Sword, forcing a miserable shriek out of the Seventh Emperor and his knees to bend, pushing him down and making kneel toward the sky. Right at this moment, he was unable to control his own body; he couldn't stop himself from kneeling.

“Presumptuous! How dare you insult the Imperial Lord Emperor?!”

Yuan Long shouted out loudly. Together with the Tenth Emperor, they immediately went to attack Jiang Chen. Both men were now aware of Jiang Chen's formidable combat strength, so they didn't hold anything back, and attacked with all their strength. They didn't believe that Jiang Chen was strong enough to withstand their attacks.

Jiang Chen threw an indifferent look over at these two men. He wasn't a man who had just broken through to the Combat Soul realm. He had a total of 7,000 Dragon Marks in his body, and a moment again, because the Dragon Transformation skill had gone through another transformation, he had formed another 500 Dragon Marks. At this point of time, he was getting stronger with every passing minute.

Jiang Chen stretched his hand forward and unleashed the True Dragon Claw. The gigantic blood red dragon claw that looked like that of a genuine dragon slapped the Tenth Emperor away with just a single strike. A Late Combat Soul warrior couldn't even withstand a single blow from Jiang Chen, and with 7,500 Dragon Marks, since the Tenth Emperor was weaker than Wu Ningzhu, if Jiang Chen didn't hold back, he would have killed the Tenth Emperor with this single strike.

“Seize him!”

Jiang Chen shouted out. However, before his words left his mouth, Big Yellow had already flown forward and arrived in front of the Tenth Emperor.

On the other side, when Yuan Long who was dashing toward

Jiang Chen with incredible speed saw what happened, he was instantly struck with panic. The situation had taken away all his desire to fight, and he simply turned around and tried fleeing.

“No one can run away from here; no one can stay alive!”

Like a God of War, Jiang Chen swung his Heavenly Saint Sword with lightning like speed. It was so fast that Yuan Long didn't even have the chance to dodge, so he was forced to try and block the attack with all his strength.

However, he just didn't have the strength to block this attack.

Argh...

Yuan Long instantly let out a miserable shriek. Half of his body was chopped off by Jiang Chen's sword. However, since he was still alive, Jiang Chen grabbed his body and made him kneel down together with the Seventh Emperor.

On the other side, Big Yellow had also thrown the severely injured Tenth Emperor with a powerful kick.

“Kneel down!”

Big Yellow shouted to the Tenth Emperor.

“Apologize to my brother!”

Jiang Chen unleashed his aura and covered all three men with it, causing them to feel extremely suffocated.

Chapter 432 – Executing Without Mercy

The entire place was completely silent, and everyone felt as if they could barely breathe. All Golden Guards who had rushed out from the Fragrant Sky City all wore pale expressions and looked as if they just seen a ghost. Although many of them were mighty Combat Soul warriors, after witnessing Jiang Chen's god-like combat strength, none of them had the courage to attack him. They just remained floating in the sky, having even lost the courage to run away from this place.

Even Yuan Long couldn't escape from here, so how could these Golden Guards possibly do it? The answer was obvious.

“Jiang Chen!”

“Jiang Chen!”

“Jiang Chen!”

Yan Meng yelled out with excitement. After that, the entire Fragrant Sky City began shouting Jiang Chen's name. When all those from the Jiang family and Yan family who were imprisoned heard this, their despair immediately turned into joy.

“It's young master! Young master is back!”

“This is great! We're safe now!”

.....

Everyone felt incredibly excited at this moment. They had spent their past days in darkness, and when the enemy started executing people, it just caused their hearts to break.

In the sky above the Fragrant Sky City, Jiang Chen had crushed three Late Combat Soul warrior; captured all three of them like a sudden clap of thunder and severely injured them to the point where they were like arrows at the end of their flight.

This required world-shaking combat strength, and only one unique person possessed it.

Jiang Chen signaled Big Yellow and Yan Chenyu with his eyes. Both of them understood what Jiang Chen meant, and immediately rushed toward the Fragrant Sky City.

Taking the opportunity where all the Golden Guards were stunned by what had happened, Yan Chenyu brought the Ice Demon King and broke their defenses, saving Yan Meng and the other two. The Ice Demon King even started launching brutal attacks at these Golden Guards, causing them to cry out for help.

Although the Ice Demon King couldn't defeat the Seventh Emperor, facing these Golden Guards was just a piece of cake to it.

Big Yellow went straight to the Jiang family. Jiang Chen would never allow any possible threat to exist. Although he controlled the

fates of the three Late Combat Soul warriors, he had to take the Jiang family and Yan family into consideration. None of these Golden Guards were ordinary warriors, and once they woke up from their shock, they would definitely use the lives of both Jiang family and Yan family to threaten Jiang Chen, and that was not something Jiang Chen wished to see.

Now, with Big Yellow and Yan Chenyu attack them as well, there was no way these Golden Guards could even hope to resist. The safety of the Jiang family and Yan family was thus ensured.

The captured trio had lost their spirit after being captured by Jiang Chen, especially Yuan Long. He was the one with the most severe injuries, as half of his body had been chopped off by Jiang Chen. Although he was still alive, it would be impossible for him to fully recover. He was considered permanently disabled.

On Jiang Chen's shoulder sat Jiang Cheng's smiling head. The head was covered with a golden light, causing it to look incredibly sacred. Jiang Chen didn't pay any attention to the fight between the Ice Demon King and the Golden Guards. He raised the Heavenly Saint Sword up slowly and pointed at the Seventh Emperor, "We'll start with you; I want you to apologize to my brother."

"Bullshit! Jiang Chen, I am a Lord Emperor! Asking a Lord Emperor to apologize to a mere ant? Impossible!"

The Seventh Emperor said with a loud voice.

Swoosh!

However, before he could finish speaking, a sword beam was unleashed. The sword beam sliced off one of the Seventh Emperor's ears.

“Argh! Jiang Chen, how dare you hurt me?! I'm the Seventh Emperor!! The Imperial Emperor will definitely not let you go!”

The Seventh Emperor let out a miserable shriek, and he didn't forget to threaten Jiang Chen afterwards.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen only responded by sending out another sword beam, slicing off the last ear.

Comparing their viciousness and lack of mercy, the Seventh Emperor was far behind Jiang Chen.

“Honorable Lord Seventh Emperor, you can continue to refuse my instructions. My next target is your left eye, then your right eye. After that comes your nose, and following that comes your arms and legs' tendons, and lastly, your internal organs. I'll allow you to taste all my approaches. Let me tell you this; I know a method that allows you to see your own heart beating before dying. I wonder, do you want to experience it?”

Jiang Chen's voice sounded like something straight out of hell,

causing goose bumps to appear on many, and chills to fall down their spines.

“You!”

The Seventh Emperor was terrified, and his body was trembling uncontrollably. Death was indeed very frightening, but sometimes, being alive was even scarier than death. He had finally gotten a small taste of Jiang Chen’s ruthless approach. He could even feel that his soul would start trembling if those brutal methods were used on him.

“Jiang... Jiang Chen, if I apologize, will you let me go?”

The Seventh Emperor asked. No one wanted to die, especially those who live good lives. Someone like the Seventh Emperor who sat high above all cherished life the most, but he never thought he’d have to face death like this in his life.

“You have to die, all three of you do. The only difference is whether you want a quick death, or endless torture before I finally let you die. Let me remind you; in front of me, you do not even have the ability to commit suicide.”

Jiang Chen said, word by word, causing the trio to be instantly put in absolute despair.

Buzz...

The Heavenly Saint Sword's razor sharp tip was pointing at one of the Seventh Emperor's eyes, sending cold shivers down his back. Without hesitating, he looked at Jiang Cheng's head and said, "I'm sorry!"

"Kowtow to him three times."

Jiang Chen continued speaking with an indifferent voice.

"What?! Jiang Chen, you better not push me too-ARGHH!!"

The Seventh Emperor was furious. He knew he was soon going to die, but he just didn't want to be humiliated before finally dying. However, his objection was useless. Before he could finish speaking, Jiang Chen simply swung his sword and left two wounds on the Seventh Emperor's face, instantly destroying both of his eyes. The burning pain that came from these wounds was not something a Late Combat Soul warrior could bear.

"Jiang Chen! Kill me, kill me..."

The Seventh Emperor roared out. He had always been somewhat scared of death, but now, his strongest desire was to die. He wanted to kill himself, but under Jiang Chen's control, he was unable to do so.

"Kowtow!"

Jiang Chen was ruthless and merciless. He placed the tip of the

sword on the Seventh Emperor's nose. Although the Seventh Emperor was in severe pain, he was still able to remain conscious. He could feel the freezing sensation coming from his nose clearly, causing him to feel extremely frightened.

“No, I'll kowtow now, I'll do it now!”

The Seventh Emperor's mind had been broken. In his mind, Jiang Chen was no longer a human, but a devil, a terrifying devil from the inside out.

The Seventh Emperor continued to kowtow three times, and after that, he felt as if all his strength had left his body. “Jiang Chen, kill me, kill me now!”

The Seventh Emperor only wished to die, and of course, Jiang Chen would grant him this wish. With the Heavenly Saint Sword in hand, he instantly beheaded the Seventh Emperor, causing his voice to come to a complete stop.

“Your turn.”

Jiang Chen pointed the deadly sword at the Tenth Emperor, immediately sending a chill down his spine. He witnessed what happened to the Seventh Emperor just now, and there was no way he could withstand that kind of torture.

“Jiang Chen, you're not a human, you're not a fucking human! You're a devil!”

The Tenth Emperor's mind had collapsed as well.

“Kowtow and apologize.”

Jiang Chen still spoke with the same indifferent tone.

“I'm sorry! Kill me now!”

The Tenth Emperor kowtowed three times. Like the Seventh Emperor, he only desired to die now. He had lived a prosperous life. He never thought he'd have to face his own death like this, even in his wildest dreams. Even worse, he was asking to be killed.

“Tenth Emperor, you won't feel lonely at all. After you die, many more people will accompany you. Many of the Martial Saint Dynasty will die, including the Imperial Emperor. With that, you can all just regroup in hell and establish a brand new Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Although Jiang Chen spoke with a calm voice. However, his determination to annihilate the Martial Saint Dynasty was firm, which could be sensed from his voice.

Puchi!

The Heavenly Saint Sword sliced through the Tenth Emperor's head, beheading him. This head was actually useful to Jiang Chen.

Argh!!!

Yuan Long's mind had completely collapsed, and both of his eyes had turned red. His half body was trembling violently as he turned toward Jiang Cheng's head and kowtowed three times. However, he had lost all ability to speak, much less apologize.

“This is the fate of you from the Martial Saint Dynasty. You should never have provoked me.”

Jiang Chen never showed his enemies any mercy. Jiang Cheng's life was much more precious than the lives of these people, and since Jiang Cheng was now dead, many of these people would have to follow him. These three men were just the first.

Jiang Chen sliced off Yuan Long's head, then waved his hand and unleashed a flame, burning all three bodies to ashes. After that, he simply stored all three heads into his storage ring.

Argh...

All of the Golden Guards were miserably crying out as the result of the Ice Demon King's brutal attacks. None of them were able to withstand a single blow from it. More than half of these Golden Guards had been killed by the Ice Demon King, while some who tried to flee were killed by Yan Chenyu.

“Ice Demon, chop off all the Golden Guards' heads. It's a gift for a

certain someone.”

After giving the order to the Ice Demon King, Jiang Chen took off toward where the Jiang family was located.

All the people present were still immersed in shock. They had witnessed the brutal approaches of their young master when the Jiang family was fighting the Murong family, but judging from what they saw just now, their young master’s approaches had become even more brutal than before.

“This is amazing! Young master Jiang Chen is really frightening, he has actually grown to this incredible stage in such a short amount of time! Even the formidable Lord Emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty were no match for him!”

“Don’t bully a man who has nothing; you see, the useless fool of the Fragrant Sky City who was looked down upon by everyone has grown to such an amazing stage!”

“The Jiang family is saved now, this is fantastic! I hope young master Jiang Chen can annihilate that bullshit Martial Saint Dynasty and bring peace back to the Fragrant Sky City!”

.....

Everyone were shocked. Jiang Chen’s transformation was simply too huge. Only two years had passed since he left the Fragrant Sky City, and Jiang Chen was only fifteen years old back then, and he

was now seventeen.

Having such incredible achievements and cultivation while only seventeen years old. In front of him, who could still claim to be geniuses?

Within the Jiang family!

The Jiang family and Yan family were current out of danger's way, as Big Yellow had arrived before those few Golden Guards could respond. Big Yellow had killed them, giving them absolutely no chance to strike back.

“Young master, you're finally back!”

Zhou Beichen's face was covered with tears upon seeing Jiang Chen. Initially, according to the Seventh Emperor's plan, he would be next after they killed Jiang Chen. However, because Yan Chenyu showed herself yesterday, they had instead chosen to execute three men from the Yan family. That's why Zhou Beichen's life was spared today.

“Uncle Zhou, sorry I'm late.”

Jiang Chen took a step forward and supported Zhou Beichen who could barely stand. All these people were his family; the ones closest to him.

Chapter 433 – A Big Gift

“Young master, I felt relieved upon seeing you return unhurt! It’s a shame Jiang Cheng died...”

Tears were flowing down from Zhou Beichen’s aged eyes. He was really sad about Jiang Cheng’s death. In fact, the death of anyone from the Jiang family would put him in pain. The Jiang family was the ultimate ruler of this remote land, and they were supposed to enjoy a calm and carefree life, not face this terrible crisis.

The mention of Jiang Cheng caused Jiang Chen’s expression to turn gloomy. Although he had killed the enemies and avenged Jiang Cheng, no amount of the enemies’ lives could compare to Jiang Cheng’s life in his mind. However, Jiang Chen had accepted this cruel face.

As an antique existence who had lived two lives, Jiang Chen had seen everything in his life. He had gone through all kinds of life and death situations; this was Jiang Chen’s destiny. However, although the man had died, those who were still alive must do something for him. Jiang Chen decided; he wanted Jiang Cheng to have a glorious burial, one that would leave Jiang Cheng with no regrets in the afterlife.

Soon after, Yan Chenyu brought Yan Meng and the others back to the others from the Yan family. These three men were filled with excitement. No matter what, they had survived this day when they thought they would certainly die, and they had witnessed their enemies die in a miserable manner. This caused the foul emotions to disappear, and a pleasant feeling to appear in its

stead.

“Yan Hongtai greets young master! Thank you for saving our lives!”

Yan Hongtai said as he bowed toward Jiang Chen with the other two men. All of them were happy just thinking about how Jiang Chen was their family’s son-in-law.

“Great Elder, don’t say it like that. You were all dragged into this terrible crisis because of me, I should be the one to apologize to you. However, we’re all a family, and this is not the right time to be courteous. I still have many things to settle, so I’ll need your help to stabilize the Jiang family.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Young master, you just go ahead with what you want to do. Leave everything here to us!”

Yan Hongtai immediately responded. Jiang Chen saying that they were one family warmed his heart. Furthermore, everyone knew that Jiang Chen’s words were correct. The resentment between him and the Martial Saint Dynasty couldn’t be resolved, and one of them would have to face annihilated in the end. Havoc was soon going to be wreaked in this continent.

“Young master; old master and family chief Yan has been brought to the Martial Saint Dynasty. Do you think they will face

any life-threatening danger?”

Zhou Beichen worriedly asked.

“As long as I am still alive, father, father-in-law, and brother Jiu will be safe. Since the Imperial Emperor has taken the ones most important to me; he is destined to suffer my fury. I will make the Martial Saint Dynasty completely disappears from the Eastern Continent.”

A sharp light flickered in Jiang Chen’s eyes.

All dragons had a reverse scale, and those who touched it would have to face certain death. Jiang Chen’s family and friends were his biggest reverse scale.

“Kaka, good! Buddy, you’re incomparably domineering! It looks like the Eastern Continent’s turning point will soon appear!”

Big Yellow was laughing out excitedly. He was an existence that could never settle for peace. The Martial Saint Dynasty had ruled the Eastern Continent for so many years, and if anyone dared to that he wanted to annihilate this gigantic existence, it would be seen as a big joke. However, since it was Jiang Chen who made this claim, Big Yellow had countless reasons to believe him. This huge history-changing decision, if there was anyone would could do it, it would be Jiang Chen.

“Big Yellow, gather all the heads. I want you to proceed to the

Black Sect and give this big gift to Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi. Tell them to keep their heads safe and wait for me, Jiang Chen to go and collect them!”

Jiang Chen told Big Yellow, portraying an incredible domineering image from all over.

“The fuck? Don’t you think this is too extreme? Little Chen, are you sure about this?”

Big Yellow was startled by what Jiang Chen said. He thought Jiang Chen would go to the Qi Province and secretly kill both Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi, saving the people of the Black Sect. However, he never expected Jiang Chen to be so straightforward.

“Chen Gege, if you do this, I’m sure the Imperial Emperor will be alerted, causing us to be put in a disadvantageous position when trying to save our friends.”

Yan Chenyu worriedly said.

“No worries. The Imperial Emperor should already know what happened here. The Seventh Emperor and Tenth Emperor are both men with high positions in the Martial Saint Dynasty, and I’m sure the Martial Saint Dynasty has their soul jade slips. When they were killed, their soul jade slip immediately broken, and since I’ve already exposed myself; why don’t we just approach this matter in a straightforward manner? With this, we can also ensure the safety of the Fragrant Sky City.”

Jiang Chen always tried to cover every single possible situation and think things through thoroughly. Every decision he made was back by his own logic and reason. There was no way they could hide the deaths of the two emperors, so the reason why he wanted to send their heads to the Qi Province was to inform the Imperial Emperor that he was going to the Qi Province to save the people there. With this, all their attention would be directed to the Qi Province, and they would focus on him alone; ignoring the Fragrant Sky City.

When the Fragrant Sky City's safety was ensured, Jiang Chen would have no more worries. He would be able to focus all his energy on deal with the Martial Saint Dynasty; to fight the battle.

Of course, that wasn't the only reason why Jiang Chen made this decision. He actually had another more important reason; his current condition. With his current cultivation, he was invincible within the Combat Soul realm, but when compared to the Imperial Emperor who was a Combat King warrior, the gap between them was still huge. Just now when Jiang Chen saw Jiang Cheng's head, he was immediately struck with fury, causing the Dragon Transformation skill to be stimulated and start circulating with himself. Under the burning flames of his fury, he had actually formed 1,000 new Dragon Marks. Those 1,000 Dragon Marks came from his hidden potential, and their quality was much better compared to those formed from absorbing demon souls.

Jiang Chen now had a total of 8,000 Dragon Marks. More importantly, the Dragon Transformation skill was going to face its second transformation, and that was what Jiang Chen anticipated the most. In order to make the Dragon Transformation skill truly

transform, he would have to face tremendous pressure, and the battle between him and the Martial Saint Dynasty would be the pressure he was looking for. Jiang Chen wanted to temper himself under that incredible pressure. Or put it this way, he wanted to temper the Dragon Transformation skill, causing it to transform a second time. Only with its transformation would Jiang Chen be able to obtain huge benefits, giving him the ability to fight the Imperial Emperor.

The Martial Saint Dynasty was a mammoth of an existence. Perhaps there were more Combat King warriors behind it than the Imperial Emperor alone. Therefore, Jiang Chen had no choice but to grow as fast as he could. If not, not only would he be in extreme danger; all of his family would be dragged into this terrible crisis once again, and that was not something Jiang Chen wanted to happen.

One last reason; an eye for an eye. The Seventh Emperor had chopped off Jiang Cheng's head. Therefore, he had chopped off all these enemies' heads and sent it to them. The supreme art of war was to subdue the enemy without actually fighting them. He had to gain the upper hand in this battle; planting the seed of fear in the minds of the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect.

If they wanted a war; let the war be a raging one! If they wanted to slaughter; they will die, and I will live! Once a man's blood was boiling; it would set the prairies ablaze.

“Haha, I really like your domineering attitude! This master dog also wants to be domineering! I'll bring these heads to the Black Sect now! Wakaka, this is so exciting!”

Big Yellow was bouncing around in excitement. When he thought about the huge storm that would come after sending this huge gift over, he couldn't help but feel his heartbeat speeding up. Foreseeably, the entire Eastern Continent would be in huge chaos from that moment on; this stagnant pool of water was destined to be an overwhelming storm!

Big Yellow carried out his task with drive and sweep. Without hesitating, he immediately brought all heads with him and started flying toward the Qi Province.

Jiang Chen didn't leave the city in a rush. He asked someone to build a grave in the backyard of the Jiang family, then buried Jiang Cheng and the alchemist who had worked restlessly for the Jiang family together.

“From now on, you are both of the genuine lineage of the Jiang family. Brother Cheng, take a good rest here; your young master will make sure that everyone in the Martial Saint Dynasty who were involved in this incident apologizes to you in the afterlife.”

Jiang Chen bowed deeply toward the newly built grave, while all the people of the Jiang family and Yan family behind him bowed at the same time; their faces filled with sorrow.

The next day, after everything in the Jiang family had been settled, Jiang Chen was preparing to leave.

“With Big Yellow's speed, I supposed they've already received the

gift. I'll allow them one day to prepare a response to this. I'll start proceeding toward the Qi Province now, and I'll reach the Black Sect tomorrow. Little Yu, as a preventive measure, you and the Ice Demon King just stay here. This is a notification talisman I've made with my source consciousness. If anything unexpected happens here, just crush it immediately, and I'll be notified at once."

Jiang Chen took out a golden talisman and put it into Yan Chenyu's palm. Although everyone's attention was focused on the Qi Province's Black Sect; on Jiang Chen, while the Fragrant Sky City was safe for now, Jiang Chen still made Yan Chenyu stay behind, just in case, as she now had the ability to face pretty much any situation by herself.

"Don't worry Chen Gege! I'll definitely protect both Jiang family and Yan family! You must remember to be careful!"

Yan Chenyu held onto Jiang Chen's thick palm tightly.

Jiang Chen responded with a kiss on Yan Chenyu's forehead. After that, he flew into the sky and left.

Qi Province – Black Sect!

Since Jiang Chen still hadn't shown himself, Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi's patience was about to run out. It was early in the morning when a loud laughter suddenly echoed through the silent sky above the Black Sect.

“Shangguan Sheng, Tiangang Yi; there is a huge gift waiting for you here! Come out quickly and receive it, haha...”

A mighty laughter resounded throughout the air. Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi immediately dashed out from the Black Sect together with all the mighty warriors from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, then they all threw their glances into the sky above.

In the sky above the Black Sect, a huge character floated in the sky: Kill!

[TL: this character: 杀.]

It was a huge character that frightened everyone, sending chills down their spines. It wasn't the huge character that frightened them, but what formed it. The entire character was made entirely from several dozen human heads, and each of the heads was covered with blood, and they all wore terrified and frightened expressions on their faces.

A huge, terrifying word made from human heads, hovering in the sky above the Black Sect, as if the Lord of Death had suddenly appeared. And, the three heads on the top of this character belonged to the Tenth Emperor, Seventh Emperor, and Yuan Long.

“What?!”

Shangguan Sheng instantly cried out in shock, and his eyes

nearly burst out.

“It’s the Seventh Emperor, Tenth Emperor, and those Golden Guards! They were supposed to be controlling the Fragrant Sky City now, but they’re all dead! Who did this?!”

Tiangang Yi couldn’t keep calm any longer. He knew just how strong the two emperors and Yuan Long was, even those ordinary Golden Guards were all frightening existences. But now, they had all been killed by someone, and their heads were used to form a character.

Chapter 434 – Intimidation

Everyone from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect wore horrified expressions on their faces. It was as if those terrifying heads were put there as a demonstration; showing them their possible ending. Even the formidable emperors and Golden Guards had been killed. Compared to them, these people were nothing.

“It’s Jiang Chen, it must be Jiang Chen! Only he has the courage and strength to do this!”

“Except for that crazy Jiang Chen, who is daring enough to kill emperors and Golden Guards?! No one!”

“What should we do?! Jiang Chen is back, and he even killed two emperors! I’m sure we’re his next target!”

“Why are you panicking? Jiang Chen is nothing to fear! No matter how strong he is; can he be stronger than the entire Martial Saint Dynasty? If he dares show himself, he will only meet with certain death!”

.....

The people from the two superpowers were unable to keep their calm. The scene in front of them was after all extremely frightening. His name was like that of a devil king; it had left a deep mark in everyone’s heart.

Right at this moment, a golden beam suddenly appeared and turned into a majestic big yellow dog. He stood on top of the human heads with his head held high. With just a mere Early Combat Soul cultivation, he dared show off in front of two Late Combat Soul warriors. Perhaps Big Yellow was the only one who possessed such courage.

“Shangguan Sheng, Tiangang Yi; everyone from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, listen up! By the command of Jiang Chen, this master dog has come here to present you with this magnificent gift! Please keep these heads in good shape, Jiang Chen said he would soon come here to collect them, wakaka...”

After letting out a prideful laugh, Big Yellow immediately turned back into a golden beam and shot far into the distance.

“Damn dog, do you think you can run away from me?!”

Shangguan Sheng was furious. Without hesitating, he turned into a trail of light and chased after Big Yellow. As the Shangguan Clan Chief, if he allowed a dog to show off in front of him and escape unhurt, he would no longer be able to hold his head up high.

Tiangang Yi didn't do anything. In his mind, there was no need to handle a dog with the two mammoths of the Jian Province. At this moment, he stared at the human heads hovering in the sky with a gloomy expression; still immersed in great shock.

The furious Shangguan Sheng was chasing after Big Yellow.

Little to his knowledge, escaping was Big Yellow's strongest ability. If he wished to leave; no one could force him to stay. If he wasn't confident in his abilities, why would he have jumped out to show off in front of these powerful enemies?

“Wakaka, old fart, if you really want to catch this master dog, you better go back and train for a few more years!”

Big Yellow provoked. After that, his wings of light suddenly appeared on his back. With a flap of these wings, his speed was instantly doubled, and he shot across the sky like a golden shooting star.

“How can this dog have such incredible speed? However, it impossible for you to run away from me!”

Although still furious, Shangguan Sheng was surprised by Big Yellow's speed. However, he did have his own unique ability. He unleashed an advanced movement skill with some mystical steps, increasing his speed by a lot as well.

“Oh my! I didn't expect this old fart to have some abilities!”

Sensing Shangguan Sheng getting closer to him, Big Yellow was somewhat surprised. However, he showed no signs of panicking. Instead, there was actually a cunning expression on his face.

“Old fart, why are you flying so close to this master dog's butt? Do you want to smell my fart? If that's the case, this master dog

will be kind enough to grant your wish. I will let you taste Big Yellow's Peerless Fart!"

Big Yellow loudly said as he flew forward. Then, he cocked up his butt and made it double in size.

"Damn dog!"

Shangguan Sheng considered Big Yellow's movement an insult and provocation. He was the prestigious Clan Chief of the Shangguan Clan, and now, a dog was daring enough to use its butt to humiliate him. This was something he couldn't bear at all.

Therefore, Shangguan Sheng furiously roared out, increasing his speed and once again shortening the distance between himself and Big Yellow.

Therefore, a tragedy occurred!

Boom...

An incredibly loud explosive sound that sounded like Heavenly Thunder striking down from the Ninth Heaven suddenly burst out from Big Yellow's butt. This tremendous explosive sound stunned Shangguan Sheng. All he could see was a clump of greenish air shooting out from Big Yellow's butt. It was extremely fast, and it was constantly expanding in front of him. In the blink of an eye, the green air had reached his face.

Ugh...

The green air flew right onto Shangguan Sheng's face, causing him to inhale a large amount of it. And of course, he immediately felt sick.

Shangguan Sheng could feel his internal organs violently trembling, and his expression had begun twisting.

“Argh!!! This stin-, blergh...”

Without caring for his mighty image as the Shangguan Clan Chief, Shangguan Sheng simply vomited on the spot; his dignified image instantly disappearing.

“Kaka, want to hunt this master dog down? Take your time and enjoy this master dog's peerless fart!”

Big Yellow wiggled his now huge butt at Shangguan Sheng, then he simply turned into a golden beam and disappeared from the scene.

When Shangguan Sheng finally dispersed the last of it, he started furiously hunting down Big Yellow again. However, his target was nowhere to be found any longer; Big Yellow had long ago disappeared, so how was he going to hunt him down? Still chase after him and have to risk getting hit by that foul fart again?

“Damn dog! If I ever see you again, I will definitely peel your skin

off!”

Shangguan Sheng felt as if he was about to go crazy. Not once in his life had he felt such tremendous hate toward a person... no, a dog! A cruel and wicked dog! He was a man with a great status, but this dog had actually fooled him! If this was known by any other, his face would all disappear!

This newly awakened ability was indeed heavenly-defying. Putting aside how deadly it was, its foul smell was more than enough to kill someone by disgusting them. He had used this ability twice since it was awakened. The first victim was the Crown Prince, and the second one was Shangguan Sheng. Luckily, there was gap between Big Yellow and the other two. If it was any Early Combat Soul warrior, he might have been instantly killed just from the fart's strength, or perhaps even die because of the foul smell.

Within a hidden valley not far away from the Black Sect, four figures had witnessed what just happened, causing them all to feel extremely excited. These four men were Han Yan, Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan, who had been hiding here all this time.

Big Yellow's appearance, and the big character made from dozens of human heads; they had seen it all with their own eyes.

“This is perfect, Little Chen has finally returned!”

Han Yan's eyes lit up.

“Brother Jiang Chen is really amazing, he actually killed the Seventh Emperor and Tenth Emperor! Looks like all those Golden Guards who went to the Fragrant Sky City were killed as well; none of them survived, as their heads are all here! Big Yellow is really domineering, he actually sent all the heads here!”

Yu Zihan was really excited. After nervously waiting for so many days, good news had finally arrived.

“Looks like junior disciple Jiang has broken through to the Combat Soul realm. He’s too frightening, he only just broke through, and he is already able to kill peak Combat Soul warriors!”

Guan Yiyun said with mixed emotions. Jiang Chen was definitely the number one genius he had ever met. In front of Jiang Chen, no one could claim themselves to be geniuses.

“Let’s go and find Big Yellow. Once Little Chen comes here, a grand battle will commence.”

Han Yan said with a smile on his face. Their backbone had finally arrived, and it was time for battle.

It was very difficult for Shangguan Sheng to find out where Big Yellow was, but for Han Yan and the others, it was extremely easy, as it all depended on whether or not Big Yellow wanted to be found. After sensing the auras of these four men, Big Yellow revealed himself.

Not long after that, the four men regrouped with Big Yellow in a valley thousands of miles away.

“Big Yellow, tell us quickly, what happened in the Fragrant Sky City?”

That was the first question Han Yan asked after seeing Big Yellow.

“You four were hiding outside the Black Sect, I already sensed your auras. I’m sure you guys saw the huge character made from human heads, so you must have guessed that something happened. Let me tell; Jiang Chen now possess incredible combat strength, and killed all three Late Combat Soul warriors. After that, he sent this master dog here to deliver those heads as a huge gift. Tomorrow, Jiang Chen will arrived. Let’s just wait here for the grand show!”

Big Yellow said, beaming with joy.

“That huge characters made from human heads was indeed brutal, it definitely struck fear into those people, as even two of the emperors were kill. I’m sure Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi feel afraid now. However, with this, the Imperial Emperor has most likely found out that Jiang Chen has appeared. It might put us in a disadvantageous position while trying to save our people.”

Yu Zihan worriedly said.

“The people of the Martial Saint Dynasty would already have known even if we didn’t do that. Look over there!”

Big Yellow threw his glance into the distance. The four men looked where he was looking, and saw a few large golden clouds formed from extremely powerful energies flying toward the Black Sect. With the clouds were at least five peak Late Combat Soul warriors. In the Eastern Continent, only the Martial Saint Dynasty had such a frightening force.

“They’re from the Martial Saint Dynasty!”

Tian Yishan cried out in shock.

“Indeed, they already know what happened. It looks like a great show is coming up. I wonder if junior disciple Jiang can withstand this massive force.”

Guan Yiyun said in a worried tone.

“Don’t worry. When the Martial Saint Dynasty decided to become Little Chen’s enemy, they were already destined to face a miserable ending.”

Han Yan said, a cold grin visible on his face. He was utmost confident in Jiang Chen.

Back in the Black Sect, the human heads were still hovering in the sky. When the mighty group who had just arrived saw it, they

were all immediately enraged.

The group consisted of over two hundred men, and five of them were Late Combat Soul warrior. The Third Emperor, Fourth Emperor, Fifth Emperor, and the Crown Prince, who had fully recovered. Wu Cong was with them as well. Behind them was a large group of Golden Guards, as well as some other mighty warriors working for the Martial Saint Dynasty and emperors. There were nearly sixty Combat Soul warriors; this force couldn't just be described as strong.

“Bastard! That damn Jiang Chen, I will definitely rip him into pieces!”

The Third Emperor angrily scolded with a loud voice. This was the first time in the Eastern Continent's history that an emperor had been killed by someone. Their opponent was an extremely daring bastard.

“Using two of my Imperial uncles and the Golden Guards' heads to form a huge character, this is a plain insult to the Martial Saint Dynasty! I, the Crown Prince swear now; I will make sure that Jiang Chen dies without a proper burial ground!”

The Crown Prince was extremely furious right now. These Golden Guards were all trained by him, and every one of them was an elite warrior. But now, they were all dead, including the Deputy Commander, Yuan Long.

The Crown Prince's voice was somewhat high-pitched. This

wasn't because he was angry, but because he lost his manly spirit.

Chapter 435 – The Calm Before The Storm

The Crown Prince's high-pitched voice wasn't because he was angry, but because it had transformed after he lost the function of a real man. He rarely spoke now, as every time he heard his own voice, he would feel infuriated.

Although the Crown Prince had been castrated, his cultivation hadn't been affected at all. The Martial Saint Dynasty had many miraculous pills for healing, and it was more than enough to make him recover to his peak shape in a very short amount of time. For this operation to take down Jiang Chen, he took the initiative to contact the Third Emperor who was in charge and requested to bring the Golden Guards to this mission. He wanted revenge for this grudge.

The emperors and Golden Guards were all furious. The huge character formed from human heads was like a sharp blade poking into the Martial Saint Dynasty's head; it was a huge provocation to the mighty Martial Saint Dynasty!

“Third Emperor, why are you all here?”

Tiangang Yi greeted the group and asked. Shangguan Sheng's expression was still twisted. When he thought about the fart he received earlier, he couldn't help but feel his qi and blood violently boiling.

“Yesterday, Old Seventh and Old Tenth's Soul Jade Slip broke, and I knew something huge had happened; it's highly possible that

Jiang Chen has returned. Initially, I planned on bringing my men over to the Fragrant Sky City, but after a sect thought. I realized that since he has already killed Old Seventh and Old Tenth, his next target would be the Black Sect, so I just came here instead. However, I never expected Jiang Chen to be such an arrogant man! He actually sent all these human heads here; he just doesn't put the Martial Saint Dynasty in his eyes!"

The Third Emperor furiously said.

"Third Emperor, now that Jiang Chen has grown even bigger, he has become a huge threat to us! Just now, that big yellow dog came here and brought these heads here. He also said that Jiang Chen would soon come and attack us here in the Black Sect. What should we do now?"

Shangguan Sheng asked.

"Hmph! He better come here; all of us will be here waiting for him!"

The Crown Prince coldly harrumphed.

"Crown Prince, that Jiang Chen is no longer the same person that we know; he has completely changed! His ability to kill the Seventh Emperor and the others tell us one thing; with his current combat strength, perhaps only a Combat King warrior will be able to take him down. I wonder, will the Imperial Emperor strike this time?"

Tiangang Yi asked.

“The Imperial Emperor is still not aware of this matter.”

The Third Emperor said.

“What?”

Tiangang Yi and Shangguan Sheng were both startled for a moment. Two emperors had been killed, and it was very obvious that Jiang Chen had grown to a very powerful stage. He was now beyond the control of these people; and it was time for the Imperial Emperor himself to strike. So, why didn't they inform the Imperial Emperor?

“Hmph! The Imperial Emperor has put me in charge of this matter. If I can't even take down this Jiang Chen, I won't have the face to face anyone in the Martial Saint Dynasty. Don't worry, I came here well prepared. As long as that Jiang Chen shows up, he will certainly die!”

The Third Emperor coldly harrumphed and spoke with utmost confidence.

The Third Emperor hadn't informed the Imperial Emperor about the seventh and tenth emperors Soul Jade Slips breaking. The Imperial Emperor was confident in putting the Third Emperor in charge of this matter. He hadn't even asked the Third Emperor about the status.

In the minds of the Third Emperor and the others, they were all men with a lot of power and high positions in the Martial Saint Dynasty; they were the ones who sat on the top, overlooking thousands of people. If this small matter had to bother the Imperial Emperor and request him to personally strike; their face would all go down the drain.

Therefore, they didn't alert the Imperial Emperor, and just came straight to the Black Sect instead to take down Jiang Chen and hand him to the Imperial Emperor.

“May I know how the Third Emperor plans to approach this matter with Jiang Chen? He is an extremely dangerous man with a cruel and ruthless approach; he isn't easy to deal with.”

Shangguan Sheng asked.

“Store these heads carefully and bring them back to be buried. We'll talk inside.”

After saying that, the Third Emperor flew directly over to the inner area of the Black Sect.

Within the Black Sect's main palace, all the Combat Soul warriors were gathered together.

“Although Jiang Chen has the strength to kill Late Combat Soul warriors, he is all alone. There is a limit to his strength! I have

prepared well for this time.”

The Third Emperor sat at the front, and with the flip of his palm, a spear that glowed with a golden light appeared. The spear was 3 meters long, and it was covered with mystical symbols. The tip of the spear shone brightly, sending a chill down the spines of anyone who looked at it, and the aura leaking out from it could even make anyone feel suffocated.

“King Weapon!”

Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi both cried out in shock. However, the rest of the men were able to remain calm, as they already knew about the existence of this spear.

“That’s right! This spear was given to me by the previous Emperor! It is a genuine King Weapon, and it will be more than enough for me to deal with Jiang Chen! Furthermore, in order to make sure that Jiang Chen can’t escape from here, I plan on constructing the Nine Stars Killing Formation! That will guarantee he comes without the ability to return!”

The Third Emperor’s face was filled with confidence.

“Nine Stars Killing Formation?”

Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi once again cried out in shock.

“The Nine Stars Killing Formation is an extremely frightening

killing formation. It requires nine mighty warriors to support it, and we currently have seven Late Combat Soul warriors here. Clan Chief Shangguan, I've heard that the Shangguan Clan's Great Elder, Shangguan Qingming is also a Late Combat Soul warrior, and that the Myriad Sword Sect also has a Late Combat Soul warrior. I want them to get here as soon as possible! With all nine of us supporting the Nine Stars Killing Formation, together with this King Weapon; even if Jiang Chen has nine lives, he will die! Since we can easily accomplish this mission on our own with this, why should we alert the Imperial Emperor?"

The Third Emperor had indeed prepared well. If not, he wouldn't have come here after learning that Jiang Chen had the ability to kill Late Combat Soul warriors, as that was no different from seeking death.

"Alright, I'll inform the Great Elder and ask him to come over here immediately."

Shangguan Sheng said. Tiangang Yi was also getting ready to inform the Late Combat Soul warrior from the Myriad Sword Sect. After learning the Third Emperor's plan, their worries had disappeared; replaced by excitement.

The combined force of nine Late Combat Soul warriors , as well as the frightening Nine Stars Killing Formation and the King Weapon; this was an incredibly formidable force! Unless a Combat King warrior faced it personally, no one would be able to defeat it. No matter how strong Jiang Chen was, there was a limit to his strength. No matter who faced this formidable force, that person would eventually die. Therefore, even if Jiang Chen had nine lives,

he would still have to face death.

On the same day, the news about Jiang Chen's return had spread to a lot of places. The huge character from human heads brought massive turbulence to the Eastern Continent. Everyone knew that the ruthless Jiang Chen had appeared, and he had killed two emperors as well as the Deputy Commander of the Golden Guards with a thunderous approach. This result was indeed horrifying.

The powers who used to be Jiang Chen's enemies were feeling lucky now; they were glad they stopped being his enemies in time. If they had continued attacking Jiang Chen, their entire power might have been wiped out by Jiang Chen.

The rising wind was foreboding the coming storm. Many people were paying close attention to this. The Qi Province was facing a major disaster! The Martial Saint Dynasty and two superpowers from the Jian Province had gathered together. Everyone were wondering how they would deal with Jiang Chen.

The next day, in the depths of the night, Jiang Chen arrived in the Qi Province. Shortly after, he found Big Yellow and regrouped with the group.

“Little Chen!”

Han Yan stepped forward and gave Jiang Chen a big hug. The brothers had finally reunited; it was a happy moment.

“Brother Jiang, many mighty warriors from the Martial Saint Dynasty arrived at the Black Sect yesterday.”

Yu Zihan said.

“Did the Imperial Emperor come as well?”

Jiang Chen asked what he was most concerned about.

“I’m not sure, but I don’t think he’s here. There isn’t any Combat King aura amongst all those mighty warriors.”

Big Yellow said.

Chapter 436 – A Palace Eunuch Shouldn't Speak A Word

“How many of them came here?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“There are at least two hundred of them, and there are at least five Late Combat Soul warriors. It's a huge force, and it seems like they guessed you would attack the Black Sect, so they've prepared well. However, there is one thing I don't understand. You've killed three Late Combat Soul warriors, so they should know how strong you are by now. Under these circumstances, why would the Imperial Emperor just sit still quietly? This is strange.”

Big Yellow said, feeling puzzled.

“There's nothing strange about it at all, because the Imperial Emperor doesn't know I've returned.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“I thought you said the Seventh Emperor and Tenth Emperor's Soul Jade Slips broke? So why doesn't the Imperial Emperor know about this?”

Big Yellow was even more puzzled.

“It’s simple. The Imperial Emperor is a man who sits on the Imperial Throne. If he wants to do anything, he will just declare an Imperial Decree, and there will be someone who helps him do whatever it is he wants. Take the matter of imprisoning the Black Sect and dealing with me as an example; with the Imperial Emperor’s status, he would never do it personally, and since the Seven and Tenth Emperor were involved in this matter, that means there are more emperors and upper echelons in the Martial Saint Dynasty involved as well. Try to think about it like this; if they can’t even settle a small matter and are forced to request the Imperial Emperor’s help, it would be incredibly shameful for the man who received the Imperial Decree.”

Jiang Chen was a wise man, and there was nothing that could hide from his wisdom. From just a small trace, he was able to understand the root of the cause.

“Now I understand. Wu Lang said the person in charge of this matter is the Third Emperor, so he must have hidden the death of the Seventh and Tenth Emperor. The man who brought that massive army to the Black Sect yesterday was also the Third Emperor. It looks like he has prepared well, and is just waiting for Little Chen to arrive.”

Han Yan said as his eyes lit up. After listening to Jiang Chen’s explanation, they finally understood why the Imperial Emperor wasn’t here.

To be frank, the Imperial Emperor sat on the top, and in his eyes, Jiang Chen was just a grass root. When it comes to dealing with matters like this, there was no need for him to do it himself.

“None of the emperors from the Martial Saint Dynasty are easy targets. Every one of them are smart, and under the situation where they clearly know that I have the ability to kill them, but yet still comes here, that can only mean they’ve prepared something for me. They think they’re capable of taking me down, so I really want to see what kind of powerful approaches they have.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold sneer on his face. If they wanted to play, Jiang Chen would play with ‘em till the end. Since someone wanted to die, Jiang Chen didn’t mind being the [Black and White Impermanence](#). The stronger the enemy was; the more excited Jiang Chen became.

[TL: 黑白无常 Heibai Wuchang (Black and White Impermanence) – Two deities in charge of escorting spirits of the dead to the underworld.]

“When are you planning on going?”

Big Yellow asked.

“When the day breaks.”

Jiang Chen said with a solemn expression. The families of his friends and his sect were all imprisoned, and he had no time to waste. The battle with the Martial Saint Dynasty was unavoidable. Furthermore, with his current cultivation base, he had to take this opportunity to break through. If he just relied on ordinary cultivation methods to break through, it would take him a lot of time to break through.

“Kaka, good, let’s kill those fuckers!”

Big Yellow was very excited.

“I’ll be going alone, you guys can’t be with me.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Why?”

Han Yan didn’t understand his decision. They were up against an army, and the more people they had to help out, the better.

“You guys have other missions. Once I start fighting with them, you guys will immediately go and save Zihan and senior disciple Guan’s families. They’re being held by men from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, and I’m sure all their Late Combat Soul warriors will be at the Black Sect, and they also need some strong warriors to stay back at their main base in the Jian Province. Therefore, the forces guarding the families won’t be too strong. You will be able to save them with you few alone.”

Jiang Chen had a perfect plan that covered every aspect. He had thought this through thoroughly. Not only did they have to act quickly, they would also have to ensure the safety of the hostages. His appearance at the Black Sect would attract all the mighty warriors over, making it really simple for Han Yan and the others to save the families.

Jiang Chen's words immediately caused Yu Zihan and the other two's eyes to light up. They had been in restless state for these past few days as their families were imprisoned. However, there was nothing they could do about it. If not for the fact that there still was some rationality left in them, they might have risked their lives to save them by now. With Jiang Chen's return, their backbone had finally arrived, and it hard for them to remain calm after finding out that they were about to save their families.

“You guys will set out right now and strike when the day breaks.”

Jiang Chen instructed.

Following Jiang Chen's instruction, the four men and dog immediately left the place and started flying toward the Yu family, which was closest to them. Today, a huge storm will sweep across the entire Eastern Continent.

Time flashed by, and dawn quickly arrived. Jiang Chen arrived outside of the Black Sect.

The Black Sect was tightly secured from inside out. More than a dozen Golden Guards were stationed in front of the Black Sect's main gate. All these Golden Guards were at least Late Divine Core warriors, and three of them were Combat Soul warriors. Every one of them wore golden armor which shone brightly and gave them a mighty image.

When they saw a white-clothed youngster appearing in the

distance, these Golden Guards immediately responded.

“Stop there, who are you?”

The group leader shouted out.

“Martial Saint Dynasty’s Golden Guards, each of them is indeed an elite warrior. What a pity.”

The white-clothed youngster shook his head and let out a sigh, a pitiful look visible in his eyes.

“You, you’re Jiang Chen?”

The group leader instantly responded. He kept examining this white-clothed youngster with a name in his mind. The white-clothed youngster’s clothes and facial features were identical to the legendary Jiang Chen. Furthermore, who would intrude the Black Sect at this moment except for Jiang Chen?

“That’s why I pity you.”

After saying that, a powerful killing intent burst out from Jiang Chen’s body. He waved his hand and unleashed five dazzling flood dragons, and they immediately charged into the group of Golden Guards, instantly surrounding them all.

Roar!

Argh...

The flood dragons' roars and the Golden Guards' miserable screams mixed together. In just three breaths of time, all noise came to a complete stop. These several dozen Golden Guards were crushed into several pieces by these five flood dragons, turned into clumps of bloody mist and meat paste. It was an extremely gruesome scene.

Jiang Chen took a casual look at the scene, then said in an indifferent one, "All those who appeared in the Black Sect today, you won't live to see tomorrow."

The God of Slaughter had returned!

After killing the several dozen Golden Guards, Jiang Chen leapt into the sky above the Black Sect. He didn't feel sorry for those Golden Guards; he knew how to treat his enemies. The Golden Guards that were stationed here were prepared to kill Jiang Chen, and they were here to imprison the ones of the Black Sect. As long as their leader gave the order, they would turn into butchers and slaughter everyone in the Black Sect immediately. Therefore, Jiang Chen couldn't show them any mercy. In his mind, all those outsiders who appeared in the Black Sect deserved death.

Jiang Chen hovered above the Black Sect, looking at his statue that had been broken from the waist, clearly the work of the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. He remained floating in the sky without doing anything except intentionally leaking his

killing intent. The noise that was produced when he killed those Golden Guards was more than enough to alert everyone in the Black Sect.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

Indeed, in the moment following after when Jiang Chen appeared in the sky, numerous formidable figures started dashing out from the Black Sect and stood opposite of him. The man who stood at the front was a man in his fifties who wore a golden robe and had a striking appearance, and he was portraying an image of nobility. Jiang Chen knew that this guy could be none other than the Third Emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty. He had also met most of these Late Combat Soul warriors back in the Martial Saint Palace.

“Jiang Chen, you have finally shown yourself!”

When the Third Emperor saw Jiang Chen, he immediately shouted out.

“Of course, isn’t this what you wanted? I wonder, are you guys satisfied with the huge gift I sent here yesterday? I was planning on sending the same gift to the Imperial Emperor, only much bigger. What do you guys think?”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

As the Third Emperor and Jiang Chen were talking with loud

voices, everyone were able to hear them loud and clear. When all those disciples and elders who had lost their hope heard it, excitement immediately emerged on their faces.

“It’s senior disciple Jiang Chen! He has finally returned! This is perfect, we’re safe now!”

“Haha, senior disciple Jiang Chen is a man capable of achieving anything! I knew he wouldn’t dump us behind!”

“Let senior disciple Jiang Chen kill them all; avenge all our fellow disciples who died by the hands of our enemy!”

All the disciples of the Black Sect were extremely excited, but at the same time, they were filled with righteous indignation. During these past few days, many of the disciples had been killed after being brutally tortured. It was a miserable situation.

Within a secret isolated chamber, Daoist Black and Guo Shan were able to hear Jiang Chen’s voice as well, and they both wore startled expressions on their faces.

“He has returned at last.”

Daoist Black smiled.

“It’s obvious he’d come back; it’s his character. Furthermore, his return would be mighty one. I have all the reasons to believe that his approach will definitely shock the enemy.”

Guo Shan spoke with a smile on his face as well. Jiang Chen had surprised many people, a lot of times. In the minds of all these people; Jiang Chen was an omnipotent man.

In the sky above the Black Sect, Jiang Chen was alone faced with the massive forces of the Martial Saint Dynasty. However, from the energy he was unleashing, he was not in a disadvantageous position.

“Jiang Chen, you’ve murdered the emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty; that is a crime worthy of all your friends and family being killed! Let me give you a kind advice; surrender yourself immediately, and you might get to die quickly!”

The Third Emperor loudly said.

“What a joke. I thought the Imperial Emperor declared an Imperial Decree to have all my friends and family slaughtered? However, I do wish to see whose family and friends will eventually get slaughtered! Today, all the outsiders who have gathered in the Black Sect will have to face their deaths, just like those in the Fragrant Sky City, and I’m not joking.”

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent manner. He was now clear of the enemy’s strength. There were a total of nine Late Combat Soul warriors, indeed a powerful force. However, if they didn’t have some incredible prep, even with nine more similar warriors here, it still wouldn’t be enough to kill Jiang Chen.

“So you’re Jiang Chen. You don’t look extraordinary at all.”

The Crown Prince threw an examining glance at Jiang Chen. Compared to this young man, he felt that he was stronger in all aspects. He wondered why Yan Chenyu liked this man, and not himself.

“So you’re the Crown Prince. You're a palace eunuch, you shouldn’t speak a word.”

Jiang Chen’s words were like sharp blades poking right into the Crown Prince’s weak spot.

Chapter 437 – Jiang Chen’s Wisdom

Even though Jiang Chen had never seen the Crown Prince before, it was still very easy for him to recognize him. Having a Late Combat Soul cultivation at such a young age, as well as the qualifications to stand side by side with the emperors. In the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, only the Crown Prince fit these criteria. And secondly; the most important part, the Crown Prince’s eunuch voice was too iconic.

Jiang Chen had to admit that what Yan Chenyu did to the Crown Prince was pretty ruthless. For a man, nothing was more important than that object between his legs.

“Jiang Chen! I, the Crown Prince will kill you!”

Jiang Chen’s words caused the Crown Prince to lose his rationality. Although there was only a [one character difference](#) between eunuch and Crown Prince, the meaning behind each was completely different. Just these two characters alone were more than enough to cause the Crown Prince to lose his rationality. He immediately drew out his Golden Halberd and prepared to strike at Jiang Chen.

[TL: 太子 Taizi – Crown Prince, 太监 Taijian – Eunuch.]

“Crown Prince, take it easy!”

The Fourth Emperor who stood next to him immediately pulled the enraged Crown Prince back. They were going to use the Nine Stars Killing Formation, and the Crown Prince was an important

part of the formation, as it required nine Late Combat Soul warriors to function properly. Furthermore, although the Crown Prince had a formidable cultivation base, he was definitely not a match for Jiang Chen. And, having lost his rationality, if he just charged over like that, he might be instantly killed by Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, do you really want to save those people with just you alone? Don’t you think you are a little too overconfident?”

The Third Emperor said with a cold sneer visible on his face.

Jiang Chen simply ignored the Third Emperor, and instead kept pointing his finger at the Crown Prince. He came here today not only to kill these people, but most importantly, to save those in the Black Sect. The entire Black Sect was in the hands of his enemies, causing him to be at a disadvantage. In order to get rid of this disadvantage, he would need to ensure the safety of the people from the Black Sect; and this Crown Prince was the key to his problem.

Not only was Jiang Chen very strong, he was extraordinarily wise as well. In the midst of chaos, he functioned best; just like this situation.

“Crown Prince, being a eunuch is actually not a bad thing! At least you’re still alive! You should thank Yan Chenyu for only cutting it off and not killing you. Being a man, you should learn how to be grateful!”

Jiang Chen continued verbally attacking the Crown Prince.

Boom!

The Crown Prince was enraged even further. Jiang Chen's words were like sharp needles pricking his heart. He felt this was a great humiliation. He had already lost his most important thing, so could he still be considered a man? He was the next Imperial Emperor, but would the Martial Saint Dynasty allow a eunuch to be their Imperial Emperor? It was clearly impossible! Even if the current Imperial Emperor agreed, the Old Emperor above him would not agree. Therefore, the Crown Prince's bright future had been destroyed. He was once the Crown Prince whom everyone had admired, but now he had been reduced to a laughingstock. During these past few days, even the servants of the Martial Saint Dynasty had been looking at him in weird manners.

The Crown Prince was a lustful man, but now, when he faced his eighteen magnificent wives in the Crown Prince Palace, he simply felt no desire. Even the way his wives looked at him had changed, although, they didn't dare provoke the Crown Prince in front of him. However, the disgust in their eyes was apparent. It was as if they were telling the Crown Prince that he couldn't do it anymore.

Heavens! How could a man accept it when he was being told that he couldn't do it anymore? Most importantly, it was a fact!

"Don't be so angry! As the Crown Prince, you need to maintain a proper image! You just can't be a man anymore, however, being a woman isn't so bad either. Oh, no, I don't think you can be a woman either. Ah, never mind, even if you can't touch any women in the future, you'll still have a lot of power and authority. Perhaps

the Martial Saint Dynasty will be the first dynasty to allow a eunuch to be their Imperial Emperor...”

Jiang Chen continued provoking the Crown Prince. Each word that came out of his mouth pushed the Crown Prince closer to the border of insanity. This was a typical example of killing someone with just words.

“Shut up...!”

Without letting Jiang Chen finish speaking, the Crown Prince simply let out a loud shout, then unleashed an energy-wave that rose to the heavens from his body. The Third Emperor was impacted by this powerful energy-wave, and was instantly knocked back. The Crown Prince was a man similar to Wu Ningzhu, no ordinary Late Combat Soul warriors would be his match, let alone now that he was so furious. He was completely enraged right now, and even though the Third Emperor tried to stop him, there was just no way to stop the Crown Prince anymore.

“Not good!”

The Third Emperor was startled, and when he was finally ready to respond, the Crown Prince had already charged forward and reached Jiang Chen, all in less than the blink of an eye. The Golden Halberd in his hand had turned into a golden trail of light, creating countless ripples in the air as he descended toward Jiang Chen from high.

“This is the result I was looking for.”

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. This had been his goal all along. Jiang Chen currently had 8,000 Dragon Marks, and no warriors in the Combat Soul realm could be his match. Even an existence like the Crown Prince was no match for him.

“Hurry up and stop him!”

The Third Emperor cried out in shock. His King Weapon instantly appeared in his hand, while all the Late Combat Soul warriors desperately dashed toward Jiang Chen. The Crown Prince's impulsiveness had messed up their plan; they didn't even have the time to prepare the Nine Stars Killing Formation.

Too bad, it was too late, as Jiang Chen would never give them any chances.

The Heavenly Saint Sword appeared in Jiang Chen's hand, and it shone with bright sword energies. He swung it with tremendous force, instantly breaking the Crown Prince's golden halberd. When the Crown Prince finally realized that something wasn't right, the tip of Jiang Chen's sword had already touched his throat. As long as Jiang Chen pushed the sword a little further, the Crown Prince would immediately be killed.

At this moment, as if a bucket of cold water was poured onto the enraged Crown Prince's head, he was instantly awakened.

“No one takes a step further. If you do, I'll kill him right now.”

Jiang Chen put the Crown Prince on a tight leash with his own energy. With the Heavenly Saint Sword placed on the Crown Prince's throat, he shouted toward the Third Emperor and the others.

“Jiang Chen, take it easy!”

The Third Emperor and the group immediately stopped in their tracks. Every one of them was extremely terrified by Jiang Chen's strength. The Crown Prince was stronger than each of them here, but when faced with Jiang Chen, he didn't even have the ability to fight back. There was absolutely no way for them to save the Crown Prince with the short distance between them.

Following Jiang Chen's capture of the Crown Prince, their plan was in a huge mess right now. They were all inwardly scolding the Crown Prince for his irrational and reckless decision. However, this guy was their Crown Prince after all. Even if he was now a eunuch, he was still the Imperial Emperor's son, and if something bad really happened to him, they wouldn't be able to face the Imperial Emperor.

“Of course I'll take it easy. Let's cull all the bullshit; I want all the men from the Shangguan Clan, Myriad Sword Sect and Martial Saint Dynasty to withdraw from the Black Sect now, and all the people of the Black Sect set free. If not, I'll kill the Crown Prince right now.”

Jiang Chen said. This was the reason why he exasperated the

Crown Prince. The most important person here was the Crown Prince, and as long as he had the Crown Prince under his control, he would be able to take the initiative; he would have the token to negotiate with his enemy.

“What did you just say?”

Shangguan Sheng's expression turned pale. The Black Sect and its people was one of their most important tokens, so there was no way they could give it up just like that.

“I never repeat myself. I'll count to three now, and if you guys are still here, I will kill the Crown Prince.”

Jiang Chen slightly pushed the Heavenly Saint Sword forward, causing its razor sharp edge to cut the Crown Prince's skin, causing him to bleed. The Crown Prince's body was trembling with fear; he was now feeling a genuine threat of death coming from Jiang Chen. He did not doubt Jiang Chen's words; if this guy counted to three and these guys still didn't release his friends; the Crown Prince would die for sure.

“Jiang Chen, you are trying to exchange all the people of the Black Sect with just a single person! Don't you think this is unfair?!”

The Third Emperor's face was gloomy, and he kept scolding the Crown Prince inwardly for spoiling their plan.

“One.”

Jiang Chen simply ignored the Third Emperor’s words and started counting. After he counted to one, the Heavenly Saint Sword’s tip was pushed deeper into the Crown Prince’s throat.

The Third Emperor and the other’s expressions were all ugly. They had lost their initiative; their advantage. Exchanging the Crown Prince’s life for the lives of those in the Black Sect, although it looked like Jiang Chen was being unreasonable, they couldn’t do anything but agree with his terms.

Because it was the Crown Prince, the Imperial Emperor’s son! The Crown Prince being castrated had infuriated the Imperial Emperor, and this time, the Imperial Emperor didn’t even know that the Crown Prince was here with them. If the Crown Prince was killed here, these guys would have to face the Imperial Emperor’s fury when they returned.

“Two!”

A fierce look could be seen in Jiang Chen’s eyes. The ice-cold killing intent leaking from his body was more than enough to kill an elephant. The Third Emperor and the others had no doubts; once Jiang Chen counted to three, the Crown Prince’s life would end right here.

“Jiang Chen, if you dare kill the Crown Prince, I can guarantee you that everyone in the Black Sect will die!”

Tiangang Yi threatened with a loud voice.

“You better give it a try! Three!”

Jiang Chen resolutely counted to three. After that, the Heavenly Saint Sword’s tip started pulsating.

“Stop! I agree with your terms, I’ll let all of them go!”

The Third Emperor quickly shouted. No matter what, the Crown Prince could not die here!

Jiang Chen let out a sigh of relief after hearing what the Third Emperor said. It looked like the Crown Prince’s life was still extremely valuable.

“Jiang Chen, we’ll set all the people of the Black Sect free. I hope you can honor your words and spare the Crown Prince’s life.”

The Third Emperor said.

“Of course, I’m a trustworthy person.”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile. He put away the Heavenly Saint Sword and grabbed the Crown Prince’s neck as if he was grabbing a tiny chicken. The Crown Prince’s face was twisted with a gloomy expression. The fight between him and Jiang Chen allowed him to learn one thing; he who claimed to be the number

one genius of the Eastern Continent was just a joke; he was indeed no match for Jiang Chen.

“Third Emperor, are we really going to release all the people?”

Shangguan Sheng asked.

“Yes. The Crown Prince’s life is more important than anything else.”

The Third Emperor said. After that, he informed all the people here through his divine sense, “Listen up; prepare the Nine Stars Killing Formation secretly. Once we’ve withdrawn from the Black Sect and Jiang Chen has released the Crown Prince, we’ll activate the formation immediately and trap him within. I have a King Weapon with me, so we don’t have to fear him. Our main goal today is Jiang Chen, not the Black Sect. Once we’ve killed him, we’ll be able to kill the rest of his friends.”

His words immediately caused everyone to begin preparing the Nine Stars Killing Formation secretly. The Third Emperor’s words were correct. As long as they killed Jiang Chen, there was no way for the Black Sect to escape its fate.

Chapter 438 – Rescue Mission

“Everyone from the Martial Saint Dynasty, Shangguan Clan, and Myriad Sword Sect; withdraw from the Black Sect at once, no delays!”

The Third Emperor’s voice echoed across the sky. After receiving the order, all the men who were standing guard in the Black Sect flew into the sky and arrived behind the Third Emperor.

When the people of the Black Sect heard the order, they were startled for a moment, but excitement followed shortly afterwards, especially after seeing that those men who had imprisoned them were leaving one after the other. The pressure surrounding them was instantly released, and the humiliation and pain they had suffered all these days had finally disappeared. Someone even started crying tears of joy on the spot.

“Why are these people suddenly leaving?”

“Idiot, do you still have to ask this question? It must be because of senior disciple Jiang Chen! He is an amazing man; just he alone is enough to make everyone from the Martial Saint Dynasty withdraw! He is the idol of our generation!”

“Haha, I told you that senior disciple Jiang Chen would definitely come and rescue us! Let me tell you, senior disciple Jiang Chen is a man capable of achieving anything! He has created countless miracles and legendary accomplishments! I believe that one day, senior disciple Jiang Chen will be capable of toppling the entire

Martial Saint Dynasty, and that that time; the Black Sect will be the ultimate existence of the Eastern Continent!”

.....

Everyone were extremely excited. Happiness had just struck them without any prior signs; they didn’t even have the chance to react accordingly.

Within the deepest area of the Black Sect, inside the secret room where Daoist Black and Guo Shan were imprisoned, two Combat Soul warriors were still hiding. They were from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, and they had just received a message from Shangguan Sheng asking them to hide here and closely watch Daoist Black and Guo Shan, as these two men could still be used after the Crown Prince was released.

“Didn’t you two hear that? Your master asked you to retreat from here.”

Daoist Black said with a smile on his face.

“Shut up!”

A man scolded, slapping Daoist Black’s face.

“Hmph! You can never hide your tricks from Jiang Chen.”

Guo Shan coldly harrumphed. He knew what kind of man Jiang Chen was. Jiang Chen was a man who thought of every aspect, so Shangguan Sheng's dirty little trick would never succeed.

Above the Black Sect, under the Third Emperor's leader, the group of over three hundred men unleashed their energy. Every single one of them was staring angrily at Jiang Chen. Faced with this powerful army, not many men could remain calm.

Prince Wu Cong who stood behind the Third Emperor was looking at Jiang Chen while gnashing his teeth in anger. Jiang Chen had killed his father, giving birth to an even greater resentment. However, at the same time, he felt helpless. After leaving the Island of Ice, the gap between him and Jiang Chen had grown much, much bigger. Now, they were simply not playing on the same field, and it was nearly impossible for him to avenge his father now. He could only depend on the Third Emperor.

“Jiang Chen, we've withdrawn from the Black Sect. Can you let the Crown Prince go now?”

The Third Emperor said.

“There is still someone in there. Don't try to play this dirty little trick on your father. Let me tell you this; my patience is limited, and don't you dare think that I won't dare kill this Crown Prince. If I want to kill him, it will be no different from crushing an ant with my finger.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold look in his eyes. He was cultivating

the Great Soul Derivation skill, giving him incredibly sharp senses. It was just like Guo Shan said; Shangguan Sheng's dirty little tricks was completely useless in front of him.

“En?”

The Third Emperor turned to Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi with a frown visible on his face. Shangguan Sheng's face immediately darkened as he thought to himself that Jiang Chen was indeed an amazing man; a man who was extremely difficult to deal with. The two men he had arranged to hide were Combat Soul warriors who were experts at hiding, but Jiang Chen just remained floating in the same spot, and he could still sense their existence. This level of sense was really frightening.

“Come out now!”

Shangguan Sheng shouted out. The two men immediately flew out from the Black Sect and arrived next to Shangguan Sheng.

In the Black Sect, Daoist Black and Guo Shan exchanged glances. They couldn't help but smile at each other.

“We didn't misjudge him.”

Daoist Black said.

“Sect Chief, do you think we should go out and witness how strong brother Jiang has become now? And how he forced the

Martial Saint Dynasty to withdraw?”

Guo Shan said, a smile visible on his face.

The two men casually tidied up their messy clothes and left the secret room. After leaving, they could immediately see Jiang Chen hovering above the Black Sect, and his grip there was a handsome young man. With just him alone, he was facing a formidable army of over a few hundred mighty warrior. However, his face was calm, and no signs of panicking could be seen on him.

“Jiang Chen, can you release the Crown Prince now? All of our men have retreated from the Black Sect.”

The Third Emperor tried his best to suppress the fury in his heart. Today's battle caused him to feel extremely frustrated. Everything had been completely different from what he had imagined. Before the battle had even started, his side had been greatly pinned down. Each person here was of great status, but now, a young man was leading them by the nose, causing them all to feel frustrated.

“What a joke. If I let him go now, I'm sure you'll start the war with me straight away, and the Black Sect will suffer because of that. I, Jiang Chen am not afraid of you. We were destined to fight to the death sooner or later. I know about a desolate mountain about 300 miles away from here; we'll have our battle there, what do you think?”

Jiang Chen suggested. There was no way he could avoid the life and death battle with the men in front of him; this battle was

unavoidable. This was also the reason why Jiang Chen appeared; he could only have a peace of mind after annihilating all these enemies.

Since he had the Crown Prince in his hand now, the advantage was with him. He had to move the entire battlefield to another place, and if he didn't do that, the entire Black Sect would be caught in the crossfire. With so many mighty warriors fighting here, just the shockwaves from the battle would alone be enough to destroy the entire Black Sect.

“Fine, I agree with you.”

The Third Emperor agreed to the situation without a second thought. Jiang Chen wished for the same thing as he did. He was worried that Jiang Chen would use the Crown Prince to continue threaten them, and try to avoid the battle. He didn't think that Jiang Chen would actually suggest fighting to the death; which was exactly what the Third Emperor wanted.

“Since that is the case, after you.”

Jiang Chen said.

The Third Emperor then led the army of over three hundred men into the distance, while Jiang Chen followed after with Crown Prince in hand.

“Look, they're all gone!”

“Did you hear that? Senior disciple Jiang Chen is going to have a life and death battle with all of them!”

“Oh heavens! There are so many mighty warriors, but senior disciple is going to fight them alone? Can he really defeat them?”

“Never underestimate senior disciple Jiang Chen’s ability! Didn’t he just save us? Before this, did you ever think that senior disciple Jiang Chen would be able to save us from so many mighty warriors?”

.....

All the disciples of the Black Sect were discussing the matter amongst each other.

Right at this moment, Daoist Black and Guo Shan flew into the sky. With a loud voice, Daoist Black said, “No one is allowed to step out from the Black Sect.”

After that, the two men flew in the same direction as Jiang Chen, following into the far distance. This was going to be a grand battle, and now that these two men had finally been freed from captivity, they had to witness it by themselves.

Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi flew along the way with pale faces. The reason they spent so much effort to imprison the entire Black Sect was to lure Jiang Chen out. Now, Jiang Chen had indeed

shown up, but the result was completely different from what they had expected. Not only had they lost their chance to take the initiative, they had also lost their bargaining chips.

However, they did still have some bargaining chips in their hands. Yu Zihan and the other men's families were still in the control of both superpowers, and they might be of good use during the final moments of this upcoming battle.

However, their plan was destined to become an empty hope.

.....

Yellowstone Region, Yu family!

The dawn had just arrived, but miserable screams could still be heard from the Yu family. It was the men from the Shangguan Clan who were here to keep the Yu family in captivity. The man who was in charge here was Shangguan Yu, an Early Combat Soul warrior. Together with him was an Early Combat Soul warrior. Beside him, there were also ten Divine Core warriors and thirty Heavenly Core warriors.

This group of a bit more than 40 men had been instructed by Shangguan Sheng to keep the Yu family in captivity. In their minds, the Yu family was too weak. So weak that they couldn't even withstand a single blow from any of them. Guarding these people was really boring, so during these past few day, the men from the Shangguan Clan had been releasing their boredom on these people, causing miserable screams to escape from the Yu

family grounds. Someone would die every single day.

A few figures were quietly approaching the Yu family. When they heard the miserable screams coming from the Yu family, Yu Zihan's eyes immediately turned red.

“Be patient. Let me sneak into the Yu family and find out about our current situation first. I'll kill the men who imprisoned your dad. You guys just wait for my command before attacking.”

Big Yellow said.

“Alright.”

Yu Zihan nodded his head. They were confident in Big Yellow. Since they were here with the purpose of rescuing these people, if they ended up just storming in, their enemies would certainly take the most important people of the Yu family hostage, and if that ended up being the case, they would be pinned down.

Therefore, Big Yellow wanted to sneak into the Yu family and ensure the safety of the most important people of the Yu family, and only kill the ones from the Shangguan Clan after that.

In a flash, Big Yellow instantly vanished from where he was. His gigantic and majestic looking body started shrinking, and when he entered the Yu family, he had transformed into the size of a human palm. Big Yellow was an expert at hiding himself, and together with his incredible speed, there was no way the enemy could find

him

Right in the center area of the Yu family, two Divine Core warriors were in charge of guarding Yu Tianlong and Yu Ziyan. All the people of the Yu family were tied up tightly with ropes and imprisoned in a hall. These two bored Divine Core warriors were talking to each other, when a golden beam suddenly appeared in the hall.

“What is that?”

A man cried out in shock and threw his glance over at the golden light. What he saw was the golden light transforming into a big and majestic looking big yellow dog.

“Not good, it’s Big Yellow!”

The two men had a bad feeling about this. The Jiang Chen and Big Yellow duo was well known by everyone, and this dog was known to be a fierce and brutal existence. Since he had suddenly appeared here, he must obviously be up to something bad.

“Enemy attack!”

The Divine Core warrior responded quickly, he immediately shouted out.

“Kaka, you will all have to die!”

Big Yellow burst into laughter. He didn't prevent the two men from calling for help. Not only that, he himself was roaring out as he leapt toward the two men. The fate of these two men had been decided when Big Yellow entered this hall.

Outside, when Han Yan and the others heard Big Yellow's loud roar, they immediately launched their attack.

Chapter 439 – Nine Stars Killing Formation

A miserable scream followed right after someone shouted that an enemy was attacking. The men from the Shangguan Clan were rushing out from where they were, and the people of the Yu family finally felt as if they had seen the rays of hope. Their gloomy faces began shining brightly.

If the Shangguan Clan saw it as an enemy attack, the people of the Yu family would see it as a rescue.

Swoosh, swoosh!

Two extremely strong figures dashed out from where they were and started rushing toward the source of the enemy attack. Both of them were Combat Soul warriors, and the leading man was Shangguan Yu.

The ‘enemy attack’ call came from the place where they had imprisoned the most important people of the Yu family. These two men couldn’t just neglect this.

Boom!

However, before these two men could make it to that place, they heard a loud noise coming from outside the Yu family grounds. After that, four figures filled with tremendous killing intent suddenly appeared.

“Stop it right there, who are you?!”

Two Heavenly Core warriors from the Shangguan Clan stopped in front of these four men, shouting loudly at Han Yan and the others.

“We’re the ones who will kill you scumbags!”

With both eyes extremely bloodshot, Yu Zihan immediately unleashed an attack with his sword.

The two Heavenly Core warriors didn’t even have the chance to respond. They were instantly chopped in half by Yu Zihan’s sword, causing their blood to splash all over the place.

Yu Zihan was furious. He was constantly unleashing his energy as he rushed toward the inner area of the Yu family. He had been waiting for this day for so long.

“Hmph! We’ve finally lured them out!”

Shangguan Yu coldly harrumphed. He turned to the Combat Soul warrior next to him and said, “Old Sixth, bring our men and arrest them! I’ll have a look inside.”

After saying that, Shangguan Yu turned around and flew toward the inner area of the Yu family. The miserable screams that came from the inner area really worried him. No matter what, he had to check it out himself.

On the other side, Old Sixth brought a few dozen of the people from the Shangguan Clan to greet the intruders.

“Who are you guys?”

Old Sixth asked loudly.

“I’m the young master of the Yu family, Yu Zihan! I’m here to take away your dog life!”

Yu Zihan didn’t say much. After giving out his name, he simply leapt forward and prepared to attack. Guan Yiyun and Tian Yishan followed on both sides. The trio unleashed killing intent all the way into the heavens. They had no words to give to these people from the Shangguan Clan; slaughtering them was the best option.

“Since you’ve come to die, that’s just great! Men, kill them all!”

Old Sixth resolutely ordered. He simply did not put Yu Zihan and the other two men in his eyes. In an instant, all the Divine Core warriors from the Shangguan Clan waved their combat weapons in an imposing manner, then charged toward Yu Zihan and the other two men.

Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan would never show any mercy. The trio wielded their combat weapons, and following the appearance of some bright lights and some miserable screams, three Divine Core warriors from the Shangguan Clan were directly

sliced in half, and died on the spot.

They were unable to withstand a single blow. Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, and Tian Yishan were all Late Divine Core warriors. Not only that, they were also extraordinary geniuses of the younger generation. Although they were still no match for any Combat Soul warriors, they were able to defeat almost anyone in the same realm and stage as themselves.

“You actually dared kill them?! You’re seeking death!”

Old Sixth was furious. He unleashed a palm attack toward Yu Zihan and the other two men, but his attack was blocked by another attack that came from his side. He immediately turned and saw a young man with white hair and blue clothes in front of him, a cold grin visible on the man’s face.

“Your opponent is me.”

It was Han Yan who attacked him just now, as this Combat Soul warrior was his target.

Clang!

As if Old Sixth knew Han Yan wouldn’t be easy to handle, he immediately retrieved his combat weapon and slashed it toward Han Yan.

“In order to kill you, I only need to strike once.”

Han Yan said in a cold tone. He waved his hand and unleashed a black devil dragon which carried tremendous devilish energy. In the follow moment, Han Yan transformed into a devil king. His powerful Ancient Divine Devil Physique was not something that a warrior in the same realm and stage as him could take on.

Argh...

Old Sixth immediately let out a miserable scream as his body was impaled by the devil dragon. In order for Han Yan to kill him; he needed but a single strike.

Right when Old Sixth let out a miserable scream, another horrifying cry could be heard from the inner area of the Yu family. Even though all the people of the Shangguan Clan were greatly terrified, they could still recognize their leader, Shangguan Yu's voice. This meant that both Combat Soul warriors had been struck by a miserable fate at the same time.

Indeed. Right when Old Sixth body fell from the sky, a majestic looking big yellow dog came sprinting into the scene, carrying a human head in his mouth.

What happened caused all the people of the Shangguan Clan to nearly be frightened to death. Both Combat Soul warriors had been killed, so how were they going to fight? With their strength, how were they supposed to be a match for these beings who were as ferocious as tigers and wolves?

“I give up, we surrender!”

Someone shouted.

“We don’t accept surrenders.”

Yu Zihan’s words immediately decided the fate of these people.

Following a few miserable screams, all the people of the Shangguan Clan had been killed; none of them spared, as they were all enemies, and potential threats in the future. After the Yu family had been imprisoned, many of their people had died by the Shangguan Clan’s hands. There was no way they would spare the lives of these executioners.

After killing all the people of the Shangguan Clan, Yu Zihan didn’t even have time to reunite with his family. They just left the place straightaway, because their next goal was to rescue Guan Yiyun’s family.

They had to act fast, taking the opportunity where Jiang Chen was entangled with the enemies in the Black Sect to settle everything here.

On the other side, Jiang Chen, the Third Emperor, and the others had arrived in the sky above a desolate mountain range hundreds of miles away from the Black Sect. This was a perfect spot for battle.

“Jiang Chen, can you let the Crown Prince go now?”

The Third Emperor asked in a cold tone.

“Of course. I am a trustworthy man. Moreover, killing this eunuch will only dirty my hands.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand and threw the Crown Prince over with tremendous force. He didn't kill the Crown Prince, and he didn't even hurt him, because he really wanted to see what kind of plan the Third Emperor had prepared for him. Jiang Chen did not fear fighting, in fact, he liked fighting, and he loved a challenging battle.

He needed to borrow external pressure to push himself to a higher level.

“Prepare the formation!”

The Third Emperor immediately shouted out. All the other men had long ago been prepared for this moment. They immediately started moving into their positions, and the nine Late Combat Soul warriors stood at predetermined position. It was a formation with a pattern of nine stars that surrounded Jiang Chen. As for the remaining few hundred men, they had also gathered around to become a part of the formation.

The Crown Prince's hatred for Jiang Chen had risen to the heavens, as Jiang Chen said killing him would only dirty his

hands. This statement was a huge insult to the Crown Prince. However, he didn't lose his rationality this time. He had already tasted Jiang Chen's frightening strength, and he knew that in order to kill Jiang Chen, they would have to make use of the Nine Stars Killing Formation and King Weapon; they had to work together. If the Crown Prince acted recklessly like before, he would only face certain death.

“Nine Stars Killing Formation?”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. The Nine Stars Killing Formation was a formation that connected nine mighty warriors. It had the ability to concentrate all their combat strength together to defeat their enemy. All the Golden Guards were part of the formation as well; they served the purpose of supplying endless energy to the formation.

The Nine Stars Killing Formation use the same principles as all the other killing formations. With Jiang Chen's experience and judgment, he could easily tell that it was set up flawlessly.

“You actually know about this formation?”

The Third Emperor was obviously startled, and he couldn't help but change the way he looked at Jiang Chen. He never thought that Jiang Chen would be able to recognize the formation he had prepared with just a single look.

Chapter 440 – The Dumbest Way Of Fighting

The Third Emperor couldn't help but feel shocked. He wasn't alone, even all the other men were dumbfounded by Jiang Chen. The Nine Stars Killing Formation was their secret weapon, and they had prepared this specifically for Jiang Chen. However, they never expected Jiang Chen to have such amazing knowledge, enough to let him recognize this formation with but a single look.

So, since Jiang Chen had the ability to recognize the Nine Stars Killing Formation with just a single look, could he also know how to break this formation? At this moment, these extremely confident men started feeling uncertain. After all, this monster in front of them was too miraculous, it was as if everything was possible with him.

However, there was no way they could back out in the current situation. In this group of more than a few hundred men, each and every single one was an elite existence from the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the emperors and the Crown Prince even represented the Martial Saint Dynasty's face. If this incredible group was forced back by a single person, it would be incredibly shameful.

Furthermore, they still had another secret weapon; the King Weapon in the Third Emperor's possession. As Late Combat Soul warriors who were only one step away from the Combat King realm, they all knew how frightening a King Weapon was.

“The Nine Stars Killing Formation is just an ordinary killing formation, why are you so surprised that I can recognize it?”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders and spoke in a casual manner. His words caused the Third Emperor's expression to twist. The Nine Stars Killing Formation was an extremely mystical, advanced, and rare killing formation, and it was very difficult for him to prepare it. Not only that, only a handful of people in the Eastern Continent had the ability to prepare this formation.

However, when it came to Jiang Chen, this frightening killing formation just became an ordinary formation. Wasn't this a huge blow to their faces?

Of course, little to their knowledge, Jiang Chen was not being boastful. Perhaps the Nine Stars Killing Formation was a superb killing formation in their eyes, but in Jiang Chen's eyes, it really was just an ordinary formation. After all, their experiences were vastly different, and the places they had been to were not the same. Compared to the Five Elemental Killing Formation prepared by those superpowers in the Divine Continent, this Nine Stars Killing Formation was extremely weak.

"Hmph! Jiang Chen, I have to admit that you are indeed a peerless genius who can't even be found in ten thousand years! However, since you have chosen to be the enemy of the Martial Saint Dynasty, you are destined to walk a path of certain death! Although you possess formidable combat strength, enough to let you kill any Late Combat Soul warrior; when faced with your current situation, do you still think you can escape death? My advice to you is to surrender right now, and you might be spared from all the pain! And, if sincerely pledge your guilt, the Imperial Emperor might show enough mercy to retract the Imperial

Decree to slaughter all your friends and family.”

The Third Emperor said.

“If I was you, I wouldn’t waste my breath.”

Jiang Chen said. He unleashed his energy in tsunami-like waves from his body, causing his black hair to flutter. His fighting spirit was unparalleled, and his bones were producing cracking sounds. This Nine Stars Killing Formation didn’t make him feel afraid, it actually stimulated his will to fight.

“If that’s the case, we won’t be courteous anymore. Kill him!”

The Third Emperor shouted. All nine Late Combat Soul warriors immediately unleashed their energy at the same time. At this moment, the entire sky above the desolate mountain range was filled with deadly energy waves. Countless rainbow-colored beams shout out from the Nine Stars Killing Formation. Each beam was like a razor sharp blade, and it cut through the air, producing cracking sounds along its path.

The sky was filled with killing intent. The combined force of nine Late Combat Soul warriors, as well as a few hundred frightening warriors continuously supplying them with endless energy. This was indeed a horrifying formation, and it could easily make anyone feel numb just by thinking about it.

In the distance, Daoist Black and Guo Shan raised their heads to

look at the situation on the battleground. Both of their faces had turned pale, and even when watching from so far away, they still couldn't help but tremble and feel suffocated.

“This formation is too strong, let's back off some more! If not, we might get caught in the crossfire when they start fighting.”

Daoist Black reminded. He pulled Guo Shan and continued moving back. Faced with a battlefield like this, with their strength, they would feel their hearts trembling just by watching from afar. Let alone having to stand right in the middle of the battlefield.

“Damn it! Nine Late Combat Soul warriors, a dozen other Combat Soul warriors, and over two hundred Divine Core warriors! Perhaps the Martial Saint Dynasty is the only power that can utilize this huge formation! Brother Jiang Chen is really amazing, although he is facing this formation all by himself, I can see no signs of fear on his face.”

Guo Shan said with a sigh. This was an exciting battlefield. Just watching from afar made his blood boil, it felt to him as if Jiang Chen was fighting everyone underneath the heavens all by himself. If Jiang Chen survived today's battle, his reputation in the Eastern Continent would definitely move up to another level.

“I wonder if Jiang Chen can withstand such a massive formation.”

Daoist Black was still worried. Although he knew that Jiang Chen was very powerful, the opponent's formation was simply too

frightening.

“I am very confident in brother Jiang. Sect Chief, let’s have a bet. One day, with Jiang Chen’s reputation, the Black Sect will definitely stand on top of the Eastern Continent.”

Guo Shan’s eyes shone brightly as he spoke. Although it was just a mere fantasy right now, it wasn’t something that was completely impossible.

The Nine Stars Killing Formation had been activated, and all the energy was being channeled into the Third Emperor’s body. Right at this moment, the Third Emperor felt as if his body was about to explode because of all the powerful energy. He raised his head toward the sky and let out a loud roar. This powerful feeling really amazed him.

“Jiang Chen, I don’t believe I can’t kill you in my current form! Take this; Heavenly Imperial Finger!”

The Third Emperor’s voice echoed across the sky like a loud clap of thunder. He pointed his finger toward Jiang Chen and unleashed a finger attack containing tremendous force. A huge golden finger carrying the Imperial might then appeared. This huge finger looked like one of the pillars that supported the heavens, and it had more than enough force to destroy a huge mountain.

“Hmph! You want to use a finger skill against me? Your crude Heavenly Imperial Finger is too weak! Have a look at my Six Solar

Fingers!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed as he raised both his hands. His finger shone brightly with a golden light as he forcefully pointed them forward. In an instant, six bright and huge fingers appeared, and then instantly merged into one to then charge toward the Third Emperor’s Heavenly Imperial Finger.

Boom!

The two huge fingers collided with each other. The shockwaves that came from the collision caused the color of both heaven and earth to change. A mountain underneath was hit by the aftershock, and was instantly turned to dust. This level of fighting could no longer be described as just frightening.

Tap, tap, tap...

Hit by the Heavenly Imperial Finger’s tremendous force, Jiang Chen was forced to take a few dozen steps back before he could stabilize his body. He could feel his qi and blood violently trembling within his body; causing him to feel unwell. After merging with the Nine Stars Killing Formation, although the Third Emperor’s strength wasn’t at a Combat King’s level, he had the combat strength of someone just half a step away from the Combat King realm. Jiang Chen was only an Early Combat Soul warrior, so of course, he was no match for this attack.

The situation made the Third Emperor and everyone else feel excited. It looked like the Nine Stars Killing Formation was

stronger than what they had expected, as Jiang Chen seemed to be no match for it. However, although they were surprised, they were also shocked. The Third Emperor now possessed everyone's combat strength, which made him incredibly powerful, while Jiang Chen was only an Early Combat Soul warriors. However, not only did this attack not kill him, it didn't even seem to hurt him. Just how frightening was this incredibly monstrous youngster be?

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you should surrender now and stop with your useless struggle!”

The Third Emperor started laughing. He felt truly powerful now. It was a feeling that only a Combat King warrior felt; sitting on the top, capable of achieving anything; controlling everything he wanted.

A faint smile appeared on Jiang Chen's face. This situation was one he had expected, and this was the reason why he set the Crown Prince free and didn't hurt him. In fact, if Jiang Chen really wanted to break this Nine Stars Killing Formation, he had a lot of methods.

It was extremely easy for him to break this Nine Stars Killing Formation. The synergy between these nine men couldn't be perfect, so there must be a loophole in this formation. Jiang Chen could cut the connection between the formation and those 300 warriors first, and then defeat all nine men one by one according to their weakness. Within ten minutes, he would be able to break this Nine Stars Killing Formation.

However, Jiang Chen didn't choose to break this formation; he

chose to face it with force. This was because he needed the pressure coming from the formation.

If it was under normal circumstances, this pressure would be useless to him. However, it was different now, as the Dragon Transformation skill was at the brink of transforming. Back in the Fragrant Sky City, it had given him a thousand new Dragon Marks, but the transformation had yet to finish. This was a rare opportunity for Jiang Chen, so he wanted to use the Nine Stars Killing Formation's pressure to stimulate the Dragon Transformation skill, causing its potential to erupt underneath the extreme pressure and complete its real transformation.

This was Jiang Chen's biggest goal.

Initially, Jiang Chen thought that the Imperial Emperor would come here personally. With that, Jiang Chen would have to fight for his life, and complete his transformation under the pressure coming from the Imperial Emperor. However, since the Imperial Emperor was a real Combat King warrior, it was a huge risk to fight with him.

As for this Nine Stars Killing Formation prepared by the Third Emperor, it was just perfect for Jiang Chen, and he really liked it. His current strength wasn't good enough for him to take on a Combat King warrior, but a collision like this with someone who had the strength of someone just half a step from the Combat King realm was just perfect for him, and he could only get the result he was looking for with this.

In fact, after the collision between himself and the Heavenly

Imperial Finger just now, Jiang Chen's Dragon Transformation skill had begun circulating at high speed.

“What a joke, does it seem like I'm struggling to you guys? Nine Murdering Flood Dragons!”

Jiang Chen showed no signs of fear. Faced with this formidable group, he took the initiative to launch an attack. He waved his arms and unleashed a few deadly flood dragons that swept toward the Third Emperor. He didn't target anyone other than the strongest Third Emperor. This kind of fighting method was not one the Third Emperor had expected.

According to the Third Emperor's thoughts, Jiang Chen would certainly choose to defeat each of them one by one, and wouldn't dare fight him face to face. But unexpectedly, Jiang Chen did fight him face to face. This was the dumbest way of fighting. However, this was basically the most perfect scenario in the Third Emperor's mind. He wanted to use his mighty strength to kill Jiang Chen on the spot.

Boom!

It was a violent battle, and after another collision, Jiang Chen had once again been knocked away. This time, blood could be seen on Jiang Chen's lips, and his aura was in disorder.

In the distance, Daoist Black and Guo Shan were both shocked by what they saw.

“Why is Jiang Chen fighting in such a dumb way? This doesn’t look like his fighting style at all!”

Daoist Black was dumbfounded by what he saw. With his knowledge regarding Jiang Chen, this was definitely not Jiang Chen’s style.

“Jiang Chen has always been a smart man, so can’t he tell that if he keeps fighting like this, he will only end up in a bad position?”

Daoist Black just couldn’t understand.

“Don’t worry, I’m sure brother Jiang has his own reasons for fighting like this.”

Guo Shan’s confidence in Jiang Chen still remained strong.

Chapter 441 – The Undefeatable Cockroach

Underneath the Nine Stars Killing Formation, Jiang Chen acted like an ancient barbarian beast who had gone on a rampage, constantly unleashing attacks without any consideration for own safety. As a result, he was constantly coughing up blood after getting hit by the Third Emperor. It was a frightening scene, and Jiang Chen was obviously in a disadvantageous position. It even looked like his life was at risk. However, neither the Third Emperor nor any of the other men felt happy about this.

“Damn it, just what exactly is that guy made of?! Why can he still fight in such high spirits after getting hurt so much? He’s just like a cockroach who can never be killed! Are we looking at a ghost?”

The Third Emperor was feeling gloomy. He had never seen someone fight this crazily before. Jiang Chen was fighting as if his life was worthless; as if he was actually a crazy person. Although the Third Emperor had the strength of someone half a step away from the Combat King realm, and Jiang Chen was no match for him; the more the Third Emperor fought, the more nerve-racking this fight became for him. He was able to inflict injuries upon Jiang Chen every time they exchanged attacks, but he was unable to kill Jiang Chen.

As for Jiang Chen, he was currently in a very mystical smite. His body was extremely powerful as a result of cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, and after having his body further tempered by the Heavenly Tribulation, his body had been further tempered to an unimaginable level. Therefore, the injuries he had suffered were purely superficial.

Little to the Third Emperor's knowledge, Jiang Chen was actually not fighting right now. He was using the pressure to squeeze out his potential; using it to stimulate the transformation of the Dragon Transformation skill.

Right at this moment, the Dragon Transformation skill was circulated at great speed. It was circulating as if it would never stop. Each time Jiang Chen unleashed an attack, new Dragon Marks would form in his body. In just a very short amount of time, he had managed to form another 500 Dragon Marks in his body. These Dragon Marks were formed from stimulating his potential, and their quality was much greater than those formed from absorbing demon souls. Forming Dragon Marks with this kind of method, no matter how many Dragon Marks he formed, Jiang Chen's foundation wouldn't be affected at all.

After experiencing the first transformation of the Dragon Transformation skill, Jiang Chen had gained some precious experiences. He knew how frightening the Dragon Transformation was when it transformed, and it would bring him unimaginable benefits. Putting aside the fact that he might obtain some new innate true dragon skills, just the Dragon Marks he obtained were of incredibly good benefit to his cultivation.

This time, the Dragon Transformation skill was on the verge of transforming for the second time. Of course, Jiang Chen wouldn't let go of such a rare opportunity. Since the Nine Stars Killing Formation was concentrating the combat strength of all these people into one person, giving him the strength of a half step Combat King warrior, Jiang Chen would definitely maximize his gains.

Little to the Third Emperor and the other men's knowledge, not only were their attacks not injuring Jiang Chen, they were actually pushing Jiang Chen to a higher level.

“Haha, give me more...!”

Jiang Chen was laughing out loudly as he attacked with all his ability. He even had the Firethorn Combat Armor covering his body, and both his hands covered with blood red dragon scales. After that, he simply unleashed the True Dragon Palm toward the Third Emperor. Although Jiang Chen wanted to use the pressure from this intense battle to stimulate the Dragon Transformation skill, he had to fight with all his strength as well. If not, he might suffer some severe injuries.

Furthermore, using his combat skills under such intense pressure was also a way to train himself.

“I refuse to believe I can't kill you! Overturning Heaven Seal!”

The Third Emperor's eyes had turned red. Jiang Chen's stubbornness really frustrated him. He didn't believe he couldn't kill this guy. Without hesitating, he unleashed one of the Martial Saint Dynasty's most frightening combat skills; the Overturning Heaven Seal. This skill was much stronger than the Heavenly Imperial Finger, and with the Third Emperor's cultivation base, he was now able to unleash the Overturning Heaven Seal at its maximum strength.

Boom!

The atmosphere was trembling as a gigantic golden seal appeared in the sky. The seal looked like a treasure mountain, and its surface was covered with mystical symbols. When it appeared, it immediately descended toward Jiang Chen's True Dragon Palm.

The ground and the nearby mountains were all shaking. Although the Nine Stars Killing Formation was still standing solid, the mountain range underneath it had been shattered by the tremendous force. Numerous mountains had turned into dust, leaving behind countless huge craters on the ground, and smoke constantly rising from them.

Jiang Chen once again coughed out a mouthful of blood after being hit by the Overturning Heaven Seal. However, it didn't change his expression, it only made him seem crazier.

“Haha... let's keep fighting!”

Jiang Chen's laughter appeared similar to the roaring thunder of the Ninth Heavens. His black hair was dancing in the wind, and fresh blood was flowing down from his lips. His eyes were glowing with scorching heat, and his hands were fully covered with dragon scales, and his nails had turned into extremely frightening razor sharp dragon claws. At this moment, Jiang Chen seemed like a lunatic, an unparalleled lunatic. All that was left in his eyes was fighting spirit, a fighting spirit that was constantly rising toward the heavens, turning into a steaming flame that drove him forward.

Roar!

A dragon's cry emerged from Jiang Chen's mouth. Following the continuously transforming Dragon Transformation skill, as well as the constant increment of Dragon Marks in his body, Jiang Chen's dragon cry had started resembling the genuine might of a dragon.

“That lunatic, how can he be so difficult to defeat?”

Shangguan Sheng's expression turned extremely ugly as well.

“Damn it, how can he be so strong?! Is he still a human?!”

The Crown Prince was gnashing his teeth in anger. Although his hatred of Jiang Chen was enough to reach the heavens, and he felt a strong desire to just devour Jiang Chen, he had to admit that when compared to Jiang Chen, there was a huge gap between them, even though the Crown Prince had claimed to be the number one genius of the Eastern Continent.

“We need to kill this guy as soon as possible! If not, there will be no end to trouble in the future!”

Tiangang Yi was shocked. An unparalleled lunatic like this, if he hadn't witnessed it himself, he wouldn't have believed it even if he was beaten to death.

“Kill him, we must kill him, we have to avenge my dad!”

Wu Cong stood behind the Third Emperor and was constantly supplying his Yuan energy into the Nine Stars Killing Formation, supporting the operation of the formation with all his effort. Jiang Chen indeed a frightening existence. In their eyes, he was no longer a human, but a peerless monster.

Boom...

Jiang Chen continued unleashing attacks. Every time he attacked, he would be knocked back by the Third Emperor's powerful counterattack, and he would be injured each time and forced to cough out some blood. However, it was as if he would never run out of blood, as if his combat strength would stay at his peak for all eternity. His entire body shone with a scorching hot light, causing him to look like a blazing sun that would never dim.

Right now, Jiang Chen had a total of 9,000 Dragon Marks in his body, only 1,000 away from the 10,000 mark. Jiang Chen was getting closer and closer to the Mid Combat Soul realm with each minute passing by.

Jiang Chen's face was filled with excitement. Currently, he only wished that the Third Emperor would not stop attacking, and let the Nine Stars Killing Formation keep running like this. With that, he would have the possibility of breaking through to the Mid Combat Soul realm. No, not possibility, he would certainly break through to the middle stage.

“What is Jiang Chen trying to do? What’s the point of fighting like this?”

Daoist Black said, his heart in his throat. He had never seen anyone fight like this before, and he had no idea what Jiang Chen was thinking. However, every time Jiang Chen coughed up blood after getting hit by an attack, cold sweat would appear on Daoist Black.

“If my guess is correct, he’s using the pressure from his opponents to stimulate his own potential.”

Guo Shan squinted his eyes and threw out his guess.

Within the Nine Stars Killing Formation, a frown was visible on Shangguan Sheng’s face as he stared at Jiang Chen. Suddenly, his eyes lit up, and his expression changed dramatically, as if he had just discovered something.

“Third Emperor, this guy is using the pressure to stimulate his own potential! Don’t delay any longer, we have to use the King Weapon and kill him as quickly as possible! If not, the consequences will be unimaginable!”

Shangguan Sheng quickly said with a loud voice. His words caused everyone including the Third Emperor to cry out in shock.

Swoosh!

The Third Emperor did not dare neglect this. He immediately took out his King Weapon. The golden spear immediately let out a loud cry, then it unleashed its frightening King Weapon aura, and started vibrating, producing a constant buzzing sound. The Third Emperor was a peak Combat Soul warrior, and although he didn't understand the Dimensional Laws and couldn't fully unleash the strength of this King Weapon, it was still able to double his combat strength.

The Third Emperor did initially not plan on using the King Weapon. In his mind, just the Nine Stars Killing Formation alone was more than enough to kill Jiang Chen. The situation now was just like he had expected; Jiang Chen was no match for him. However, after being told by Shangguan Sheng, he finally realized that he had nearly been fooled by Jiang Chen.

“Jiang Chen, you should take pride in being able to die under this King Weapon! Come face your death!”

The Third Emperor pierced the golden spear through the air, causing the spear tip reached Jiang Chen in the blink of an eye. The frightening king's pressure coming from this spear could easily send a chill down anyone's spine. It had locked down on Jiang Chen, causing Jiang Chen to have no way of avoiding it.

With the help of the King Weapon, the Third Emperor's combat strength had been doubled. If Jiang Chen didn't have any other powerful abilities to defend himself with, and just kept fighting like he had before, he would certainly be killed by this powerful spear.

Swoosh!

However, the Third Emperor's plan was unfortunately destined to fail. He did have a King Weapon, but Jiang Chen had his own Natal Weapon. Although the Heavenly Saint Sword was still classified as a Peak Superior Weapon, it was more than enough to compare with any King Weapon after three pieces had been merged together.

The Heavenly Saint Sword let out a sharp cry. The huge golden sword immediately danced in the sky like a dragon. The True Dragon Flame and Heavenly Thunder Flame had merged, and was fully covering the surface of the Heavenly Saint Sword. With incredible speed, Jiang Chen raised the Heavenly Saint Sword high up into the sky and struck the Third Emperor's King Weapon.

Clang!

Fiery sparks shot into all directions, instantly forming an ocean of flames. The energy ripples that were produced from the collision of the two mighty weapons even damaged the void, causing a black stream of air that also carried freezing aura to leak out.

Tap, tap, tap...

Because of this intense collision, Jiang Chen was once again knocked back a few dozen steps. However, the King Weapon hadn't killed Jiang Chen, like they had expected.

“What?!”

The Third Emperor cried out in shock. He was staring at the sword in Jiang Chen’s hand as if he was looking at a ghost. Only now did he remember that back in the Black Sect, it was this sword Jiang Chen had used to break the Crown Prince’s golden halberd into two. The Crown Prince’s combat weapon was considered one of the best weapons amongst all Superior Weapons, but it was shattered by Jiang Chen’s sword in an instant. Could this sword also be a King Weapon?

This sword was clearly not a King Weapon. However, when it hit the King Weapon just now, Jiang Chen’s sword actually unleashed a strength that was no weaker than that of the Golden Spear.

“How can this be possible?”

Shangguan Sheng was dumbfounded by what happened. They all knew Jiang Chen had an extremely powerful sword, but they didn’t know it was such a frightening weapon. The situation had returned to how it was before combat weapons were drawn. The Third Emperor had a King Weapon, while Jiang Chen also had a combat weapon that was comparable to King Weapons. The gap that was supposed to appear had disappeared, and it seemed like killing Jiang Chen was going to be much more difficult now.

Chapter 442 – Ten Thousand Dragon Marks, Ruthless Crushing

“Haha, you old fools, do you really think you can kill me? This is truly funny!”

Jiang Chen burst into laughter, then he raised his Heavenly Saint Sword and charged over once again. He noticed that after the Third Emperor took out the King Weapon, resulting in his combat strength doubling, the pressure he felt became even heavier. The Dragon Transformation skill started circulating twice as fast as before, and new Dragon Marks were forming faster as well. If the situation continued like this, it wouldn't take long before he broke through to the Mid Combat Soul realm.

Boom!

Paying no attention to the Third Emperor and other men's shocked expressions, Jiang Chen simply swung his Heavenly Saint Sword toward them with tremendous force.

The Third Emperor knew that Jiang Chen was using them and the pressure they exerted on him to improve his cultivation. However, they were now in a situation similar to riding on a wild tiger's back, and they couldn't just get off the tiger's back. There was no way they could stop this situation, and the only thing they could do was fight with all their effort. Shangguan Sheng and the other men were gritting their teeth in anger, but they had to continue supporting the Nine Stars Killing Formation, giving them no way to attack him unless Jiang Chen arrived in front of them, because then they would just channel their energy to the person

whom Jiang Chen arrived in front of. If they chose to attack Jiang Chen now, it would only serve to disperse the energy channeled to the Nine Stars Killing Formation, and that result was no better than the Third Emperor just attacking alone.

Boom!

The Golden Spear once again collided with the Heavenly Saint Sword in a most brutal manner, and Jiang Chen was once again knocked back by the enormous force. However, in the following moment, Jiang Chen simply charged right back toward the Third Emperor like a lunatic, causing everyone to gnash their teeth in anger. This situation made them feel both frustrated and gloomy, as they were obviously stronger than Jiang Chen, and they were able to inflict injuries on him every single time. However, this guy just couldn't be killed. Not only that, he became even stronger each time. This truly pissed them off.

“Third Emperor, what should we do now?”

Tiangang Yi couldn't help but ask.

“We have no solution for now. However, I don't believe I can't kill this guy! Everyone, just work harder! I have the King Weapon in hand, and I want to see just how much blood this guy can lose!”

The Third Emperor said in a ferocious tone. Faced with the current situation, they had no other choice but to keep fighting with Jiang Chen. The situation was now clear to everyone; Jiang Chen was using the pressure from the Nine Stars Killing Formation

to temper himself; stimulating his potential and improving his cultivation.

The Third Emperor and the others were in a situation akin to riding on a tiger's back, and they were forced to help Jiang Chen on this. Aside from fighting, they had no other alternative. If they retracted the Nine Stars Killing Formation now, with Jiang Chen's ability, none of them would be able to defend themselves from his attack. At that point of time, all of them would become akin to sheep waiting to be slaughtered by Jiang Chen. Even the Third Emperor who had the King Weapon wouldn't be able to defend himself from Jiang Chen.

Therefore, they had no choice but to continue fighting. They could only hope that Jiang Chen would eventually collapse after being continuously injured by the King Weapon. Although they had no idea what the chances of that working was, they had no other solution for now.

Right now, all these mighty warriors, including the Third Emperor, felt extremely regretful. If they knew that Jiang Chen had become so frightening, they would have informed the Imperial Emperor, even if it meant losing face. That way, the Imperial Emperor could have come to deal with Jiang Chen personally, and with that, they wouldn't be stuck in such a frustrating situation.

Jiang Chen was acting extremely haughty as he roared out in laughter. He knew that the Third Emperor and the others were feeling frustrated right now. However, it was too late. These guys were destined to help him greatly, and once he broke through to the Mid Combat Soul realm, all of these people were going to meet

their end.

In the far distance, Daoist Black and Guo Shan were both startled by what they saw. The situation was truly bizarre. Initially, it was the Third Emperor who was laughing, and now, although the Third Emperor was still in an advantageous position, and Jiang Chen was still getting hit and injured, it was Jiang Chen who was now laughing, while the expressions of the Third Emperor and the others were twisted.

“What is going on?”

Daoist Black was shocked. As he stood far away from the battle, he didn't know about Jiang Chen's transformation.

“This is Jiang Chen's approach; I told you there must have been a reason for him fighting like that. Look at that, the expressions of those people from the Martial Saint Dynasty has started changing.”

A smile appeared on Guo Shan's face. He knew that Jiang Chen would never fight an uncertain battle, even if the opponent was the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Within the Nine Stars Killing Formation, Jiang Chen was getting crazier and crazier, while the expressions of the Third Emperor and the others were getting uglier and uglier. Jiang Chen's ferociousness was terrifying to them. The more the Third Emperor fought, the more scared he became.

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. He was on the very brink of going berserk, and the Dragon Transformation skill's circulation doubled once again. The number of Dragon Marks in his body were increasing like crazy. Nine thousand four hundred, nine thousand six hundred, nine thousand seven hundred, nine thousand nine hundred...

Roar!

Jiang Chen raised his head and let out a thunderous roar toward the sky. It seemed like he had gone completely berserk. Countless golden beams shot out from his body, causing him to look like a bright sun as he dazzled with endless radiance.

The last strike! Jiang Chen leapt toward his enemy without any consideration for his own safety.

“Fight with all our strength!”

The Third Emperor gnashed his teeth. He was shocked to see Jiang Chen entering such a berserk state. The Nine Stars Killing Formation begun circulating like crazy, and no one dared show any neglect now. The faces of all the Combat Soul warriors were covered in sweat. Countless bright killing beams shot out from the golden spear. The Third Emperor prepared to unleashing his strongest strike at the same time.

Bang!

The Heavenly Saint Sword and the golden spear collided once again. The two combat weapons were equally matched, however, to no one's surprise, Jiang Chen was knocked back once again. And this time, he even spat out three mouthfuls of blood. The injury he got this time was much worse than the injuries he received the previous times.

This situation caused the eyes of the Third Emperor and the others to light up, as if they had just seen a new hope.

On the other side, after suffering from this heavy blow, the Dragon Transformation's circulation speed had reached a maximum. One hundred new Dragon Marks were instantly formed. Right now, the total number of Dragon Marks in Jiang Chen's body had finally reached 10,000.

Boom!

Energy burst out from Jiang Chen's body like a tsunami toward the sky. At this moment, Jiang Chen's aura was constantly surging like the violent waves of a raging storm, and he was constantly taking out large amounts of Earth Restoration Pills and throwing them into his own mouth, as if they were worth nothing.

The Third Emperor and the others were completely stunned. Jiang Chen had actually broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm in front of them.

Jiang Chen's bones started producing cracking sounds, and all the injuries he had suffered from the battle just now had fully

recovered in this instant; no traces of any injuries left behind. Jiang Chen's aura became like a huge pillar capable of supporting the heavens as it shot into the thick clouds above his head. Now, with the 10,000 Dragon Marks in his body, Jiang Chen had truly broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm.

The only blemish in this otherwise perfect moment was that the Dragon Transformation skill still hadn't completed its second transformation. However, Jiang Chen who had successfully broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm could no longer feel any pressure from the Third Emperor. In his eyes, all these existences in front of him were too weak.

Right now, Jiang Chen was capable of fighting an ordinary Combat King warrior. This was how frightening the Dragon Transformation skill was.

In the far distance, Daoist Black and Guo Shan finally understood Jiang Chen's motive. Sensing the powerful energy erupting from his body, these two men felt as if their nerves had gone numb.

“Heavens, is it possible for a Mid Combat Soul warrior to have such powerful energy? How can he be so strong?”

Daoist Black felt his lips and mouth dry up. However, he was extremely happy and excited to witness Jiang Chen's powerful transformation.

“This is Jiang Chen; a peerless monster! It's impossible to know just how much potential he has.”

Guo Shan said with a sigh. He recalled the moment when he first met with Jiang Chen, and he felt as if it was an entire generation ago. Who could have thought that an outer circle disciple of the Black Sect could obtain such a frightening cultivation base in such a short amount of time? And who could have expected that a not well known young man would bring a storm to the entire Eastern Continent?

“Not good!”

The Third Emperor had a bad feeling about this. Right at this moment, everyone's expressions were extremely unsightly. Although Jiang Chen had yet to attack, the Nine Stars Killing Formation was already trembling just because of the energy unleashed from his body, as if it was going to collapse at any time.

“Hmph!”

A cold light flickered in Jiang Chen's eyes. He snorted and unleashed the True Dragon Palm, grabbing toward the space in front of him.

Crack...

The Nine Stars Killing Formation instantly collapsed. The solid formation couldn't even withstand a casual strike from Jiang Chen; he was too strong! They were simply not on the same level. Right now, Jiang Chen was like a real Combat King warrior.

Argh.....

Miserable screams echoed throughout the scene, especially from those three hundred men who had been channeling their energy into the formation. All of them were now coughing up blood. The backlash they received when the Nine Stars Killing Formation collapsed was too big; they were simply unable to withstand it.

Pupu...

Not only them; even the nine Late Combat Soul warriors were forced to cough up blood. Their bodies swayed as they looked at Jiang Chen in shock.

“Third Emperor, you’ve been attacking me for a very long period of time. It’s my turn now.”

Right after Jiang Chen finished speaking, he immediately made the True Dragon Palm fly toward the Third Emperor while making a grabbing gesture. The Third Emperor was terrified, and he quickly counterattacked with the golden spear. However, since he had been wounded by the backlash just now, he was no longer able to unleash his full power. That, as well as the fact that there was a huge gap between himself and Jiang Chen; he was no longer a match for Jiang Chen.

“King Weapon, give it to me now!”

Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and forcefully seized the golden spear from the Third Emperor's grasp.

“Return my combat weapon!”

The Third Emperor's expression changed dramatically. This combat weapon was given to him by the Old Emperor, and he couldn't afford to lose it.

“You are about to lose your life, and you still want your combat weapon?”

Without saying much more, Jiang Chen suddenly attacked with his palm, destroying one of the Third Emperor's arms.

“Jiang Chen, don't you dare to kill me! The Imperial Emperor will never forgive you!”

The Third Emperor shrieked.

“Don't worry, I'll keep your head. It will be part of my gift to the Imperial Emperor.”

This nutrition-less threat from the Third Emperor was useless against Jiang Chen. He waved his hand again, this time crushing the Third Emperor's body into a blood mist, leaving behind a head whose face was covered with fear. Jiang Chen took the head and stored it in his storage ring.

“Run now!”

The Fourth Emperor cried out. It wasn't until now that everyone woke up from their shock. Without hesitating, everyone just turned around and started fleeing. They were no longer able to fight this battle, and if they didn't flee right now, the only thing awaiting them would be certain death. This Jiang Chen was fiercer than the fiercest demon; even the Third Emperor who had a King Weapon was killed by him. They were just mere ants in front of Jiang Chen.

Everyone were completely terrified by Jiang Chen's frightening strength; all their courage was gone. Although they were all men who had gone through a lot, they had not once met such a ferocious man.

Chapter 443 – The Merciless Iron Fist

At this moment, the formidable Martial Saint Dynasty group was struck with panic, and every one of them were greatly terrified; their minds in disorder. Not only those Divine Core and Combat Soul warriors, even the eight Late Combat Soul warriors were fleeing in all directions; completely throwing away their previously mighty images.

“Now you want to flee. I don’t believe you ever imagined this scenario when you tried killing me just now. Today, none of you are going to run away from here!”

Jiang Chen said with a fierce expression. He now completely resembled a god of slaughter. He threw the Heavenly Saint Sword into the sky, turning it into a gigantic golden sword that was about 30 meters long. After that, he waved his hand and unleashed a bright beam that entered the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Huala...

In an instant, numerous golden beams shot out from the Heavenly Saint Sword. These golden beams stretched themselves at an incredible speed, covering the entire sky above the mountain range in the blink of an eye. They had formed into a huge golden net that completely sealed off the entire space.

“Not good! That’s an imprisoning formation; there is no way we can run away now!”

“Damn it, Jiang Chen prepared this formation before he came here, and he has now activated it and trapped us here! We’re all injured, and he has just broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm! There is no way we can break this formation!”

“So despicable! This Jiang Chen is a despicable and murderous man; what should we do now?! He’ll definitely kill us all!”

.....

Fear filled the hearts of every single person present. When fleeing for their lives only became a fleeting wish; all that remained was the fear of death.

Jiang Chen had planned very carefully, and had taken every conceivable possibility into consideration. That’s why he had prepared this imprisoning formation and hidden it in his Heavenly Saint Sword in advance. As a formation prepared by the once greatest Saint underneath the heavens, together with the support from the Heavenly Saint Sword, unless a Combat King personally arrived, no one would be able to break the formation, let alone these small fries who were currently panicking.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen looked at Shangguan Sheng with an ice-cold gaze. Jiang Chen would definitely show no mercy to this guy and Tiangang Yi.

Jiang Chen took a step forward and arrived in front of Shangguan Sheng. Sensing the frightening aura leaking out from Jiang Chen's body, Shangguan Sheng couldn't help but tremble. As the Shangguan Clan Chief, a supreme warrior at the peak of the Combat Soul realm, he had long ago forgotten what trembling in fear felt like. He would only feel his heart trembling a bit when faced with the Imperial Emperor.

“You're Shangguan Sheng? Someone told me that in order to deal with me, you've been racking your brain quite a lot.”

Jiang Chen indifferently said.

“Jiang Chen, you wouldn't dare kill me.”

Strangely, Shangguan Sheng was laughing.

“Why? Give me a reason why I can't kill you.”

Jiang Chen said, expressing great interest.

“Because there are still many people in my captivity! With but a single order from me, all of them are going to die. I don't believe you want to risk their lives, right?”

Shangguan Sheng said, feeling incredibly prideful. The people of the Yu family, Guan family, and Tian family were still in the hands of the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. These people were their last hope for survival. Having been enemies of Jiang Chen for

a long time, they had a pretty good understanding of Jiang Chen. Although he was a man with a cruel approach; he was also a man who cherished his friends and family, so he would definitely not let those people die.

“Jiang Chen, as long as you let me go today, as the Shangguan Clan Chief, I promise you that from today onwards, the Shangguan Clan will no longer be your enemies, and all our past resentments will be resolved once and for all. What do you think?”

Shangguan Sheng laid his conditions out on the table.

“Idiot.”

Jiang Chen sneered as he grabbed onto Shangguan Sheng’s throat. Underneath this frightening pressure, Shangguan Sheng could only keep struggling with no way of fighting back.

“Shangguan Sheng, no one can save you today, not even the heavens! I don’t mind letting you know this so that you can die without any doubts; all men from the Shangguan Clan in the Yu family grounds have already met with [King Yama](#).”

[TL: Yama is the king of hell.]

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent manner.

“What?! You... you! You’ve planned all this!”

Shangguan Sheng cried out in shock. He now finally understood how frightening Jiang Chen. Becoming this man's enemy was a true nightmare; everything had always been in Jiang Chen's control!

Right at this moment, Shangguan Sheng knew he was done for, and so did the Shangguan Clan, and many others. He was also guessing that perhaps even the powerful Martial Saint Dynasty would be destroyed by this young man in some days, because a man like this was extremely frightening.

“I am a man who is willing to accept other people's views, and I will rarely attack unless I am attacked first. However, not only did you guys attack me, you even went a step further and attacked my family and friends. Shangguan Sheng, I'm going to kill you now. I'll allow you to die quickly, that's the greatest mercy I can show.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen simply ended his life with a powerful slap, giving him the same ending as the Third Emperor. His body exploded in an instant, and the combat soul in his body didn't even have the chance to escape. All that was left behind was a human head that was filled with unreconciled emotions and fear. The head was then stored in Jiang Chen's storage ring.

“Clan Chief!”

Great Elder Shangguan Qingming shouted out loudly as both of his eyes turned red.

“Don't shout so loudly, you're next.”

With an indifferent look in his eyes, Jiang Chen acted without any mercy. He once again unleashed a deadly slap, and to no one's surprise, Shangguan Qingming followed the footsteps of Shangguan Sheng and died on the spot.

The Heavenly Saint Sword had completely locked up this entire space. None of these people were able to escape, and they were currently all like tame sheep waiting to be slaughtered by Jiang Chen. After witnessing three Late Combat Soul warriors getting killed in such a miserable manner, everyone felt their hearts palpitating in fear.

“Tiangang Yi, it's your turn now.”

Jiang Chen's black hair was fluttering in the wind, causing him to look like a chaotic devil. His body simply flashed and arrived in front of Tiangang Yi. He unleashed an energy from his body that kept Tiangang Yi under his tight control.

“Jiang Chen, do you really have to be so ruthless? I advise you to leave some room for others.”

Tiangang Yi was terrified. He quickly spoke, hoping that he could escape from his ill fate. However, it was just a childish wish.

“Leave some room for others? When you arrogant guys who have always thought that you are above everyone else decided to imprison my family, did you ever think about leaving some room for me? A bunch of Combat Soul warriors went straight to bully

my friends and family, do you feel no shame? Where is your sense of shame? If not for the fact that you guys are scared of me taking revenge, all my family members might have died by now! If I spared you today, how would those who have already died because of me be able to forgive me?”

Jiang Chen said with a stern voice. He never showed any mercy, and without giving Tiangang Yi any chance to respond, he simply destroyed Tiangang Yi with a slap, even destroying his head.

“Sect Chief!”

The Late Combat Soul warrior from the Myriad Sword Sect couldn't help but let out a shout.

“There's no reason to shout. None of you are going to survive this day.”

Jiang Chen's eyes had turned red after killing the few men. He dashed forward and arrived in front of that Elder from the Myriad Sword Sect, then simply gave him a slap, killing him on the spot. Jiang Chen's strength was extremely frightening now that he had broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm. Right now, killing a Late Combat Soul warrior was no different from crushing a tiny ant.

In the blink of an eye, five Late Combat Soul warriors were killed by Jiang Chen, leaving behind four Late Combat Soul warrior. All of them belonged to the upper echelons of the Martial Saint Dynasty. The Crown Prince, Forth Emperor, Fifth Emperor, and

the Sixth Emperor.

But right now, these four men had lost their graceful bearing. Their bodies were trembling, and they were looking at Jiang Chen as if they were looking at a ferocious devil.

Swoosh!

Jiang Chen threw his ice-cold glance over to the Fourth Emperor, his killing intent soaring.

A man had all sorts of responsibilities on his shoulders. Sometimes, when a man killed someone else, it might just be to protect his loved ones; he would have no choice but to slaughter his enemy. This was the cruelty of this world; the laws of survival.

“Hold on!”

The Fourth Emperor shouted without hesitating.

“What else do you wish to say before you die?”

Jiang Chen stood in front of the Fourth Emperor and spoke in a cold tone.

“Jiang Chen, let me advise you; you better not put yourself in a position that goes against the Martial Saint Dynasty! The Martial Saint Dynasty’s true strength is not something you can deal with!

If you can spare our lives today, we can just write off all our resentments! With your talent and strength, as long as you work for the Martial Saint Dynasty wholeheartedly, I'm sure you'll have limitless achievements in the future!"

The Fourth Emperor tried to persuade Jiang Chen.

Clasp!

Right after the Fourth Emperor finished speaking, Jiang Chen simply slapped his face, causing him to spin around three times.

"How can you speak such bullshit? Do you think your father is an idiot? I can spare anyone's life, but when it comes to you guys from the Martial Saint Dynasty; I can only give death!"

Jiang Chen cursed out loudly, then slapped him once again, causing the Fourth Emperor's body to explode. Then, he simply grabbed his hand.

The Third Emperor's words were indeed a load of bullshit. Jiang Chen had killed three emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the Crown Prince had even been castrated. There was a deep-seated hatred between them, and it wasn't possible for it to be written off just like that. The deathmatch between Jiang Chen and the Martial Saint Dynasty was unavoidable, and there was no way he could let these mighty warriors of the Martial Saint Dynasty off easily. If he spared their lives today, they might go after his friends and family once more tomorrow.

The fifth and sixth emperors were greatly terrified by what happened. Jiang Chen was simply a lunatic in their eyes; he was someone who killed people without even blinking his eyes. He didn't even care about their status as emperors; he simply killed them as if they were nothing; showing no mercy at all.

“The moment the Imperial Emperor passed down the Imperial Decree to have all my friends and family killed; the Martial Saint Dynasty was destined to be annihilated. Since you want to kill my entire family, I will do the same to you. Emperors, do you not think that my words make sense?”

Jiang Chen strode forward toward the fifth and sixth emperor while speaking with a cold smile on his face.

Jiang Chen's words stunned both emperors, as if there was nothing wrong with what he said. Since the Martial Saint Dynasty wanted to kill Jiang Chen's entire family, why should Jiang Chen be courteous with them?

“Jiang Chen, going against the Martial Saint Dynasty will only bring you a miserable ending. The Imperial Emperor and the Crown Prince are men of supremacy! It was Yan Chenyu who humiliated the Crown Prince, and that's the reason why the Imperial Emperor passed down the Imperial Decree to have all your friends and family slaughtered!”

The Fifth Emperor said.

“What a load of bullshit! The lives of those from the Martial

Saint Dynasty are precious, but the lives of my family members are not? Let me tell you; in my, Jiang Chen's eyes, the life of a servant in my family is worth a hundred times more than yours! I will kill both of you today, and tomorrow, I will bring your heads to the Imperial Emperor as a big gift! I'll let him taste the feeling of knowing that his family members have been slaughtered by his enemy!"

Jiang Chen said with a loud voice. The Imperial Emperor's Imperial Decree had completely infuriated Jiang Chen. He had no doubts; if not for the fact that they wanted to lure him out, just a word from the Imperial Emperor would be enough to have all his family members, friends, his friends' family members, and all those people related to him face miserable deaths. It was a scene Jiang Chen didn't dare imagine.

Chapter 444 – Kill Those Who Deserve It, Cripple Those Who Does Not

Boom!

Jiang Chen slammed his palm onto the Fifth Emperor's body, causing it to instantly explode into a clump of blood mist. He died on the spot, and his head was now in Jiang Chen's hand.

“Graa!”

The Sixth Emperor who stood not far away from where the Fifth Emperor had died let out a furious roar. He immediately took out his combat weapon and unleashed his powerful energy. He took the initiative to launch an attack toward Jiang Chen. He knew he was going to die no matter what, so he didn't ask for forgiveness, and he didn't use the Martial Saint Dynasty's name to threaten Jiang Chen. He knew that begging or threatening was useless. With his life in the hands of someone as ferocious and ruthless as Jiang Chen, he knew that his fate had been decided.

Instead of begging for forgiveness, he might as well go down fighting. At least it wouldn't be a pathetic death.

“You're actually a man with courage. However, your fate is still the same.”

Jiang Chen glanced at the Sixth Emperor before he punched out. This punch carried a tremendous force, causing the Sixth Emperor

to feel as if a gigantic moment was being thrown at him.

At last, the Sixth Emperor let out a miserable scream. Even though he had fought with all his strength, he couldn't withstand a single strike from Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen had collected one more head. Now, he had collected the heads of the Third Emperor, Fourth Emperor, Fifth Emperor, Sixth Emperor, Seventh Emperor, and the Tenth Emperor. These men who sat on the top of the Eastern Continent, their heads had all been collected by Jiang Chen. For the Martial Saint Dynasty, not only was this an unimaginable loss, it was also a severe challenge to their dignity. After the Martial Saint Dynasty had been established so many years ago, this was the first time someone had dared to ignore their sovereignty.

Killing six emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty was something that could simply be described as heavenly defying. Throughout the entire Eastern Continent, only Jiang Chen alone had the courage and strength to do such a heavenly-defying thing.

The entire scene had become completely silent. The three hundred men who were still alive were all looking at Jiang Chen with miserable expressions. They didn't try to flee, and they didn't even have the mentality to fight back. They knew that fleeing or fighting back was useless. Their fates now laid in the hands of this youngster in front of them.

The Crown Prince was feeling so panicked that he could barely breathe. Although he was now a eunuch, he still didn't want to die. Now, out of the nine Late Combat Soul warriors who came here,

eight had died. All his Imperial Uncles had died, and he was the last one. He didn't really think that Jiang Chen would spare his life.

The Crown Prince had lost his supreme attitude; he was now like a stray dog.

However, Jiang Chen didn't even look at the Crown Prince. He threw his glance over to the crowd in front of him. His gaze was ice-cold, causing everyone who looked into his eyes to feel a shiver running down their spines. It was as if they would all be tortured to death just from looking into his eyes.

Jiang Chen's gaze finally stopped on a man; Wu Cong!

"Get over here right now!"

Jiang Chen looked at Wu Cong and shouted.

Wu Cong's body instantly trembled, and his face became extremely pale; as if he was completely exhausted. He never thought that Jiang Chen would pick him before the Crown Prince.

Wu Cong who was a Mid Combat Soul warrior was trembling without any control of his body.

Seeing this, a look of disgust emerged in Jiang Chen's eyes. He stretched his arm forward and made a grabbing gesture. In an instant, a powerful suction force shot out from his palm and fell

onto Wu Cong's body, pulling Wu Cong up to Jiang Chen.

“If my memory serves me well, everything that has happened so far is because of you alone.”

Jiang Chen looked at Wu Cong with his ice-cold gaze as if he was looking at a dying man. However, no pity was apparent.

Jiang Chen had learned from Big Yellow that the source of this incident was Wu Cong, as he was the one who persuaded the Crown Prince to go see Yan Chenyu. Without his persuasion, the Crown Prince might not have gone to the Martial Palace at all, and if the Crown Prince didn't go there, he never would have met with Yan Chenyu, and nothing would have happened at all.

“I, I, I...”

Wu Cong was completely terrified. He started stuttering, but he was simply unable to say a complete sentence.

“I've killed your father, do you not wish to avenge him? Since you're going to die anyway, why don't you just attack me with all your strength? I'll give you a chance to avenge your father.”

Jiang Chen looked at Wu Cong in a ridiculing manner. This guy was just a dumb coward, and Jiang Chen hated people like this from the bottom of his heart. Furthermore, he had no intention of letting this culprit off easily.

Wu Cong's face became even paler. What a joke, he just didn't have the courage to attack Jiang Chen. Although he felt a strong desire to avenge his father, after having witnessed Jiang Chen's frightening strength, he just couldn't muster up any courage to fight.

“Trash.”

Jiang Chen looked at Wu Cong with disgust a final time, then he waved his hand, unleashing a razor sharp golden beam which slashed through Wu Cong's throat. In an instant, a human head flew up into the sky. His frightened expression was still visible on his dead face.

Everyone were scared as they looked at Jiang Chen, as if they had foreseen their end; their heads being cut off from their necks. Someone once said: when a man was on the brink of death; his will to fight for his life would erupt forth, and he would fight with everything he had in order to stay alive. However, none of these three men tried fighting back in order to stay alive. Their fear of Jiang Chen was deeply ingrained in their bones, and they were simply unable to muster up any courage to fight back.

After killing Wu Cong, Jiang Chen turned to the Crown Prince. At this moment, after having gone through a great amount of fear, a bitter smile simply emerged onto the Crown Prince's mouth.

“Come on, just kill me if you want.”

The Crown Prince suddenly changed his tone, showing a much

tougher image than before. He knew he was going to die regardless of what he did.

“Don’t worry, I won’t kill you now, as you’re still very useful to me. So much more useful than those heads.”

Jiang Chen smiled.

Hearing that Jiang Chen wasn’t going to kill him now, a look of surprise emerged in the Crown Prince’s eyes. However, he immediately realized what Jiang Chen was up to.

“You’re going to use me as your hostage to threaten my father?”

Crown Prince asked.

“You’re not that stupid. In order to fight with the Martial Saint Dynasty, I’ll need to keep some bargaining chips with me.”

Jiang Chen didn’t deny it. The reason he spared the Crown Prince’s life was to threaten the Imperial Emperor. The Crown Prince was after all the Imperial Emperor’s son, and the Imperial Emperor was very proud of him. The Imperial Emperor would naturally consider his son much more precious than the other emperors. Of course, Jiang Chen’s bargaining chips did not only just include the Crown Prince’s life. He also had all those heads. The emperors had to be buried in their own imperial family graveyard, and in order to retrieve these heads, the Imperial Emperor would pay any price.

Jiang Chen didn't actually like using his enemy's family to threaten him, even if it was an enemy he couldn't exist together with. He really hated this kind of method.

However, he had to use this method now, because the Imperial Emperor still had some of the people closest to him imprisoned in the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Jiang Zhenhai, Yan Zhanyun, and Wu Jiu. The lives of these people were too important, and if Jiang Chen didn't have any bargaining chips in his hand, he would be the one being threatened. Furthermore, the safety of Jiang Zhenhai and the other two would not be guaranteed if he had no good bargaining chips.

Jiang Chen had no doubts. After the Imperial Emperor finds out about him having killed so many emperors, the Imperial Emperor might just kill Jiang Zhenhai and the others in order to vent his fury.

Therefore, the decision to spare the Crown Prince's life was equal to saving the lives of Jiang Zhenhai and the other two.

“Jiang Chen, you...”

Clasp!

Before the Crown Prince could finish speaking, Jiang Chen

slapped his face and said with a cold voice, “I told you before; as a palace eunuch, you better shut your mouth. Did no one tell you that your voice is disgusting? Also, from this moment onwards, you better remember your new identity! You are my, Jiang Chen’s prisoner slave!”

Jiang Chen’s words were much more devastating to the Crown Prince than the slap he just received; it simply caused the Crown Prince to vomit a mouthful of blood. He was the Crown Prince, a man sitting on the top of the Eastern Continent overseeing thousands of people. He had never suffered humiliation like this before. After falling into Jiang Chen’s hands, he had entered a state where he could neither live nor die. He didn’t even have the ability to commit suicide.

However, the Crown Prince was sensible enough to keep his mouth shut. He knew that Jiang Chen wouldn’t treat him nicely. The reason he was still alive was so that Jiang Chen could threaten the Imperial Emperor. If he wasn’t worth this value, he would be like the other emperors by now.

The Crown Prince did in fact also hate his own voice.

Two figures suddenly came flying in from the far distance; Daoist Black and Guo Shan. Both of them had been hiding in the far distance, and they were greatly stunned after witnessing Jiang Chen slaughter his enemies. It wasn’t until now that they woke up from their state of shock and flew to the scene.

Jiang Chen casually waved his hand, causing a crack on the barrier created by the Heavenly Saint Sword to appear, letting

both men in.

Right now, the way these two men looked at Jiang Chen had completely changed. They felt as if Jiang Chen slaughtering all the enemies just now was a dream. It was simply too frightening. When the news about today's battle spread out, Jiang Chen's reputation would definitely reach new unimaginable heights.

Although they knew Jiang Chen was on their side, respect and fear had both quietly taken root within their sub consciousness.

“Brother, what should we do with these men? Do we really have to kill them all?”

Guo Shan looked at those three hundred men and asked.

“Not all of them deserve to die, but some of them do. Brother Guo, Sect Chief, how many people of the Black Sect died during this period of time?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“I have no idea. We've been imprisoned all this time, so we aren't clear on what has happened outside.”

Daoist Black said.

“Let's bring all these men to the Black Sect then; let the disciples

of the Black Sect identify those who deserve to be killed. Those who don't deserve death will be crippled, as we have to get revenge for those who have suffered. No matter what, I have to do something for them."

After saying that, Jiang Chen simply turned toward the Black Sect and started flying. Covered by the Heavenly Saint Sword, those three hundred men had no choice but to follow along. Each and every one of them wore twisted expressions on their faces. They knew that none of them were going to escape their ill fates today.

Jiang Chen's intentions were clear. Those who had tortured or killed disciples and elders of the Black Sect would have to face their deaths, and those who didn't do anything, they would still have to be crippled.

Daoist Black and Guo Shan looked at each other; excitement apparent in both their eyes. With Jiang Chen, the Black Sect would soon prosper to new heights.

Furthermore, the people of the Black Sect had suffered badly during this period, and if they didn't get to vent on the pain they receive from their enemies, the Black Sect's spirit would suffer a great blow. Therefore, both of them highly agreed with Jiang Chen's approach. Just let the disciples of the Black Sect release the grievance they received from these enemies.

Chapter 445 – Reversed Roles

Over three hundred men, all of them from different backgrounds. No matter where they came from, the Martial Saint Dynasty, Shangguan Clan, or Myriad Sword Sect; all of these people were supreme existences. During normal times, any one of the people would be arrogant and proud of themselves, and they would show off no matter where they went.

But right now, this group of men looked like a pack of stray dogs with their lives in the hands of someone else. They couldn't resist their ill fate, they could only wait for the death god's sentence. They were indeed in the most miserable state, especially those from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. Their hearts were filled with depression.

Not long ago, they were the mammoths that dominated the Jian Prince, and their aura of supremacy could be found even in the deepest parts of their bones. But today, the two mammoths of the Jian Province had died, including their two Late Combat Soul warriors. This was a huge loss, and even if these people managed to survive, both superpowers would lose their ability to continue domineering the Jian Province. Their fall was destined to happen now.

The people of the Martial Saint Dynasty felt even gloomier. Six of their emperors were dead, Prince Wu Cong had been killed, and even their Crown Prince had become a hostage. The once highly acclaimed Crown Prince could only follow Jiang Chen without even daring to fart. Being in such a situation could no longer just be described as miserable.

At the same time, the disciples of the Black Sect were in restless states. Everyone here really wished to know how the battle between Jiang Chen and the enemies was going, because this also concerned their fates. If not for Daoist Black ordering them not to leave the Black Sect, many of them might have already left the Black Sect to follow after Jiang Chen.

In fact, Daoist Black's decision to give out that order was a wise one, as the battle was simply too fierce. The shockwaves that appeared as a result of the battle had destroyed the entire mountain range, and with his and Guo Shan's strength, even though they were standing far away, they were still struck by the shockwaves, and could barely breathe. If the disciples of the Black Sect went there, they would instantly be killed just from the shockwaves of the battle.

“Did you guys hear that? Extremely loud noises of a battle are coming from above 300 miles away! Senior disciple Jiang Chen is surely fighting with them right now! This makes me worry, I'm wondering if Jiang Chen can win this battle.

“I think it will be difficult, as the enemy is too strong. There are so many Late Combat Soul warriors there, as well as a few hundred other mighty warriors to back them up, while senior disciple Jiang Chen is fighting all alone.”

“Let's just wait and seen. Senior disciple Jiang is good at creating miracles. Last time, during the battle with Nanbei Chao, he already did what none of us thought would be possible, and I'm sure he'll do the same this time as well. The future of our Black Sect is now

in the hands of senior disciple Jiang Chen.”

“Praying for senior disciple Jiang Chen’s victory; praying for the Black Sect’s eternal prosperity.”

.....

Many disciples of the Black Sect started praying at the same time. In the minds of these disciples, Jiang Chen had become some sort of a god. Naturally, they wished their god would bring them victory. And, if their god collapsed, the Black Sect would collapse as well.

After some time, a huge golden barrier suddenly appeared in the distance, and it was moving toward the Black Sect at an incredible speed. There was a 30 meter long sword hovering above this golden barrier, and there were a few hundred men who were forced to move along with it.

“Look, what’s that?”

“Heavens! It’s senior disciple Jiang Chen, as well as Sect Chief and Elder Guo Shan! Guys, look at those people, they are the ones from the Martial Saint Dynasty, Shangguan Clan, and Myriad Sword Sect!”

“Look, their faces are filled with fear and shock! I’m sure they were severely beaten by senior disciple Jiang Chen! Do you guys see that? All those Late Combat Soul warriors are gone! Could they

have been killed by senior disciple Jiang Chen?”

“Haha, senior disciple has won the fight! Aoaoaoao!”

.....

A storm instantly erupted in the entire Black Sect. Some started roaring and cheering as tears filled their eyes. This was an incredible sacred moment for them!

“Everyone of the Black Sect, proceed to the training ground at once!”

Daoist Black’s voice echoed throughout the sky once again. After receiving the instructions, none of the ones from the Black Sect dared neglect the order, and they immediately rushed to the training ground. Although none of them knew what the purpose of going there was, they knew it must be something good.

The Black Sect’s training grounds covered a big area, and it was more than enough to fit all the disciples of the Black Sect without even making it seem packed. Jiang Chen brought all three hundred men and landed on the huge training ground, then he retracted the golden barrier.

Soon after, all the disciples of the Black Sect arrived at the training ground. Although the place was filled with people, it was completely silent; no one spoke a word. All the disciples and elders of the Black Sect were looking at the white-clothed youngster with

passionate gazes. It was a man who was like a god to them.

Countless eyes of admiration. This was the idol of all these men. They didn't thirst for one day reaching the same heights as Jiang Chen, but if they one day became capable of doing just a fraction of what he was capable of, it must have been because of their ancestors' good deeds.

“All elders and disciples of the Black Sect; listen up! Although we, the Black Sect is just a small sect of the Qi Province; we are not someone whom anyone can challenge! We won't attack if we aren't attacked first! However, if someone attacks us; we'll fuck their ancestors! Raise your heads and look at these bastards who have lived their entire lives thinking they are the most supreme existences! Right now, they are just like a bunch of stray dogs! If I, their father wants to kill them; they won't be able to live for a single more second! These people have kept the Black Sect in captivity for many days, causing everyone here to suffer, and many to die. Now, these people are here, and I want you to come forward and testify! I want you to point out whoever amongst them has hands stained with the blood of our Black Sect's people! We will give them a taste of what we have been tasting so far!”

Jiang Chen said with a voice that was both loud and clear. His voice echoed in the ears of every single disciple and elder. With just a few sentences, he made the blood of all these disciples and elders boil; causing their spirits to rise into the sky. Him saying 'if they attack us, we'll fuck their ancestors' touched all their hearts and made them think, 'so extremely domineering!'

This was the unyielding spirit of a true man! Who said that the

Black Sect, a small sect in the Qi Prince could be humiliated by someone else? Looking at these people who once sat at the top of the Eastern Continent, they were now like a bunch of stray dogs as they stood there with pale faces. They didn't even dare breathe loudly.

Fuck you! You ending up like that; what irony!

“These bastards has been bullying and cursing at us endlessly these past day! Every dog has its days; I will find those two bastards who killed junior disciple Liu!”

A hot-tempered disciple was the first one to stand out. He started cursing as he went up to the group of over three hundred men. He threw his glance onto the faces of these people, causing many of them to immediately lower their heads.

“Senior disciple Jiang, that's him, he is the one who killed junior disciple Liu!”

The disciple pointed at a man from the Shangguan Clan while gnashing his teeth in anger.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything, he just stretched his arm forward and grabbed the man from a distance. Under the control of Jiang Chen, that man could barely breathe, and he had completely lost his ability to move.

“I'll let you handle him.”

Jiang Chen handed the man over to the disciple.

“Thank you, senior disciple Jiang!”

The disciple bowed deeply toward Jiang Chen. After that, he took out a sharp dagger. Without saying anything, he simply stabbed it into the guy’s chest.

“Junior disciple Liu was hovering between life and death while you were tormenting him. Killing you like this can be considered me being merciful.”

The disciple said, hate apparent in his voice.

“Jiang Chen, you’re a cruel slaughterer! Just kill us now if you want; why do you still wish to torture us like this?!”

Someone who couldn’t stand it any longer spoke out.

“Since you’re in such a hurry to face your death, I will grant your wish.”

Jiang Chen didn’t even look at the man who spoke, he simply unleashed a golden beam from his fingertip. The golden beam instantly pierced through the man’s head, leaving behind an eerie hole. The man died on the spot.

“Senior disciple Jiang Chen is really formidable! That man was an Early Combat Soul warrior, but senior disciple Jiang Chen just killed him by casually pointing his finger at him!”

“Senior disciple Jiang Chen is only seventeen years old this year, and he has such powerful combat strength! He really is beyond our imagination.”

“If I could have half of senior disciple Jiang’s ability, I would be thanking the heavens and earth!”

“Half of his ability? What are you thinking? You should take a piss on the ground and look at your reflection! Don’t ever compare yourself with senior disciple Jiang Chen!”

.....

All the people of the Black Sect were impressed by Jiang Chen’s approach. None of them had witnessed the battle that took place far from here just now, but they had just witnessed Jiang Chen kill an Early Combat Soul warrior with a casual point of his finger. At this moment, their admiration toward Jiang Chen started pouring in like an endless waterfall.

“We’re not humiliating you, we’re simply switching your roles; let you have a taste of what you’ve been doing to those to the Black Sect. If there are anyone else who wish to die now, I can grant your wish. However, if you want to stay alive, just keep standing there quietly. You might perhaps survive this whole thing.”

Jiang Chen threw his glance to those people and spoke in an indifferent tone.

Following that, more and more disciples came forward to testify. They had been dreaming about killing these people who had bullied them while in captivity, therefore, their impression toward those who had hurt them were deeply rooted. They would be able to recognize them even if they had been burnt to ashes.

The disciples of the Black Sect had been imprisoned in separate groups, and there would be some people standing guard in each place, and all those people were from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. The people from the Martial Saint Dynasty arrived yesterday, and their goal was to deal with Jiang Chen. Therefore, they didn't do anything to the people of the Black Sect.

In these past dozen days, many disciples of the Black Sect had been killed by these people. This blood debt could only be repaid in blood. Those from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect whose hands were stained had been identified in less than half an hour.

Jiang Chen would never show any mercy to these people. Therefore, he decisively ordered that these men were to be placed into the hands of the Black Sect disciples, allowing them to decide what they wanted to do to these people.

After being imprisoned for more than a dozen days, suffering all sorts of inhumane humiliation, being heavily beaten and cursed at for nothing; it wasn't difficult to imagine how much hatred these disciples felt toward these people right now, and since they had the

chance to get revenge, they wouldn't be anything good waiting for those people who had humiliated them.

Arghh...

After a series of numerous miserable screams rang out, all the people of the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect were found lying in a pool of blood.

This was war; this was their fates. Sometime, you have to bear the consequences for your actions.

Chapter 446 – God Of War

The entire training ground was filled with blood, making it so that those here couldn't help but furrow their brows. This place seemed like. The two hundred men who had survived were greatly terrified, and their faces had turned extremely pale.

They were trying their best to hold their breath. Jiang Chen was extremely frightening to them. In their eyes, he was already an existence equal to the devil.

All the people from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect had been killed, and up next would be the ones from the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Jiang Chen didn't look at these people, but turned to the people of Black Sect and asked, "What about them?"

"Senior disciple Jiang, they just arrived yesterday, they didn't do anything to us."

A disciple from the Black Sect answered the question, causing all the people from the Martial Saint Dynasty to breathe out in relief. It looked like there was a chance for them to keep their lives. At least, they would be much better off than those from the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect.

"Fine. I've said this before; those who deserve it will die. In fact, all of you do deserve to be killed as well. If I had fallen into the hands of the Martial Saint Dynasty... I'm sure you guys are able to

picture what would have happened. And, once I died, you would mercilessly attack my family and friends. Am I right?”

Jiang Chen glanced at the men with a look containing a hint of interest.

Jiang Chen’s glance caused these people to feel as if they were suffocating. However, his words were correct. If today’s situation was reversed, and Jiang Chen fell into their hands instead of them falling into his hands, it would be a miserable outcome for Jiang Chen. And, once he was dealt with, the Imperial Decree saying that all his friends and family would be slaughtered would immediately be carried out. All the people of the Black Sect would be executed; none doubted this. Therefore, none of them refuted Jiang Chen’s words. Jiang Chen was a wise man, and he had a clear understanding of the situation. It wasn’t possible for them to disapprove of what he said.

Faced with someone like this, their fate could be decided with just one word from him. It all depended on whether or not Jiang Chen was happy. They all knew it was useless to beg for forgiveness or try and threaten him.

“However, I also said that as long as your hands aren’t stained with the blood of those from the Black Sect, you will be spared. However, you’ll still have to face punishment. I’ll give you two options. First option, cut both your arms off and leave. Second option, I’ll do it myself and then destroy your cultivation base, but I’ll spare your life.”

Jiang Chen said.

Although Jiang Chen's words caused sweat to instantly appear on the foreheads of those from the Martial Saint Dynasty, many of them also had a surprised look in their eyes. The punishment was indeed a surprise to them, as they thought they would have to face a death sentence. Although losing both arms was something very bad for them, at least it was better than losing their lives.

"I'll cut off my arms."

A Combat Soul warrior said without hesitating. He took out a razor sharp sword and instantly cut off his left arm. After that, he threw the sword into the sky, moved his arm underneath it, and let the sword slice it off.

After the first man cut off his arms, none of the other men hesitated any longer. They simply took out their weapons and cut off both their arms. It was a brutal and bloody scene, but the people of the Black Sect felt extremely excited from witnessing this.

Cutting away both arms by themselves, no ordinary men had this kind of courage. However, none of these men hesitated even slightly. They didn't know much about Jiang Chen, but after today's battle, they completely understood what kind of man Jiang Chen was. He was a man who showed no mercy to his enemies, and he meant what he said. They could imagine that if they were just a bit slower, Jiang Chen would have come forth and done it for them, and then cripple them as well.

Although Jiang Chen had given them two options, all of these men chose the first option. Even an idiot would know which option was best.

Yes, losing both arms would hugely impact their future cultivation, and they might even see their cultivation halt for the rest of their lives. However, there were some rare medicines that could make their arms regrow. Even if they couldn't find that; with their cultivation bases, they could still live a good life without both arms. However, if their cultivation base was destroyed, for any strong warrior, that was no different than killing them.

The life of a crippled man was not something they could imagine. Therefore, they didn't think twice, and just chose to lose their arms.

“You can leave now.”

Jiang Chen casually waved his hand.

None of these two hundred men dared to hesitate. They immediately turned around and left. For them, this place was a living hell; they didn't want to stay here for one more second.

“Hold on.”

Jiang Chen suddenly spoke again, causing all those who were leaving to instantly stop. All of them felt their hearts rapidly palpitating. They had no idea what this devil wanted to do, they

were just hoping that he wouldn't change his mind, as all of them had already lost their arms. If he decided to kill them now; wasn't that just bullying in plain daylight?

“With the way you're looking right now, I don't think you should return to the Martial Saint Dynasty. All emperors are now dead, and you've lost the Crown Prince as well. If you guys return without both arms, I'm sure the Imperial Emperor will just kill you all to vent his anger. Furthermore, you guys are useless to the Martial Saint Dynasty now. I think it'd be better if you just left to a faraway place; somewhere you can live a normal life.”

Jiang Chen said.

His words reminded all these people, causing them to be startled for a moment. However, gratitude soon filled their faces. His words were right; they came here with the Third Emperor and Crown Prince for a war, but now, all the emperors were gone, including the Crown Prince. If they returned as they were right now, the Imperial Emperor would definitely kill them to vent his anger.

‘All the emperors are dead, so why are you still alive?’

Furthermore, in their current state, they were of no more use to the Martial Saint Dynasty. They would certainly die if they returned. They might as well just listen to Jiang Chen and leave to a faraway place and hide their identity. That way, they might still be able to live a normal life.

After the people of the Martial Saint Dynasty left. The entire Black Sect erupted with cheers. All the disciples were yelling wildly. Today's battle had allowed them to vent their grief. They were all looking at Jiang Chen in the most respectful manner. Because of this young man, they were now welcoming a new life.

“Jiang Chen, God of War!”

“Jiang Chen, God of War!”

“Jiang Chen, God of War!”

.....

More than a few thousand disciples of the Black Sect were roaring in the training ground. The roars of a few thousand men, all using their Yuan energy was definitely ground shaking. The entire Black Sect had an unprecedented momentum. Even Daoist Black and Guo Shan had joined the crowd to roar. Although Daoist Black was the Black Sect's Sect Chief, ever since Jiang Chen had defeated Nanbei Chao, the real master of the Black Sect had been Jiang Chen. Jiang Chen's reputation in the Black Sect was much higher than Daoist Black's.

Just from the fact that Jiang Chen's statue stood in the center of the Black Sect anyone could see this, and Daoist Black understood this clearly. In his mind, Jiang Chen was the Black Sect's savior, and this was the second time that Jiang Chen had saved the entire Black Sect.

Jiang Chen waved his hand, causing the cheering to come to a stop.

“All my fellow disciples, I, Jiang Chen have returned, and I won’t let anything bad happen to the Black Sect again! From now on, the Black Sect will return to its original course; everyone can just go back and continue cultivating.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen waved his hand and unleashed a sea of flames onto the training ground. In an instant, all the dead bodies and severed arms on the ground were burnt to ashes, leaving no traces behind. A strong breeze then appeared, and the entire training ground returned to its original clean state, as if nothing had happened before.

“What a powerful flame!”

Guo Shan’s eyes lit up. As an alchemist himself, he had a good understanding about flames. The frightening flame unleashed by Jiang Chen was something he had never seen or heard of before. After the True Dragon Flame and Heavenly Thunder Flame merged together, the flame controlled by Jiang Chen had reached a maximum level. Not only these dead bodies; even the hardest rocks would instantly be burned to ashes.

“Jiang Chen, the Imperial Emperor won’t let you go after all you have done.”

The Crown Prince who stood next to Jiang Chen said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“It’s difficult to say who will let who off. Also, you’re just a damn palace eunuch; so you better shut your damn mouth. If you speak again, I’ll cut off your tongue.”

Jiang Chen glared at the Crown Prince.

The Crown Prince was gnashing his teeth in anger, but he dared not speak again, as he didn’t think Jiang Chen was joking.

.....

On the same night, in the inner area of the Black Sect, Han Yan, Big Yellow, and all the other men had returned. When they learned of Jiang Chen’s glorious victory, all of them were struck with excitement.

“Little Chen, you extremely awesome! I think the Imperial Emperor is furious now!”

Yu Zihan said.

“This is awesome! You’re really inhuman! All six emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty are dead; this is a huge loss for them! Something like this has never happened in the Martial Saint Dynasty before! I am really excited just from hearing what you did!”

Yu Zihan burst into laughter. His admiration toward Jiang Chen had increased to another level.

“How’s the situation on your side?”

Jiang Chen asked.

“Don’t worry! With me, Big Yellow in action, of course there won’t be anything surprising! Now, all the hostages are safe. However, Lord Jiu and your dad, as well as Yan Zhanyun are still being held in the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Big Yellow said.

“Hmph! I’ll settle this score with the Imperial Emperor. If anything bad happens to my father, I’ll definitely topple the entire Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. A cold light flickered within his eyes, causing him to look extremely frightening. The Imperial Emperor had imprisoned Jiang Zhenhai, completely crossing Jiang Chen’s bottom line.

“Little Chen, no matter what, the Martial Saint Dynasty is still very powerful. Since you’ve killed so many from the Martial Saint Dynasty, I’m sure the Imperial Emperor is extremely furious right now. If he sends forth his huge army to fight us, I really have no idea how we’re going to fight them.”

Han Yan said while furrowing his brows.

“The war between me and the Martial Saint Dynasty is unavoidable. I’ll proceed to the Martial Saint Dynasty tomorrow with the Crown Prince and the heads of those emperors. I’ll use them to save my father, father-in-law, and brother Jiu.”

The reason why Jiang Chen spared the Crown Prince was to save his family and friends. If not, after what he did today, the Imperial Emperor would definitely not spare Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun.

“But Little Chen, although you’ve broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm, and are considered invincible in the Combat Soul realm; the Imperial Emperor is a Combat King warrior! Are you confident you can fight him?”

Han Yan asked the most critical question. The war between them and the Martial Saint Dynasty was unavoidable. Although Jiang Chen had killed many important people from the Martial Saint Dynasty, if he couldn’t defeat a Combat King warrior, this would all end in a miserable defeat.

Chapter 447 – Visiting The Martial Saint Dynasty Alone

Everyone's eyes stopped on Jiang Chen. The question thrown out by Han Yan was indeed a critical one. The Martial Saint Dynasty had very deep and powerful resources, and their roots were incredibly deep. No matter which aspect it was considered from; the Martial Saint Dynasty was not an opponent the Black Sect could face.

Or put it this way; the battle with the Martial Saint Dynasty was actually Jiang Chen's lone battle. It was the battle between Jiang Chen and the Imperial Emperor. They could only survive this hopeless situation if Jiang Chen possessed the ability to defeat the Imperial Emperor.

However, the gap between the Combat Soul realm and the Combat King realm was too huge. The difference between the two was gigantic, and it was extremely difficult to compensate for the gap. Let alone the fact that Jiang Chen was only a Mid Combat Soul warrior.

“The Imperial Emperor is only a First Grade Combat King warrior, and my combat strength is more than enough for me to fight a First Grade Combat King warrior. Therefore, I have no fear of the Imperial Emperor. What I'm worried about is the fact that since the Martial Saint Dynasty has ruled the Eastern Continent for so many years, they have a ton of resources. Perhaps there's more than one Combat King warrior there. There might even be a Second Grade or Third Grade Combat King warrior. If that really is the case, the situation will be difficult for me to handle.”

Jiang Chen said, a frown visible on his face..

“First Grade Combat King?”

Han Yan and the rest were startled for a moment. They were puzzled by what Jiang Chen said.

“It’s normal that you guys don’t know about it, after all, there are too little Combat King warriors in the Eastern Continent. Without reaching the Combat King realm, you’ll never understand how terrifying a Combat King is. Furthermore, after reaching this realm, the classifications for each stage will change as well. After a Combat Soul warrior breaks through to the Combat King realm, the gap between each stage will be extremely tremendous. There is a huge gap between an Early Combat King warrior and a Late Combat King warrior. It has something to do with how well a Combat King warrior can control the Spatial Power. In order to shorten the gap between this huge difference, each Combat King stage is further divided into three smaller stages. With this, the Combat King realm is divided from First Grade to Ninth Grade.”

Jiang Chen explained. It was understandable that Han Yan and the others didn’t know about this. After all, they were in the Eastern Continent, and not the Divine Continent. Here, a Combat King was a war king who represented mightiness. In the Eastern Continent, the people only knew of one Combat King warrior; the Imperial Emperor. Therefore, there was no way for them to understand the real classifications of the Combat King realm. Only those who reached the Combat King realm could understand the gigantic gap between each stage, and would learn about the actual

classifications of the Combat King realm.

“First Grade to Third Grade belongs to the early stage, Fourth Grade to Sixth Grade belongs to the middle stage, and Seventh Grade to the Ninth Grade belongs to the late stage. This is the classifications of the Combat King realm. The cultivation realm starts from the Qi realm, Qi Sea realm, Mortal Core realm, Heavenly Core realm, and then to the Divine Core realm. These five realms are the five elementary realms. Breaking through to the Combat Soul realm is considered breaking through the elementary realms; forming a Combat Soul. Once a person becomes a Combat King and comprehends the Spatial Laws, his field of vision and comprehension ability will increase. Therefore, the classifications of the realm will be different as well.”

Jiang Chen explained in detail to everyone. In his opinion, all the people in front of him had the potential to become Combat King warriors, and they would have to learn this knowledge sooner or later.

After Jiang Chen finished explaining, everyone was so shocked that their mouths were wide open. They really didn't know anything about what Jiang Chen had just told them.

“Little Chen, how do you know all this?”

Han Yan couldn't help but ask.

“Because your brother is very handsome; that's why I know everything.”

Jiang Chen said with a big smile on his face.

Hearing his words, the group of people immediately replied by raising their middle fingers! However, all them quickly accepted the fact that there were some weirdoes in this world who couldn't be judged with common sense, and Jiang Chen was the biggest weirdo they knew. Although he was so young, it seemed like he knew everything, as if there really was nothing he didn't know about in this world.

“After listening to brother Jiang's explanation, my horizons have broadened. Looks like one can only step into the true world of cultivation after reaching the Combat King realm. I just wonder if I will have the chance to become a Combat King existence in this life.”

Yu Zihan sighed.

“I'm sure you can do it.”

Jiang Chen patted Yu Zihan on his shoulder.

“Senior brother Jiang, you don't have to comfort me. I am only a Late Divine Core warrior at the moment, not even close to the Combat Soul realm, let alone the much further away Combat King realm.”

Yu Zihan replied with a laugh. He knew his own strength and

weaknesses very well.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything and only kept smiling. Yu Zihan did in fact have high hopes of becoming a Combat King. After he absorbed the source essence of the energy vein, causing his constitution to improve; he had experienced a great improvement to his cultivation, and it was with incredible speed. It had only taken him half a year to go from the Early Heavenly Core realm to the Late Divine Core realm.

An improvement like this; no matter where he went, he would be considered a genius. Yu Zihan didn't need to feel disheartened, the only reason he felt that way was solely because he was comparing himself to Jiang Chen and Han Yan, who were extraordinary existences.

“The Imperial Emperor is just a First Grade Combat King, I can handle him with ease. However, if we declare total war on the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Black Sect won't have any chance of winning the war. I'll pay a visit to the Martial Saint Dynasty tomorrow and try to save my dad and the others. As for you all, try your best to disperse the Black Sect's disciples. Anyone below the Divine Core realm will have to temporarily leave here. If not, once the war commences, they will only serve as cannon fodder.”

Jiang Chen continued, “The war with the Martial Saint Dynasty is unavoidable. As for the plan regarding this war, we'll discuss that tomorrow after I meet with the Imperial Emperor.”

“I'm afraid the Imperial Emperor won't give us any more chances.”

Han Yan said.

“No worries, I’ll have a way of dealing with it.”

Jiang Chen spoke with glowing eyes. No matter what kind of situation he was facing, he always looked confident.

“Little Chen, you better be extra careful when visiting the Martial Saint Dynasty!”

Han Yan reminded.

“Don’t worry; it’s just a mere Martial Saint Dynasty. If I want to leave; none can stop me.”

A confident smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face.

The next day!

Jiang Chen started his journey to the Martial Saint Dynasty at midnight, and he arrived right at dawn.

Jiang Chen flew at full speed along his way. When he arrived at the Martial Saint Dynasty, he was still flying at the same speed as when he left, and he was immediately greeted by a couple of Golden Guards.

“Stop right there, who are you?”

The leading Golden Guard snapped. The few of them lined up and blocked Jiang Chen’s path. Although none of them recognized Jiang Chen, they sure recognized the person who stood next to Jiang Chen.

“Crown Prince!”

The few of them cried out in shock at the same time, and their expressions changed dramatically. Not only was the Crown Prince their highness; the Martial Saint Dynasty’s next Imperial Emperor, he was also the leader of all the Golden Guards; their leader.

“I am Jiang Chen. Inform the Imperial Emperor that I am here to give him a gift. Take a look at this.”

While saying that, Jiang Chen waved his hand and threw out a bunch of human heads; six emperors, Prince Wu Cong, and Yuan Long, the deputy commander of the Golden Guards. All skulls were floating in the sky in a grim manner, sending forth a cold sensation that horrified all those who saw it.

“What?!”

“Those are the heads of the emperors!”

“Oh heavens, something big is happening!”

.....

The few Golden Guards were immediately throw into confusion. The shocked expressions on their faces had reached a stage that couldn't be surpassed. The leading Golden Guard immediately sounded an alarm which echoed throughout the entire Martial Saint Dynasty.

Jiang Chen just remained standing where he was, a faint smile visible on his face. He wasn't showing any signs of trying to stop these few Golden Guards from sounding the alarm. He simply stood there; waiting for the Imperial Emperor to arrive.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

Countless people shot up into the sky, and in the blink of an eye, a few hundred strong figures appeared in the sky above the Martial Saint Dynasty, surrounding Jiang Chen and the Crown Prince in a tight circle. Some of these men were Golden Guards with prestigious statuses in the Martial Saint Dynasty, and some of them were of the mighty Imperial Army. Every single one of them was among the greatest of warriors in their respective fields.

Right at this moment, the eyes of all these men had stopped on the floating heads in front of them, causing their expressions to change

Something big had happened! This was something that had never occurred in the Martial Saint Dynasty's history! So many emperors had been killed, and their heads had even been brought to the Martial Saint Dynasty by someone to show off! A provocation like this was the biggest insult to the Martial Saint Dynasty!

And because of these heads, as well as the fact that the Crown Prince had been taken hostage by Jiang Chen, all of these men looked at Jiang Chen with frightened looks. All of them knew about Jiang Chen. The Imperial Decree to have all his friends and family killed had been passed down by the Imperial Emperor because of this young genius. However, no one could have thought that this young man would suddenly become so frightening. So many great warriors had combined forces to kill him, but not only had they failed, they were even killed by Jiang Chen. For the Martial Saint Dynasty, this was an incalculable loss.

“Imperial Emperor, why haven't you come out to welcome your family?”

Jiang Chen ignored the men surrounding him as he simply shouted toward the inner area of the Martial Saint Dynasty. His voice was like a thunderclap, continuously echoing throughout the sky above the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Bang!

A energy wave shot up toward the sky from the center of the Martial Saint Dynasty, representing extreme fury as it turned into a golden pillar that shot into the skies.

In the follow moment, a man brimming with power wearing a dragon robe flew out. He was incredibly furious. No one had seen him move, and he had already appeared outside the Martial Saint Dynasty.

It was the mightiness of a Combat King warrior! Just casually leaking out his fury was more than enough to startle one's heart and make it shudder with terror. When those Golden Guards and those of the Imperial Army saw the Imperial Emperor, they immediately bowed, then loosened the circle.

The Imperial Emperor's eyes stopped at the heads of the Third Emperor and the few others. The anger brewing between his brows had reached a maximum level. As the imperial prerogative, he would never allow a provocation like this. The Martial Saint Dynasty was at the height of power and splendor; it ruled the entire Eastern Continent, and none had ever dared reject its rule. However, someone had now killed all the emperors, and even taken the Crown Prince hostage. This was not just a simply slap to the Imperial Emperor's face, it was in fact a slap to the left side of his face, followed by the right side of his face!

“Jiang Chen, it looks like I have underestimated you.”

The Imperial Emperor's voice was so cold that it could even freeze a barbarian beast to death. However, he was still acting in a calm manner. All the emperors soul jade slips had broken yesterday, the person who was in charge of guarding the Soul Jade Slip room knew something big had happened, so he dared not hesitate to inform the Imperial Emperor of the incident.

But what the Imperial Emperor didn't expect was that Jiang Chen actually had such nerve! Before he could do anything, Jiang Chen had already come to the Martial Saint Dynasty all alone, and he had even brought the heads of all the emperors as a gift, causing them to float outside the Martial Saint Dynasty's main gate. He was simply crazy!

“Of course you've underestimated me. When you do something wrong, you naturally have to pay the price for it.”

Jiang Chen said in an indifferent tone.

Chapter 448 – Fighting The Imperial Emperor

Jiang Chen showed no politeness when speaking to the Imperial Emperor. They were mortal enemies after all. In the end, one of them would have to die. Thus, he had no intentions of being polite.

“Father, please save me!”

When the Crown Prince saw the Imperial Emperor, it was like seeing a life-saving straw. He immediately cried out in surprise. In his mind, he was safe now that the Imperial Emperor was here, as his father was an existence who was capable of achieving anything; not someone a tiny Jiang Chen could deal with. Since Jiang Chen was brave enough to come to the Martial Saint Dynasty all alone, he was just seeking death for himself.

“Shut up you useless fool!”

The Imperial Emperor glared at the Crown Prince and shouted in a cold manner. The son he had high hopes for had become the most useless one. If not for the Crown Prince’s lust, the situation today would not have happened. The human heads that were floating in mid-air all wore ferocious expressions on their face, causing the Imperial Emperor to feel bad. Not only because these emperors represented the face of the Martial Saint Dynasty, but also because they were the Imperial Emperor’s brothers. Now, all his brothers were dead, and he had become a lonely man.

“Jiang Chen, I’ll give you a chance now; hand over the Crown

Prince and those emperors to me.”

The Imperial Emperor said.

“Haha, Imperial Emperor, those words are truly funny. With the hatred between me and you, you can’t just make such a request. From the day you passed down the Imperial Decree to have all my family and friends killed, the war between me and the Martial Saint Dynasty was destined. Cut all the crap; release my dad, my father-in-law, and brother Jiu, and I’ll give you the Crown Prince and all the heads.”

Jiang Chen started laughing, finally revealing his purpose for coming here.

“You’re threatening me.”

A sharp light flickered in the Imperial Emperor’s eyes, and his fury became even stronger. As a man who held the imperial throne, no one had ever dared threaten him like this; Jiang Chen was definitely the first one.

“Naturally, I’m threatening you.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders and continued, “In fact, this is just a trade. The Crown Prince’s life is extremely precious to you, and the heads of all the emperors will have to be buried in the imperial graveyard. If not, if I simply bury their heads in the ground somewhere random on a desolate mountain...

I really don't think that will look nice for the Martial Saint Dynasty's face."

This was simply a plain threat, and there was nothing wrong with what Jiang Chen did. Conversely, the reason why the Imperial Emperor imprisoned Jiang Zhenhai was to threaten Jiang Chen as well.

"Nobody dares to threaten me. Jiang Chen, since you're here today, don't think you can leave! Once I've killed you; I will kill all your friends and family as well."

The Imperial Emperor said with an extremely cold voice. As the most distinguished man of the Eastern Continent, he would never allow anyone to challenge his authority, much less threaten him.

"Is that so? Why don't you just give it a shot? Let's see who can move faster. I promise, before you can strike, I will kill the Crown Prince and destroy all those heads."

Jiang Chen replied with an equally cold voice. He didn't seem to feel threatened by the Imperial Emperor's words at all. Comparing their temperament, there was no doubt Jiang Chen was steadier than the Imperial Emperor. He knew the Imperial Emperor would definitely compromise today, because no matter what happened to the Crown Prince, he was still the Crown Prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty. In the Imperial Emperor's mind, the Crown Prince was much more precious than Jiang Zhenhai. Besides that, all the emperors' heads represented the Martial Saint Dynasty's face, and their deaths had brought a disgrace to the Martial Saint Dynasty. If someone really destroyed these heads in front of the Imperial

Emperor, it wouldn't just be a matter of losing face.

Most importantly, they were all emperors; the Imperial Emperor's blood brothers. Since they were now dead, if their heads couldn't be buried in the imperial graveyard, the Imperial Emperor would be a complete failure.

“Do not think for a second that I am joking with you, as I only joke around with my friends. I'll now count to three, and if I don't see my father, the Crown Prince will lose an arm.”

Jiang Chen continued with an indifferent tone and place his palm on the Crown Prince's shoulder. The Crown Prince's face immediately turned pale. He was scared, as he knew how frightening Jiang Chen was. As long as Jiang Chen casually used some force, his arm would disappear.

The Imperial Emperor clenched his fist so tightly that bone cracking sounds could be heard. He had never been so angry before.

However, the Imperial Emperor could tell that Jiang Chen was not joking.

“Hmph!”

The Imperial Emperor coldly harrumphed, then he waved his hand, directly tearing the void, causing a crack to appear. A shivering wind immediately leaked out from the other side of the

gap. This was the frightening ability of a Combat King warrior. As they had mastered the Spatial Powers, they were able to tear space.

The Imperial Emperor stretched his arm into the spatial crack and pulled out four men who were all in messy states. These four men were none other than Wu Jiu, Xuan Ye, Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun who had been imprisoned in the Martial Saint Dynasty.

The four men staggered and could barely stand straight. When they finally stabilized their bodies, they immediately saw Jiang Chen who was standing right in front of them. The few of them were startled, but joyful expressions quickly emerged on their faces.

“Chen’er!”

Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun cried out in surprise at the same time. During the time where they had been imprisoned, their faith had always remained strong, and that faith had supported them through the hardships. That faith was their precious son and son-in-law. They firmly believed that Jiang Chen could definitely come and save them.

“Brother, what is this?!”

Wu Jiu saw Jiang Chen as well, but his glance immediately fell onto those floating heads. When he saw the faces of those heads, Wu Jiu didn’t feel any joy, but he just let out a long and heavy sigh. No matter what, these men were his blood brothers. Although they

had always given him trouble when he was still alive; treating him as their enemy, Wu Jiu still felt pity for them when he saw their miserable ending.

Of course, Wu Jiu only felt pity. Since the Imperial Emperor had passed down the Imperial Decree, and didn't even let go of Wu Jiu's son, he had broken off all relationships with the Martial Saint Dynasty in his mind.

However, Wu Jiu and Xuan Ye's minds were still raging with shock. The reason for these surging emotions was naturally Jiang Chen. When Jiang Chen left them, he was only a peak Divine Core warrior, not even close to the Combat Soul realm. However, in such a short amount of time, not only had he broken through to the Combat Soul realm, his combat strength had become even more incredibly heavenly defying, as he was able to kill so many mighty warriors of the Martial Saint Dynasty. Judging from the miserable endings of these emperors, without guessing, they were able to see that Shangguan Sheng and Tiangang Yi had ended up worse.

“Wu Jiu, look at this. This is the man you've called your brother, and he has killed all your blood brother. I'm betting you're regretting your decision now.”

The Imperial Emperor threw a cold glance at Wu Jiu.

“Hmph! Regret? You're the one responsible for all this! I told you before; do not offend Jiang Chen. When he just came to the Martial Saint Dynasty, if we could have treated him like an important guest, perhaps he would have joined us and worked

with us. If that had happened, not only would the Martial Saint Dynasty have one less enemies, it would become stronger as well. But you and everyone else didn't like Jiang Chen, so you created all sorts of trouble for him, and that is the cause for today's tragedy. As for the blood brothers you mentioned, I'm sorry, but when you decided to kill me, and the moment they deliberately planned to kill me; the ties between us broke!"

Wu Jiu coldly harrumphed. The Imperial Emperor and the other emperors had long ago hurt him. He had no doubts, if not for Jiang Chen, he would already have become a dead man, and his son would have become a criminal who was wanted by the Martial Saint Dynasty.

"Good, very good! I will let all of you know what the consequences of becoming the Martial Saint Dynasty's enemy are!"

The Imperial Emperor said with a hideous smile visible on his face.

"Imperial Emperor, save your brath. Set all four of them free, and I'll give you the Crown Prince and all those heads."

Jiang Chen interrupted the conversation and said. Today, he was here to trade.

"The Crown Prince can be exchanged for one man. Those heads can be exchanged for another. Out of these four men, you can only bring two away."

The Imperial Emperor said.

“No, I want all of them; not one left behind.”

Under no circumstances would Jiang Chen give in. What a joke, with the Imperial Emperor current anger, he might perhaps kill those left behind.

“Jiang Chen, don’t push your luck, this is my bottom line.”

The Imperial Emperor was guarding his last bit of imperial authority.

“You have long ago crossed my bottom line. I must bring all four men with me; there are no rooms for negotiation.”

Jiang Chen said in a resolute tone, leaving no room for discussion.

Seeing Jiang Chen holding onto his position so firmly, the Imperial Emperor’s imperial robes started shaking, as his body was trembling with anger. However, in the follow moment, his eyes lit up. He suddenly realized that it didn’t matter if he gave all these men to Jiang Chen. Under the current circumstances, could Jiang Chen really escape from this place? As long as he could get the Crown Prince and those heads back, all of these men would still die, including Jiang Chen.

“I’ll say it one last time; the Crown Prince can be exchanged for

one person, the heads for another. However, Jiang Chen, since you have the power to slaughter so many peak Combat Soul warriors, I wonder if you have the courage to fight with me? If you can take three strikes from me without being killed, I will let all of you go freely.”

A scornful smile appeared on the Imperial Emperor’s face.

“Alright.”

Out of the Imperial Emperor’s expectations, Jiang Chen actually accepted his challenge straightaway, showing no signs of hesitation.

“Since you’re seeking death, I won’t be polite with you.”

A ridiculing look leaked out from the Imperial Emperor’s eyes. He never thought that Jiang Chen would accept his challenge so easily. It looked like this young man’s confident had exploded forth as the result of his own strength; he thought he was invincible, and had no idea about the massive gap between the Combat Soul realm and Combat King realm, as that was something that Jiang Chen would never be able to imagine.

Let alone three strikes, the Imperial Emperor believed he would be able to crushed Jiang Chen into shredded meat with just a single strike. Once he killed Jiang Chen, he would proceed to kill all of Jiang Chen’s family and friends, avenging all the emperors.

This was the Imperial Emperor's thoughts. Certainly, Jiang Chen had his own plan as well. In fact, he had been waiting for the Imperial Emperor to come out with the words saying that he would let them all go free. If not, with Jiang Zhenhai and the other three men as burdens, it would be really difficult for him to leave this place today.

“Come!”

Jiang Chen leapt forward and arrived in mid-air. At the same time, he placed all the floating heads into his storage ring, as well as the Crown Prince. Although the space within his storage ring was an isolated it, and it was used to place non-living items, the Crown Prince was a Combat Soul warrior, so he wouldn't suffocate to death in such a short period of time.

“Chen'er, be careful!”

“Brother, be careful!”

Jiang Zhenhai and Wu Jiu gave out words of caution at the same time, especially Wu Jiu. His face was covered with worry. He certainly knew how incredible Jiang Chen was, but the Imperial Emperor was a real Combat King warrior, not someone a young man who was only at the Combat Soul realm could deal with. Three strikes from the Imperial Emperor could really kill him.

Chapter 449 – Peerless Monster

Everyone raised their heads toward the sky. Jiang Chen and the Imperial Emperor stood opposite of each other, and both were leaking intense killing intent.

“This Jiang Chen is unaware of his own limits. He thinks he can fight the Imperial Emperor just because he has killed all the emperors. He is simply seeking his own death.”

“You’re right. The Imperial Emperor is a real Combat King warrior! Not to mention three strikes, I don’t think that Jiang Chen can defend against one!”

“No one can come to a good end when fighting the Martial Saint Dynasty. However, this Jiang Chen is truly an existence that defies the heavens! He has killed so many emperors and caused an unprecedented loss to the Martial Saint Dynasty. Thus, even if he is killed today, his name will still be known to the world.”

.....

All the Golden Guards and Imperial Soldiers were feeling mixed emotions. In their minds, they had no doubt that Jiang Chen was a peerless devil king. Having such achievements at his young age, even if he was killed by the Imperial Emperor today, his name would still be left behind because of his great strength. Even in a hundred years from now, he would be an existence known by everyone.

Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun clenched their fists tightly, and their faces were covered with worry, especially Jiang Zhenhai's. Jiang Chen was everything to him, and if anything bad happened to Jiang Chen, he would lose all reason to continue living in this world.

“Lord Jiu, do you think brother Jiang Chen can withstand three strikes from the Imperial Emperor?”

Xuan Ye asked in a worried manner.

“Fighting a Combat King with a Mid Combat Soul cultivation is something that has never happened before. According to common sense, it is absolutely impossible for him to do it. However, with my understanding of this little brother, he is a man who will never do anything he isn't certain about, and he is a man of miracles. Perhaps he'll create anything miracle this time.”

Wu Jiu said.

He had no idea if there really was someone in this world capable of fighting a Combat King warrior with just a Mid Combat Soul cultivation. However, his knowledge of Jiang Chen was good. Although he was a young man, his mind was deep and thoughtful, and he would never do anything he wasn't certain about. Not only that, the result of this fight was directly related to the safety of two important men – Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun. Hence, Jiang Chen wouldn't make light of this.

In mid-air, the Imperial Emperor was portraying a manner of

greatness. As a Combat King warrior, as well as the Imperial Emperor who sat on the top of this continent, he had always looked at others from the top.

“Jiang Chen, I really admire your courage, as you accepted my challenge.”

The Imperial Emperor said with a grim smile visible on his face.

“Come, attack me.”

Jiang Chen was very straightforward, and he didn't want to waste any time. With his senses and experience, not only could he tell that the Imperial Emperor had a First Grade Combat King cultivation, he could even tell how much combat strength the Imperial Emperor had. And, with Jiang Chen's combat strength and 10,000 Dragon Marks, it was more than enough for Jiang Chen to fight, or even defeat a First Grade Combat King.

“Hmph!”

The Imperial Emperor coldly harrumphed. Without hesitating, he threw out his fist with tremendous force. The punch instantly caused the space to twist, and cracks to form. Together with Spatial Power, it was descending toward Jiang Chen in a formidable manner.

One punch broke the sky; the attack of a Combat King warrior was indeed incredible. The punch instantly caused the

surrounding environment to change. If it was someone other than Jiang Chen, even if they possessed the combat strength that allowed them to fight a Combat King warrior, they wouldn't know what to do when faced with the unfamiliar Spatial Power.

The biggest difference between a Combat Soul warrior and a Combat King warrior was the Spatial Power. And as a Combat Soul warrior was completely unfamiliar with this power, they would usually have no way to defend against it. They wouldn't even know where they should be defending.

However, Jiang Chen was different. Although he was still unable to utilize the Spatial Power, his understanding of the Spatial Power couldn't be matched by anyone in this place. Thus, when faced with the Imperial Emperor's attack, he didn't show any signs of panicking.

Jiang Chen could accurately see the moving path of the Spatial Power, and from that, he was able to accurately defend against it.

In fact, on the path of cultivation, there was a saying that when the force was big enough, it was able to break all sorts of techniques. When faced with absolute force; everything would return to nothingness. Jiang Chen had 10,000 Dragon Marks now, and he was thus able to unleash ten million jins of force.

“First Grade Combat King, you're nothing more than this.”

Jiang Chen let out an explosive roar, then he too threw out a punch containing tremendous force. As he punched out, his arm

was immediately covered with blood red dragon scales, and an illusionary dragon emerged as well. The dragon was formed entirely from the concentration of incredible energy, and as it carried the raging True Dragon Flame and Heavenly Thunder Flame along its way, it simply looked so mighty that none could stare directly at it with the naked eye.

An expert never failed to show his ability. Jiang Chen's attack instantly caused everyone's expressions to change, including the Imperial Emperor. Not only that, those Golden Guards and Imperial Soldiers who thought the Imperial Emperor could crush Jiang Chen into nothingness with a single strike, their smiles were frozen on their face, because they could clearly feel that the energy in Jiang Chen's punch was no weaker than the energy in the Imperial Emperor's punch.

A punch as tough as this could destroy everything. Jiang Chen's punch was a typical example of ferociousness.

Boom!

The attacks launched by both parties collided with each other. The Spatial Power and the incredibly powerful punch clashed, instantly causing the space of that particular area to start twisting. Shockwaves from the collision spread throughout the entire scene, and the sky above the collision nearly had shift in shape. The heavens were trembling, and black smoke was curling up from the center of the impact.

No one could remain calm, as everyone felt a tremendous pressure from what they saw. The fight between these two men

was incredibly violent. Fortunately, they were fighting high up in the sky. If not, just the shockwaves from the collision would be more than enough to wreak havoc to the Martial Saint Dynasty. No one were able to guess how many buildings would be ruined if they fought closer to the ground.

Jiang Chen and the Imperial Emperor's bodies both shook at the same time. They were actually evenly matched for their first attack. Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, so not only was his body incredibly strong, it also allowed him to recover quickly. Within a very short amount of time, he had once again been restored to his peak condition. In this aspect, he had more advantages than the Imperial Emperor.

“How could this be possible?!”

The Imperial Emperor's expression changed drastically. His mind was completely overturned with extreme shock, and the way he looked at Jiang Chen had completely change. Not once in his wildest dreams had he dreamt that a Combat Soul warrior would one day be able to fight equally with him. Furthermore, that man was just a mere youngster with a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base! This was absolutely absurd!

What was a monster? This was a monster! You could never judge such a person with normal standards, as a person like this was beyond ordinary humans. This type of man was the most frightening existence.

“Awesome!”

Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun couldn't control their excitement and simply let out joyful cries. Seeing Jiang Chen fighting in such an incredible manner made them very prideful.

“This is fantastic! Brother Jiang Chen has widened my horizons once more! With just a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, he actually defended himself from a Combat King warrior's attack, and he isn't at a disadvantageous position at all! If I hadn't witnessed this with my own eyes, I never would have been able to believe it! Shocking, this is absolutely shocking!”

Xuan Ye couldn't be any more astonished. He knew that Jiang Chen's strength was frightening, but he never knew it could reach such an incredible state. With just a Mid Combat Soul cultivation, he was able to fight equally with a Combat King warrior. This was simply heavenly defying. Judging from this, not only would the Imperial Emperor not be able to kill Jiang Chen with three strikes, it would be extremely difficult for him to defeat Jiang Chen.

“Brother Jiang is indeed the most heavenly-defying existence I have ever met in this world; no one can even come close to him.”

Wu Jiu said with mixed emotions. Clearly, they had no idea that when Jiang Chen was in the Southern Continent, he had attracted Heavenly Tribulation. A man who was able to attract Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, it was impossible for a man like that to not be someone who defies the heavens. A monster like him, no matter what he did; it would be normal.

Underneath the heavens, how many people could attract Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm? At least, with Jiang Chen's experience, he had never met or heard of anyone like that before.

“Imperial Emperor, continue attacking; you still have two strikes.”

Jiang Chen's fighting spirit was soaring. Fighting a Combat King was something really exciting for him, and it made his blood boil.

“Jiang Chen, I have to admit that you are indeed a peerless genius, one who can't be found even throughout thousands of years. However, if you think you really can fight me with your pitiful Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, you must be kidding! The first strike was merely a casual one, I want to see how you're going to defend against the next two!”

The Imperial Emperor unleashed his energy as he spoke with an indifferent tone. To be honest, when looking at Jiang Chen who stood opposite of him, the Imperial Emperor was feeling regretful. He should have roped in a genius like this, and not become his enemy.

When they met for the first time at the Martial Saint Palace, if the Imperial Emperor could have been friendlier toward Jiang Chen and given him a good offer, with the relationship between Wu Jiu and Jiang Chen, perhaps Jiang Chen could have made a positive impact on the Martial Saint Dynasty. Or, at least, they wouldn't have come to this stage today.

However, since everything had happened; there wasn't much else to say. A genius like this had to be killed as quickly as possible, and it wasn't too late now. No matter what, the Imperial Emperor would not allow Jiang Chen to grow further. If not, the consequences would be beyond his imagination.

“Show me what you got!”

Jiang Chen had no fear. The Imperial Emperor was just a First Grade Combat King, and it was no longer enough to cause him any harm.

A golden light emerged from the Imperial Emperor's eyes. He slowly raised his hands, then arranged his fingers to be in the shape of a sword's tip. Soon, they started flashing with a bright gleam. The Imperial Emperor then roared out, “Heavenly Imperial Finger!”

Boom!

An explosive sound immediately echoed out from the sky, and a crack appeared in the space in front of his finger. He forcefully pointed his finger forward, unleashing a gigantic golden finger toward Jiang Chen that seemed to carry an unlimited amount of power, which was more than enough to kill everything along its way.

The Heavenly Imperial Finger was a combat skill exclusive to the Martial Saint Dynasty. The Third Emperor had used it against

Jiang Chen in the previous battle. However, although it was the same combat skill, there was a huge difference between the one unleashed by the Third Emperor and the Imperial Emperor, they couldn't be compared.

“I said this before; this finger skill is really lousy. Nine Solar Fingers – Seventh Finger!”

Jiang Chen roared out as well and counterattacked with his own finger skill. He had previously been using the Six Solar Fingers, a branch skill of the Nine Solar Finger. Now, since Jiang Chen had successfully formed 10,000 Dragon Marks, he was able to use the Seventh Finger of the Nine Solar Fingers.

Rumble...

The space trembling, and the color of the sky had changed. Seven fingers appeared at the same time, and they were all shining brightly in a golden light. Each of the fingers were covered with golden-colored symbols, giving them all a sense of mysteriousness. Soon after, all seven fingers merged into one, and it immediately charged toward the Imperial Emperor's Heavenly Imperial Finger.

Everyone standing underneath them were holding their breath. No one had any idea who would be the winner of this exchange. Judging solely from the energies, both of them were evenly matched. This once again caused the expressions of the Golden Guards and Imperial Soldiers to change. They could no longer see any hope; this monster was a heavenly defying existence, and even a Combat King warrior like the Imperial Emperor was unable to defeat him.

Rumble!

The Heavenly Imperial Finger and Seventh Solar Finger violently slammed into each other, and the space was once again cracked by the collision. However, this time, the force of impact was much greater compared to the previous impact, as that had just been a collision of their fists.

Chapter 450 – War In Three Days

Although the Heavenly Imperial Finger was a rare combat skill for the Martial Saint Dynasty, when it was compared to the Nine Solar Fingers, the gap between them was not small. Also, since Jiang Chen's combat strength was equal to that of the Imperial Emperor, there was a huge possibility that Jiang Chen would have the upper hand in this fight.

Parts of the space were destroyed, causing black hurricanes to appear and dance in the wind. As a result of the impact, the Imperial Emperor's body shook, and he was forced to take a step back before he could stand firm once again. On the opposite side, Jiang Chen was able to remain standing without moving a bit. With this result, anyone whose eyes could clearly tell that Jiang Chen was the one with the upper hand in this exchange.

“What?!”

The Imperial Emperor cried out in shock, and felt like throwing up blood. He couldn't believe what had just happened in front of his eyes. With his First Grade Combat King cultivation, Jiang Chen had actually knocked him back in an exchange of attacks! This was really a joke, and it just felt so unreal to him.

“Heavens! What kind of monster is this Jiang Chen? How can he be so strong? The Imperial Emperor said that he could kill Jiang Chen with three strikes, but now, the result is completely different, and the Imperial Emperor was just knocked back by Jiang Chen!”

“How can this be possible? I can’t believe what I just saw!”

.....

The Golden Guards and Imperial Soldiers were greatly terrified by what just happened. The difference between the actual result of the fight and what they had expected was completely different. Initially, they thought that with the Imperial Emperor’s cultivation, even if he couldn’t kill Jiang Chen, he would at least be able to cause a severe injury to him.

But no one had ever thought Jiang Chen would be this horrible. Not only had he not suffered any injuries, he had even knocked back the Imperial Emperor while exchanging attacks! This was extremely shocking, and people were having a hard time believing their own eyes.

Jiang Zhenhai, Yan Zhanyun and Wu Jiu all became incredibly excited, and sharp light flickered in all their eyes. Jiang Chen was too strong, and the stronger Jiang Chen was, the better it was for them. If Jiang Chen couldn’t defeat the Imperial Emperor, even if they somehow managed to leave safely today, there would be no way for them to escape from the Imperial Emperor in the future.

In order to truly fight with the Martial Saint Dynasty, they would need the ability to fight a Combat King warrior. Now, since they found out that Jiang Chen was capable of doing so, they would naturally be happy. At least, they had seen some hope for what was about to come.

“Imperial Emperor, you have one last strike. I think it would be best if you attacked me with everything you got. If not, not only will you not be able to kill me, perhaps you won’t even be able to touch a hair on my body. If that’s what happens, it would truly be a disgrace.”

Jiang Chen scoffed.

The Imperial Emperor’s expression completely changed, and his mighty imperial attitude of someone who sat above all had disappeared. He was looking at Jiang Chen as if he was looking at a monster. He really couldn’t imagine how a young man with a mere Mid Combat Soul cultivation could be so strong.

His expression became extremely gloomy. As he earlier mentioned, he would only attack three times. Now, there was only one attack left. Judging from the current situation, it seems to be impossible for him to kill Jiang Chen. However, the Imperial Emperor still had a card up his sleeve, and in his opinion, it was more than enough to inflict huge damage to Jiang Chen.

Clang!

The Imperial Emperor waved his hand, revealing a long and thin golden sword. The sword had a body as thin as a cicada’s wing, and it was emitting an ice-cold killing intent. Numerous symbols were carved onto the sword’s body, and it was fully covered with Spatial Power. And, with just a simple shake, the surrounding space instantly twisted. This sword was a shocking King Weapon, and it was no weaker than the weapon used by the Third Emperor.

“Jiang Chen, I wonder if you can defend yourself against my Profound Firmament Sword.”

The Imperial Emperor let out a thunderous roar. At the same time, the Profound Firmament sword made an explosive sound as he raised it up high. It had now completely locked on to Jiang Chen’s aura. Like a sudden thunderclap, the Imperial Emperor swung the sword toward Jiang Chen, and in just the blink of an eye, it arrived in front of Jiang Chen’s face.

The tremendous power of a king swept across the scene. Only a Combat King could truly unleash the power of a King Weapon. Everyone were excitedly watching the battle high up in the sky, and those Golden Guards and Imperial Soldiers were struck with unspeakable excitement, as the sudden surge of the Imperial Emperor’s energy had let them see hope of killing Jiang Chen.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, another loud cry could be heard coming from Jiang Chen’s hand. When everyone turned to Jiang Chen, they could see that a huge golden sword had appeared in his hand. It was an amazingly huge sword, and the energy it was unleashing was no weaker than the Imperial Emperor’s Profound Firmament Sword.

Clang!

The Heavenly Saint Sword and Profound Firmament Sword, the

two peerless swords crashed into each other, and immediately produced a large amount sparks. The collision instantly caused layer after layer of space to be ripped off. It looked extremely frightening. With this attack, the Imperial Emperor didn't kill, or even defeat Jiang Chen; they were still evenly matched! Although the Imperial Emperor had used his King Weapon to launch the attack, Jiang Chen could still match him with his power.

“This is obviously a Superior Weapon, but it's actually emitting the power of a King Weapon! Damn it!”

The Imperial Emperor nearly vomited blood, but he had to face reality. Jiang Chen had grown up now, and he had reached a stage where the Imperial Emperor could no longer control him. With his current combat strength, not only could he not kill Jiang Chen, it would be extremely difficult for him to defeat Jiang Chen in a fight.

This situation made it so that the Imperial Emperor couldn't help but feel regret. He could still clearly remember when he had first met Jiang Chen in the Martial Saint Palace. This guy was just a young kind at the Late Divine Core realm, and he had been forced to seek refuge in the Martial Palace as a result of hiding from the Shanguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. It seemed to him as if all of that had happened just yesterday. But now, Jiang Chen had grown to this level. His speed of improvement was incredibly horrifying, and if the Imperial Emperor wasn't the one to personally experience this, he never would have been able to believe that this could really happen.

However, the Imperial Emperor was regretting not making up

his mind and killing Jiang Chen in the earlier stages, causing to face such a tragedy today. No matter what, although Jiang Chen now had the ability to fight evenly with him, the overall power of the Martial Saint Dynasty was still not something Jiang Chen could deal with. An unprecedented killing intent now filled the Imperial Emperor's mind. Jiang Chen had grown up, and the Imperial Emperor would not allow him to continue growing.

“That’s three strikes. Imperial Emperor, it’s time to honor your words.”

Jiang Chen said. He retrieved the Crown Prince and all the emperors’ heads from his storage ring, and without saying anything else, he simply threw them to the Imperial Emperor. Although the Imperial Emperor was filled with killing intent toward Jiang Chen and all his family, he was still the Imperial Emperor. As the man who held the imperial throne, he had to honor his words. Since the Imperial Emperor had promised to only attack three times in front of so many people, Jiang Chen did not fear that he would go back on his word, unless the Imperial Emperor had stopped caring about his face. Of course, that was impossible. Even if the Imperial Emperor stopped caring about his own face, the Martial Saint Dynasty would still need it.

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, without hesitating, Wu Jiu and the other three men immediately flew toward him and stood around him. Each of them wore a delighted expression on their face, especially Wu Jiu. The day Wu Jiu was thrown into the Heavenly Jail, he thought he was done for; it was only a matter of time before he would get killed. He never thought he would be rescued in such a short amount of time.

“Jiang Chen, I’ll honor my words. All of you can leave freely now. However, this is just the beginning of the war between you and me. I will give you three days to catch your last breath. In three days, I’ll bring my army and attack the Black Sect, then I will kill all your friends and family. At that moment, it won’t just be as simply as three strikes.”

The Imperial Emperor said in an indifferent tone.

“I’ll be waiting for you. I really want to see if my friends and family will be the ones to die, or you and the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Jiang Chen said in an imposing manner, portraying an overbearing attitude. He had no fear of the Imperial Emperor’s threats. This was an unavoidable war, and three was just enough for him to make some preparations.

Chapter 451 – Jiang Chen’s Plan

A thousand miles away from the Martial Saint Dynasty, Jiang Chen and the others stopped by a mountain range. After he had a quick look at Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun’s status, Jiang Chen finally let out a sigh of relief. The auras of these men, including Wu Jiu, didn’t have any huge differences. Clearly, although they had suffered some pressure back in the Heavenly Jail, they hadn’t been hurt.

“Dad, father-in-law, I’m sorry. Chen’er has made you suffer.”

Jiang Chen bowed deeply toward both men. They were among the most important persons in his life.

Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun quickly stretched their hands out and helped Jiang Chen up. Both men wore bright smiles on their face, and the more they looked at Jiang Chen, the happier they felt. This young man in front of them was their biggest pride.

“Chen’er, I’m so proud to see your achievements! We, the Jiang family are really fortunate to have you! Even if dad has to die today, I would have no regrets!”

Jiang Zhenhai said with a smile. Having a son like this, he felt really gratified.

“Dad, don’t worry. As long as I am here, no one can hurt you, not even the heavens emperor!”

Jiang Chen said in a serious manner. If he couldn’t protect those closest to him, as the once greatest Saint underneath the Heavens, he wouldn’t have the face to walk in this world any longer.

“Brother, I never could have imagined this! The speed of your improvement is just like a dream! Your brother never thought that you could break through to the Mid Combat Soul realm in such a short amount of time! Not only that, but you can actually fight a Combat King warrior with just a Mid Combat Soul cultivation

base! This is an unprecedented miracle! If I hadn't witnessed it with my own eyes, I never would have been able to believe it!"

Wu Jiu said with mixed feelings. Although Jiang Chen had brought a lot of shock, what happened today went way beyond anything he had done in the past. Fighting a Combat King warrior with just a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, perhaps underneath the heavens, only Jiang Chen was capable of doing something so incredible.

"Brother Jiu, I'm sure you have a clear understanding of the resentment between me and the Marital Saint Dynasty. The Imperial Emperor will not back down, and the decisive battle will most likely be in three days. If brother Jiu feels that you are in a difficult position, you don't have to participate in this battle."

Jiang Chen turned to Wu Jiu and said. The resentment between him and the Imperial Emperor could no longer be resolved, and the upcoming battle was unavoidable. However, no matter what, Wu Jiu's last name was still Wu, and he was from the Martial Saint Dynasty. The battle would surely put him in a difficult position.

"Lord Jiu..."

Xuan Ye wanted to say something, but he was stopped by Wu Jiu.

"Xuan Ye, I know what you want to say."

After saying that, Wu Jiu turned to Jiang Chen and continued in a serious manner, "Brother, since the very moment when they threw me into the Heavenly Jail, the moment when the Imperial Emperor passed down that Imperial Decree; when my very own blood brothers deliberately planned everything to kill me, I, Wu Jiu cut away all my ties with the Martial Saint Dynasty. You were right, the Imperial Emperor has no room for me in his mind, and since I have chosen my side, I will definitely walk this path until the end. The battle between you and the Martial Saint Dynasty, I will definitely help you with all my effort!"

Wu Jiu clearly stated his attitude regarding this matter. The Imperial Emperor and those emperors had hurt his heart. Wu Jiu was a man of courage and uprightness, and he never behaved irresolutely when making a decision. In order to rescue Wu Jiu, Jiang Chen had risked his own life and come to the Martial Saint Dynasty all alone, and in the end, Jiang Chen was going to have an all-out battle with the Imperial Emperor. So, how could Wu Jiu just step back and do nothing?

“That’s what I was looking for!”

Xuan Ye clenched his fist tightly as excitement emerged onto his face. In his mind, he only had one master; Wu Jiu. The Martial Saint Dynasty no longer held any position in his heart, and that’s why he was angrier than anyone else after seeing how the Martial Saint Dynasty had treated Wu Jiu. Since Jiang Chen was going to fight them, he had decided to fight together with Jiang Chen without hesitating.

“Alright. We’ll need to return to the Black Sect now, we’ll start planning once we’re there.”

Jiang Chen patted Wu Jiu on his shoulder. After that, the group began flying toward the Black Sect.

“Brother Jiu, how many Combat King warriors does the Martial Saint Dynasty have in total?”

Along the way to the Black Sect, Jiang Chen asked Wu Jiu the question he was more concerned about.

“Being able to rule the entire Eastern Continent, the Martial Saint Dynasty has an extremely strong force. Ever since the dynasty was established and until it was inherited by the current Imperial Emperor, three Combat Kings have appeared, including the Imperial Emperor. The Old Emperor and the Old Great Emperor are both Combat King warriors, but they’ve lived in seclusion for a very long time, and they don’t interfere with the Martial Saint Dynasty’s matters. The Old Emperor is a First Grade

Combat King warrior similar to the Imperial Emperor, but he is slightly stronger than the Imperial Emperor. Since the Imperial Emperor knows that you have the strength to fight a Combat King warrior, he might ask the Old Emperor for help, then we'll have to face two Combat King warriors the upcoming battle."

Wu Jiu explained.

"Two First Grade Combat King warriors."

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, then he turned to Wu Jiu and said, "Brother Jiu, you are currently half a step into the Combat King realm. Do you still remember what I told you back in Inferno Hell? Your Dao of War seems too complicated, but you can focus on and cultivation only one kind of Dao, you'll definitely yield a different result. If you can do as I said and enter secluded cultivation, I'm certain you'll be able to break through and become a Combat King warrior in three days. At that point of time, we'll have two Combat King warriors on our side, and we'll be able to fight the two emperors."

Hearing what Jiang Chen said, Wu Jiu's body instantly shook. Only now did he remember what Jiang Chen had told him back in Inferno Hell. As Jiang Chen's cultivation was very weak at that time, he hadn't taken it seriously. However, today's Jiang Chen was a completely different man, and he seemed so confident that Wu Jiu would be able to break through to the Combat King realm in three days, causing Wu Jiu to feel really excited. He immediately made up his mind to enter secluded cultivation once they arrived at the Black Sect to follow Jiang Chen's instructions on how to cultivate his Dao of War.

"Alright, I'll enter secluded cultivation once we return. I'll do as you told me to this time."

Wu Jiu said.

"What about the Old Great Emperor's cultivation?"

Jiang Chen kept asking. Know thyself; know your enemy, then you can go through a hundred battles without any fear of defeat.

“It has been a very long time since the Old Great Emperor appeared in public, but I think he is a Second Grade Combat King now. It will be very difficult for us to deal with him. However, he won’t participate in the upcoming battle, and the Imperial Emperor won’t disturb him with this kind of matter. However, if the Martial Saint Dynasty is on the brink of destruction, the Old Great Emperor will definitely strike, and he’ll be our biggest threat.”

Wu Jiu explained.

After listening to what Wu Jiu said, not only did Jiang Chen not feel worried, a look of surprise could be found in his eyes. Currently, First Grade Combat Kings could no longer give him any pressure. And, as his Dragon Transformation skill was on the brink of transformation, the idea of using the Imperial Emperor and Old Emperor to stimulate his potential, which in turn pushed the Dragon Transformation skill toward evolution, was impractical. Judging from the current situation, in order for the Dragon Transformation skill to evolve, he would be forced to borrow the pressure from the Old Great Emperor.

Based on Jiang Chen’s estimation, once the Dragon Transformation skill completed its evolution, his cultivation base would immediately reach the Late Combat Soul realm. And, once he reached that left, Jiang Chen was confident that he could kill a Second Grade Combat King warrior. At that point of time, the Martial Saint Dynasty would no longer pose any threat to him.

“Chen’er, the Martial Saint Dynasty is really powerful. Are you confident you can handle this?”

Jiang Zhenhai asked in a worried manner.

“Don’t worry dad, everything is under my control. The war between us and the Martial Saint Dynasty is unavoidable, so we

can't just stand here and do nothing, and wait for them to kill our family and friends."

Jiang Chen replied and laughed. A confident smile emerged on his face.

"Sigh... brother, I really don't know where you find that confidence."

Wu Jiu said, a bitter smile apparent on his face.

"Brother Jiang has always created miracles, and each miracle he has created have been bigger than the previous one. I have a feeling that the Martial Saint Dynasty who has ruled the Eastern Continent for so many years, will sooner or later be destroyed by brother Jiang."

It was Xuan Ye who said this. If it was in the past, even he himself wouldn't have believed his own words. But now, he could see all sorts of possibilities through Jiang Chen. Or, put it this way, there was nothing impossible when it came to Jiang Chen.

"Brother Jiu, aside from Combat Kings, what is the overall strength of the Martial Saint Dynasty? For example, how many Late Combat Soul warriors do they have?"

Jiang Chen continued asking. It was obvious that this would be a battle of a major scale, and there would be many participants.

"The overall strength is very great, as they have many Combat Soul warriors. At any given time, they can bring forth an army that consists of a few hundred Combat Soul warriors. As for Late Combat Soul warriors, although you've killed all the emperors, I think they can still send at least twenty Late Combat Soul warriors."

Wu Jiu said.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. This made it difficult. During the upcoming battle, he would have to deal with the Imperial Emperor and Old Emperor, and thus, he would have no time to

handle the army from the Martial Saint Dynasty. The Black Sect would therefore be in a disadvantageous position.

“Brother Jiang, just form the number of Combat Soul warriors alone, I’m afraid we’re still no match for them.”

Xuan Ye said.

“No worries, I have a way to deal with it. We’ll have to fight this battle, one way or another.”

Jiang Chen replied. They had no way to back off now, they had to fight this battle.

.....

Black Sect!

When Jiang Chen and the few others finally arrived, all disciples below the Divine Core realm were ordered to temporarily leave the Black Sect. In such a major scale battle, those under the Divine Core realm could only serve as cannon fodder.

Within the Black Sect’s meeting hall, when Han Yan and the others saw Jiang Zhenhai and the others, they felt both happy and surprised. When they were told that Jiang Chen could remain undefeated against the Imperial Emperor, excitement immediately emerged onto their faces. No matter what, the fact that Jiang Chen was capable of fighting a Combat King warrior was really good news for the Black Sect.

“Little Chen, with the Black Sect’s current strength, it is impossible for us to fight the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Han Yan said.

“No worries, I have the solution.”

A faint smile emerged onto Jiang Chen’s face.

“What kind of solution?”

Daoist Black asked.

“Sect chief, older brother Guo, Brother Yan, I need you to spread news about the fight between me and the Imperial Emperor to the public as quickly as possible. Also, include the news about how I killed all those emperors, as well as the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. Just mention that I, Jiang Chen am calling all the great warriors underneath the heavens to join me in the upcoming battle against the Martial Saint Dynasty. Those who comes to help the Black Sect in this battle, once I’ve destroyed the Martial Saint Dynasty; they will be rewarded handsomely.”

Jiang Chen said.

Jiang Chen’s words startled everyone for a moment. None of them thought that this idea would work.

“Little Chen, the Martial Saint Dynasty has deep roots, and we’re all newcomers. I’m afraid we can’t find any great warriors to help us.”

Han Yan said.

Chapter 452 - Amidst The Winds Of Change

“Whether or not we can recruit any great warriors depends on the Imperial Emperor. If he is willing to help us, we’ll be able to recruit many people. Also, you need to know that this world is full of restless people with a strong desire to see this world plunged into chaos. And now, it is a perfect moment for a change of this world, and I’m sure many people would love to be personally involved in such a major event.”

Jiang Chen leaned back against a rattan chair, a faint smile flickering across his lips, and his eyes flashing with a sharp light. Not only did he possess incredible strength, he looked more like a man of wisdom and strategies; forever showing a look as if everything is under his control.

“How would the Imperial Emperor help us? He just can’t wait to have us all killed.”

Yu Zihan felt both shocked and puzzle. He couldn’t understand the meaning behind Jiang Chen’s words.

“Just wait and see, he will definitely help us. I want you to spread news immediately. Starting from tomorrow, the Black Sect will have its doors open for all the great warriors of the Eastern Continent.

Jiang Chen continued with a smile on his face.

“Can this really work?”

Daoist Black was startled as well. He didn’t have any good feelings about this. The Martial Saint Dynasty was such a powerful existence, and although Jiang Chen was capable of fighting the Imperial Emperor, that didn’t mean that the small Black Sect could take on the Martial Saint Dynasty. When faced with such a gigantic mammoth, who would simply jump in and fight it?

“Just do as I said. As for whether or not it works, we’ll know in a

few days.”

Jiang Chen said.

The group was still feeling somewhat doubtful about this. They felt that it was impractical to call upon great warriors to help them in the upcoming battle. However, when they turned to Jiang Chen, they saw a joyful face, and a completely confident attitude. None of them had any clues what Jiang Chen's real plan was.

Asking the Imperial Emperor to help them? Was this possible? Clearly, it was impossible! The Imperial Emperor was no idiot, so how would he help Jiang Chen recruit people?

However, they still did as Jiang Chen told them. In the Black Sect, Jiang Chen's words were akin to the Imperial Decree, and his prestige here was much greater than that of the Imperial Emperor. No one would disobey his words.

The same day, the Black Sect spread the news everywhere, telling the story of how Jiang Chen had killed the six emperors, how he had captured the Crown Prince, then gone to the Martial Saint Dynasty all alone to rescue his friends and family. And, the news also included how Jiang Chen and the Imperial Emperor had exchanged three strikes in the sky above the Martial Saint Dynasty, and not only that he was not defeated, but that he actually had the upper hand!

As if a pair of wings had been given to these news, it immediately spread across all the provinces of the Eastern Continent at an incredible speed. Many people found out that Jiang Chen had killed those six emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty, truly bringing them a great amount of shock. However, the news that Jiang Chen was capable of fighting a Combat King warrior was even more explosive.

Besides that, the Black Sect had also mentioned that they would have a final battle with the Martial Saint Dynasty in three days, and that Jiang Chen had publicly declared that he would destroy

the Martial Saint Dynasty. He wanted to change the Eastern Continent's power structure, and also change the ruling history. Therefore, he was calling upon all the great warriors underneath the heavens to help him and the Black Sect. He also said that once the Martial Saint Dynasty was destroyed, he would reward all those who helped him handsomely.

The news immediately brought a storm to the entire Eastern Continent, and no one could escape from being shocked by it. It had been a long time since the Eastern Continent was so lively.

After the news was spread, the Martial Saint Dynasty remained silent, and no one came forward to refute the news. Thus, it made the public believe that the news was accurate. Now, everyone believed that Jiang Chen had the ability to fight a Combat King warrior.

“Oh heavens, that Jiang Chen is a really brave man! Initially, it was the Imperial Emperor who wanted to kill all his friends and family, but after he returned, the two strongest men of the Jian Province were killed by now, and now, he has even killed six emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty!”

“Ever since Jiang Chen made his debut, the Eastern Continent has constantly been in a restless state! His growth is too fast, he is literally history's number one monster! He's able to fight a Combat King warrior with just a Combat Soul cultivation; this is something that has never happened before! And now, he is going to have an all-out war with the Martial Saint Dynasty, and he's calling upon all the great warriors to join him. I wonder how many people are planning on joining him.”

“I'm afraid there aren't many. There is no doubt that Jiang Chen is a rare genius who won't appear even through thousands of years, and he has created countless miracles along his journey to the current stage. However, the Martial Saint Dynasty has deep roots in the Eastern Continent, and their resources and powers are simply too strong. It's not something the Black Sect can contend

with. There most likely won't be many great warriors to join them in this battle.

.....

Comments about the situation filled the entire Eastern Continent. It was as Daoist Black and the other had expected; most people were worried about the Martial Saint Dynasty's hidden force, and hence, not many people dared to join them. When faced with this kind of battle, all they could do was stand on the side and watch.

Of course, there were still some aggressors who were anxious to see the world in disorder, but they were still hesitating, and had yet to make up their minds.

At the Black Sect, the main gate was opened widely, and they were there to welcome the arrival of the great warriors. However, they were waiting for no one. This caused bitter smiles to emerge on Daoist Black and the other's faces. It looked like Jiang Chen had misjudged. Obviously, no one would come to help them.

As for Jiang Chen, at this moment, he was having an intimate moment with Yan Chenyu within a courtyard. He seemed like he had no worries about the upcoming battle. Yan Chenyu had just arrived at the Black Sect today, as everything back the Fragrant Sky City had settled down. Since the Imperial Emperor was planning to have his final battle with Jiang Chen in the Qi Province, the tiny Fragrant Sky City was spared from his plot. After all, all the major people connected to Jiang Chen were at the Black Sect now.

Yan Chenyu was only at the Early Combat Soul realm, but her Nine Yin Meridians were showing signs of breaking through. Once she managed to do that, she would become a Mid Combat Soul warrior, and no ordinary Late Combat Soul warriors would be her match. Thus, she would be a great help in this upcoming battle.

Furthermore, there was an even more frightening Ice Demon

King around her. It was nearly an immortal existence, and putting it into the battlefield would definitely yield great results.

As for Wu Jiu, he went straight into secluded cultivation after arriving at the Black Sect yesterday. This time, he wanted to do as Jiang Chen has told him to. After studying his Dao of War for a bit, he started focusing on a single Dao.

Crack!

After spending one day in secluded cultivation, a cracking sound suddenly came from Wu Jiu's body. It was the sound of breaking through a bottleneck.

Swoosh!

Wu Jiu opened his eyes, causing two bright lights to shoot out from his eyes, and the air in front of him to vibrate.

“Brother Jiang is indeed a genius. I never thought that this bottleneck that has held me back for so many years could just be broken like this. Sure enough, the simply my Dao of War; the better. I have now broken past this bottleneck, and I'll be able to break through to the Combat King realm in just one more day.”

A look of excitement emerged onto Wu Jiu's face. He had long waited for this day. While still feeling excited, Wu Jiu simply slapped himself once, scolding himself for now following Jiang Chen's guidance earlier. If he had, he would have long ago become a Combat King warriors, and none of those tragedies would have happened.

The changes in Wu Jiu's aura couldn't escape from Jiang Chen's sense. A faint smile flickered across his face. Everything was going as he expected.

Aside from Wu Jiu and Yan Chenyu, there was some other good news as well. It was related to Han Yan and Big Yellow. Because they were feeling the intense pressure of this upcoming battle, their potential had been stimulated.

The Ancient Divine Devil bloodline in Han Yan's body had yesterday started boiling, so he went straight into secluded cultivation. Big Yellow was even more straightforward; he simply found a spot to sleep.

According to Jiang Chen's estimation, these two guys would break through to the Mid Combat Soul realm before the upcoming battle arrived. And, with the mightiness of the Ancient Divine Devil and Dragon Horse bloodline, their combat strength would be able to compare with Yan Chenyu. Thus, no ordinary Late Combat Soul warriors would be their match.

Just when everyone thought that Jiang Chen's plan to invite all the great warriors was going to fail, the Martial Saint Dynasty passed down an Imperial Decree. It was an Imperial Decree that shook the entire Eastern Continent.

The content of the Imperial Decree was simple, the Imperial Emperor wanted to hold a memorial for the six emperors and prince of the Martial Saint Dynasty, thus, he said that every single person in the Eastern Continent had to wear mourning clothes for them, as a token to comfort their souls.

This was a compulsory request, and no one were to disobey it; everyone had to wear mourning clothes.

When the news spread, it instantly caused dissatisfaction amongst the people.

"Damn it, the Martial Saint Dynasty better not push us too hard! Why should we mourn for the death of those six emperors?!"

"That's right, I absolutely cannot accept this! This father doesn't even know what those six emperors looked like! Although the Martial Saint Dynasty can inform the entire Eastern Continent of this, can they really force millions of people to wear mourning clothes? There is no such thing underneath the heavens!"

"This is ridiculous! I will never wear mourning clothes for

them!”

.....

Of course, Jiang Chen heard the news as soon as it was announced. He laughed, then said, “I told you that the Imperial Emperor would help us. Now, spread these words for me: the Ninth Emperor has broken through to the Combat King realm, and including me, the Black Sect now has two Combat King warriors! As long as can receive the help from more great warriors, we will definitely destroy the entire Martial Saint Dynasty; replacing the old dynasty with a new one! Most importantly, no one will be forced to wear mourning clothes!”

Daoist Black, Yu Zihan and the others then spread Jiang Chen’s word to the public.

“What? Wu Jiu has broken through to the Combat King realm as well? That means the Black Sect has two Combat Kings now! I heard that Jiang Chen is a man who can defeat Combat King warriors. It looks like he really does have the capability of fighting the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

“Damn it, the Martial Saint Dynasty is pushing us too hard by forcing us to wear mourning clothes! What the Imperial Emperor cares about is the dignity of his dynasty; but not ours! Since Jiang Chen now has the strength to fight with the Martial Saint Dynasty, and he is a man with extraordinary talents who always creates miracles, perhaps we’ll achieve something magnificent if we follow him! I have made up my mind, I’ll proceed to the Black Sect and help them!”

“That’s right! Jiang Chen said that once he has defeated the Martial Saint Dynasty, he’ll reward us handsomely! The Martial Saint Dynasty has a lot of good resources, I’m sure there are many benefits awaiting us!”

“Let’s go, I’ll join as well! I am a Combat Soul warrior now, and I’m sure they’ll value me at the Black Sect. Since the Martial Saint

Dynasty wants to force us to mourn for their dead, they don't deserve my respect any longer! With more great warriors from all over the Eastern Continent joining the Black Sect, and with the force of two Combat King warriors; we do have a chance of defeating the Martial Saint Dynasty! Just participating in a major battle like that is sure to make my blood boil!"

.....

Jiang Chen's plot had once again succeeded. The Martial Saint Dynasty forcing the people to wear mourning clothes provoked the people, and it undoubtedly gave Jiang Chen a lot of help. If it was under normal circumstances, even if the people were angry, they would have no courage to speak up. However, it was different now! With the existence of Jiang Chen, the people were provided with a choice, and they could choose not to accept this unreasonable request.

Chapter 453 – Old Emperor

Amidst the winds of change, a tremendous storm was brewing in the Eastern Continent. When the Imperial Emperor had passed down the Imperial Decree forcing everyone to wear mourning close, it immediately gave birth to a lot of discontent feeling amongst many great warriors, especially those at the Combat Soul realm. As Combat Soul warriors, they had their own pride and dignity, and they couldn't accept the fact that they were forced to wear mourning clothes for no reason. If it was under normal circumstances, they would have no way to resist this order, since they were too weak in comparison to the Martial Saint Dynasty. But now, things had changed! There was another power who was strong enough to stand against it, so they were now presented with a choice.

Because of that, many Combat Soul warriors were now heading towards the Black Sect with the intentions of joining them in their fight against the Martial Saint Dynasty.

It could be said that the Imperial Emperor had unintentionally helped Jiang Chen. What he did, he did to show off the Martial Saint Dynasty's authority. Ever since Jiang Chen had appeared, the dignity and authority of the Martial Saint Dynasty had suffered a huge challenge. Not only that, with the death of the emperors, the Martial Saint Dynasty's face gone down the drain. What the Imperial Emperor wanted to do was bring back face and defend the authority of the Martial Saint Dynasty. He wanted to let everyone know that in the Eastern Continent, no one could challenge the Martial Saint Dynasty's authority. Therefore, what he did was an act that showed the authority of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and that he was a man who no one could defy.

However, right at this very moment, Wu Jiu was breaking through to the Combat King realm, and Jiang Chen was spreading the news in order to attract more people to him. The difference

between one Combat King warrior and two Combat King warriors was completely different. With two Combat King warriors, people would feel that Jiang Chen really did have the ability to fight against the Martial Saint Dynasty, and that was the reason why all those great warriors wanted to join him.

Outside of the Black Sect; Daoist Black, Guo Shan, Yu Zihan and a few others were walking back and forth. They were following Jiang Chen's request; waiting there to welcome the heroes of the Eastern Continent.

"Will this really work? Why have we still not seen anyone?"

Yu Zihan said in a gloomy manner.

"Since brother Jiang has said this, I'm sure it'll work. We'll just have to wait here."

Immediately after Guo Shan finished speaking, three figures suddenly appeared in the distance. Each of these people were sending forth powerful auras. All of them were clearly Combat Soul warriors. With incredible speed, these three men arrived at the Black Sect in the blink of an eye.

"Is brother Jiang Chen here?"

The man who led the group was a muscular and handsome man, and he immediately asked if Jiang Chen was here upon arriving.

The crowd had a surprised look in their eyes. The three men in front of them were Combat Soul warriors, and the leading man had a cultivation base at the peak Mid Combat Soul realm, and seemed to be only one step away from the Late Combat Soul realm. From the way he addressed Jiang Chen, it seemed like they knew each other, and that he came to the Black Sect to give Jiang Chen a helping hand.

"Jiang Chen is waiting for your arrival at the main palace of the Black Sect. I'm the Black Sect's Sect Chief, Daoist Black. May I know your name?"

Daoist Black said.

“Haha, so you’re Daoist Black! I’ve heard so much about you. I’m Master Blissful, this is Golden Lion, and this is Old Man Ling Shan. We’re all Jiang Chen’s friends.”

Master Blissful said.

Hearing the introductions, shock emerged onto the faces of Daoist Black and co. All these men were men with names widely known, especially Master Blissful. He was a Demon Lord from the ocean, and he had an unfathomable combat strength. Although he was only a peak Mid Combat Soul warrior, his actual combat strength allowed him to fight any Late Combat Soul warrior.

“So you’re Master Blissful! It’s a pleasure to have you here. Zihan, quickly bring them to Jiang Chen.”

Daoist Black said.

“Three seniors, please follow me.”

Yu Zihan made a welcoming gesture. It looked like Jiang Chen’s words were true.

Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu were leisurely sitting within the Black Sect’s main palace when they suddenly heard the sound of laughter.

“Haha, brother Jiang Chen, it’s been a long time! You’re now a big shot!”

Following that, Master Blissful and the other two came into the main palace.

“Welcome, my friends. Sorry for not welcoming you out there!”

Jiang Chen strode forward and said. He had a very good impression of these three men. Back when he was at the Blissful Island, all of them had helped him a lot.

When these three men looked at Jiang Chen and felt his aura, they all felt their hearts tremble. They exchanged glances and

found the same look of shock on each other's face. When they met Jiang Chen, he had merely been a young man who had just broken through to the Divine Core realm, and it had only taken him such a short amount of time to grow to his current stage. It wasn't difficult for them to predict that Jiang Chen's future achievements would definitely be beyond their imagination.

"A scholar who has been away for three days must be looked at differently. Brother Jiang Chen, you've truly given us a huge surprise! I've heard you're going to have an all-out war with the Martial Saint Dynasty, that's why we're here to give you a helping hand. I hope we can help out."

Old Man Ling Shan said.

"Good, Jiang Chen is really grateful to receive your help. Once we've overthrown the Martial Saint Dynasty, you can take whatever you want."

Jiang Chen said. For the current Black Sect, every Combat Soul warrior was a treasure. Therefore, obtaining the help of these three men was something worth celebrating. At the same time, with the arrival of these three men, more people were destined to show up.

Outside the Black Sect, Daoist Black and the others finally had joyful expressions on their faces.

Half an hour later, another two figures came from afar. Both of them were Combat Soul warriors as well.

"We're Huang Li and Huang Zhao from the Qing Province! We're here to help the Black Sect fight the Martial Saint Dynasty!"

It was a man whose face was covered with a beard, and he had an incredible cultivation base. Both of these men were actually Mid Combat Soul warriors. These two men were brothers, and they didn't belong to any sect. However, they were someone who had a desire to see the world change, and since they were presented with

such a huge opportunity, they came forth to offer their help.

“Receiving your help is the Black Sect’s pleasure. Please come in, Jiang Chen is waiting in the main palace.”

Daoist Black said.

Next, more and more Combat Soul warrior arrived to offer their help. There was even a group of Combat Soul warriors who came from the same sect. In just one afternoon, more than twenty Combat Soul warriors had arrived, including one Late Combat Soul warrior. This was a strong line-up that Daoist Black and the others hadn’t even imagined to see.

“This is incredible! Junior disciple Jiang is really awesome; everything is as he has predicted! There are actually so many Combat Soul warriors who came to join us, and there’s still one more day left! Could this mean that more great warriors will come join us tomorrow?”

Guan Yiyun felt really surprised. With the overall strength of the Black Sect, there was absolutely no way they could fight with the Martial Saint Dynasty. But now, with so many new Combat Soul warriors joining them, the overall strength of the Black Sect was growing, slowly giving it the ability to fight with the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Sigh... Jiang Chen really can plan everything accurately. The latest Imperial Decree passed down by the Imperial Emperor has helped us greatly. If not for that, we wouldn’t receive so much help from so many great warriors.”

Daoist Black sighed. Now, he admired Jiang Chen so much that he could even throw himself down at his feet in admiration.

“Brother is indeed a peerless genius. Not only does he have amazing combat strength, he is even an incredible strategist and a man with great wisdom. Becoming the enemy of a man like this is really unfortunate. I can predict that the Martial Saint Dynasty

who has ruled the Eastern Continent for such a long period of time will definitely fall under brother Jiang Chen's hands, and the history of the Eastern Continent will be changed."

Guo Shan said as his eyes shone brightly. His confidence in Jiang Chen could no longer be described with words.

While the Black Sect was busy with welcoming all the great warriors, what happened in the Eastern Continent couldn't be hidden from the Martial Saint Dynasty. The Imperial Emperor's eyes could see everything.

The situation made the Imperial Emperor very furious. He never expected to not only fail to defend the authority of the Martial Saint Dynasty, but to also outsmart himself and provide his enemy with great help.

"Father, that Wu Jiu has broken through to the Combat King realm as well. Including Jiang Chen, they now have two Combat King warriors. I'm afraid this is going to be a tough battle."

The Crown Prince stood beside the Imperial Emperor and said.

"Hmph! Jiang Chen is only a Mid Combat Soul warrior! If we really do fight, I refuse to believe he'll be a match for me! As for Wu Jiu, even if he really broke through to the Combat King realm, he is still fresh in this realm, and that won't make him too strong. Also, those who have joined Jiang Chen to fight against the Martial Saint Dynasty; I'll definitely make them pay! I will let them know what the consequences of becoming the Martial Saint Dynasty's enemy are!"

The Imperial Emperor coldly harrumphed. The Martial Saint Dynasty had lost all its face under his control, causing him to feel disgraced.

"Father, in order to prevent anything bad from happening, I suggest we invite the Old Emperor and the Old Great Emperor to help us."

The Crown Prince suggested.

The Crown Prince's words caused the Imperial Emperor to clench his fists tightly. The Old Emperor and Old Great Emperor had long ago entered secluded cultivation and stopped interfering in any matters related to the Martial Saint Dynasty. However, now, the Imperial Emperor was forced to alert them. This made him feel useless.

“We can't alert the Old Great Emperor now, as we're still far away from reaching a critical situation, so he won't help us. I'll go find the Old Emperor now.”

After saying that, the Imperial Emperor moved his body and disappeared.

Within an isolated secret underground chamber of the Martial Saint Dynasty. It was a secret chamber with a huge space, and it had been constructed with hard stone. Underneath it was an energy vein. The secret chamber only had simple decorations, and a big, golden hassock was placed in the center. An old man wearing a grey robe was sitting on top of it. He looked to be in his fifties, and his hair was half black half gray. He had a majestic looking face.

Right at this moment, the space within the secret chamber wobbled, and a figure was revealed in front of the old man. It was the Imperial Emperor.

“Greetings, Imperial Uncle.”

The Imperial Emperor bowed deeply toward the Old Emperor. This Old Emperor was the previous Imperial Emperor of the Martial Saint Dynasty, but he wasn't the father of the current Imperial Emperor. The imperial throne wasn't inherited from father to son, rather, it was inherited by the strongest prince of the younger generation.

“Imperial Emperor, why have you come here?”

The Old Emperor opened his eyes and asked. He had a pair of sharp eyes that shone brightly like the brightest stars. His aura was stronger than the Imperial Emperor's aura, so it was obvious that he had already reached the peak of the First Grade Combat King realm, and was just a step away from the Second Grade.

“Imperial Uncle, the reason I came here today is to seek your help.”

The Imperial Emperor said.

Chapter 454 – The Day Of War

“Oh? I thought I had given control of the Martial Saint Dynasty to you. With your ability, could there be something that you can’t settle?”

The Old Emperor felt surprised. The Imperial Emperor was a man who was eager to excel. Regardless of what it was, his intellect or ability; they were all superb, and that was what allowed him to become the Imperial Emperor. Besides, he was also a prideful and arrogant man, so if he wasn’t faced with a really tricky situation, he wouldn’t have come to the Old Emperor.

“Imperial Uncle, a peerless monster has recently appeared in the Eastern Continent. His name is Jiang Chen, and he’s going to go to war with the Martial Saint Dynasty tomorrow. Before this, he killed most of the emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty, including fifth brother.”

The Imperial Emperor explained. When he mentioned the Fifth Emperor, his voice was clearly trembling.

“What?! My son is dead?!”

As expected, the Old Emperor immediately erupted with anger. The Fifth Emperor was his son, and even though he was the Old Emperor, he still couldn’t control his emotions upon hearing the news about his son’s death.

“Hmph! I handed the Martial Saint Dynasty to you, but what have you done? You’re a First Grade Combat King warrior, but you still can’t protect your own brothers?”

The Old Emperor was furiously scolding the Imperial Emperor.

“Please calm down, Imperial Uncle. Although that Jiang Chen only is a Mid Combat Soul warrior, he actually possess the strength of a First Grade Combat King warrior. A few days ago, I exchanged three attacks with him, and I didn’t have the upper hand. In order

to defend the Martial Saint Dynasty's authority, I'm ready to launch an all-out attack on the Black Sect tomorrow. However, including Wu Jiu, the Black Sect currently has two First Grade Combat King warriors, and I am afraid I can't handle both of them at the same time. To prepare for the worst, that's why I came here to request help from Imperial Uncle."

The Imperial Emperor said.

"Old Jiu? I thought he was one of us?"

The Old Emperor was startled for a moment. Wu Jiu was the most outstanding genius of his generation, and if not for him giving up his opportunity, the current Imperial Emperor would not be the person in front of him.

"Imperial Uncle, there are some things you don't know about. It was all because of Wu Jiu that the Martial Saint Dynasty has lost so much."

When mentioning Wu Jiu, a grumpy look immediately flashed in the Imperial Emperor's eyes. After that, he told the Old Emperor everything he knew about Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu to the Imperial Emperor through his divine sense, including the losses they had caused the Martial Saint Dynasty.

"Ah, Old Jiu is part of the Wu family, but he is actually helping an outsider hurt his own family! Fine, I'll help you in tomorrow's way, and I'm going to kill Old Jiu myself and let him know the consequences of betraying the Martial Saint Dynasty! I'll also rip that Jiang Chen into a thousand pieces and avenge my son!"

The Old Emperor was furious. He made up his mind to help the Imperial Emperor in dealing with Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu, to avenge his own son.

The night before the war, more than 150 Combat Soul warriors had gathered in the Black Sect, three of them being Late Combat Soul warriors, and the rest all Early and Mid Combat Soul

warriors. Even so, this was considered an incredibly rare line-up, as it was the biggest line-up in the entire Eastern Continent aside from the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Rumble...

Two energies transformed into dazzling light beams and shot into the sky, causing the entire night sky to become as bright as it would be during the middle of the day; attracting glances from everyone in the Black Sect.

“It’s senior disciple Han and Big Yellow! They both broke through at the same time!”

Yu Zihan said with great joy.

“Haha, excellent, this is perfect! Tomorrow there will be war, and both of them broke through at the perfect time! Han Yan has the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, giving him the strength to fight Late Combat Soul warriors! And, as we currently don’t have many Late Combat Soul warriors here, their advancement is going to further strengthen our force!”

Guo Shan said while laughing out loud.

“That’s right. Those two, as well as Yan Chenyu are geniuses amongst geniuses! With only a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, they’ll be able to defeat almost any Late Combat Soul warriors.”

Daoist Black nodded his head.

Rumble!

Right at the same moment, another powerful energy shot up into the sky. However, this energy immediately transformed into a golden beam that was shaking in the dark sky, and it was much stronger than those light beams produced by Han Yan and Big Yellow.

Everyone raised their heads to gaze at the huge beam that shone brightly in the dark sky. The energy leaking out from this huge

beam caused the air to twist and vibrate, as if the sky was going to shatter because of this vast amount of energy.

“Good! Brother Jiu has finally broken through to the First Grade Combat King realm.”

Jiang Chen said with excitement visible on his face. Wu Jiu was a very important element in the upcoming war. Jiang Chen was able to sense the powerful Spatial Power from the golden beam, and he knew that it was the symbol of a Combat King warrior. Wu Jiu had finally broken through to the Combat King realm. No doubts, this brought a significant improvement to the overall strength of the Black Sect.

“What an incredible aura, it has far exceeded the Combat Soul realm! This is the aura of a Combat King; Wu Jiu has broken through to the Combat King realm!”

“So, Wu Jiu hadn’t broken through to the Combat King realm before this? However, since he broke through before the war began, we can’t say that Jiang Chen lied to us. However, Wu Jiu is the Ninth Emperor, won’t there be any problems by letting him fight them?”

“Don’t worry, he has completely cut all ties with the Martial Saint Dynasty; with the Imperial Emperor wholeheartedly trying to kill him. Also, who do you think Jiang Chen is? He is a man who plans very carefully with every conceivable possibility taken into account. Therefore, as long as Jiang Chen trusts Wu Jiu, it means that there won’t be any problems at all.”

“That’s right. Perhaps you don’t know about this, but Jiang Chen once saved Wu Jiu’s life. Without Jiang Chen, there would be no Wu Jiu; so they have solid relationship. Hence, we can trust Wu Jiu.”

.....

Many people were discussing the recent events. When Wu Jiu

successfully broke through to the Combat King realm, there was no doubts that it calmed everyone's mind. This was because, ever since they arrived at the Black Sect, none of them had met Wu Jiu. Only now did they feel at ease.

A figure shot up into the sky, and of course, he was none other than Wu Jiu. Jiang Chen leapt up into the sky and arrived in front of Wu Jiu. He cupped his fist and said, "Congratulations for breaking through to the Combat King realm, brother Jiu."

"Haha, brother, I have to thank you for the guidance! If not, I have no idea when I would have been able to break through this bottleneck! With your help, I managed to break through in just three days! I feel really happy!"

Wu Jiu burst into the laughter. This little brother of his was indeed a freak; an existence who seemed to know everything.

"I feel happy for your achievements. The war begins tomorrow. Brother Jiu, are you prepared?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"Don't worry, brother! I will definitely devote all my effort into defeating them!"

Wu Jiu slammed his chest with his fist as he promised.

"If that Old Emperor comes tomorrow, I'll handle him. The Imperial Emperor is yours."

Jiang Chen patted Wu Jiu's shoulder.

Jiang Chen's words caused a grateful expression to emerge on Wu Jiu's face. The Old Emperor was his senior, but the Imperial Emperor was different. The resentment between him and the Imperial Emperor could no longer be resolved; only a fight could bring everything to an end.

"This Kind Weapon was given to the Third Emperor by the Old Emperor, but I snatched it away from him. It is now yours; you can

use it to deal with the Imperial Emperor tomorrow.”

Jiang Chen took out the golden spear and put it into Wu Jiu’s hand. Wu Jiu didn’t refuse, and simply took it. He knew how important tomorrow would be, so he had no hesitation.

Suddenly, Wu Jiu’s expression changed. It was until now that he noticed the transformation of the Black Sect. Compared to three days ago, today’s Black Sect had become too powerful. He swept his divine sense across the sect, and he immediately sensed the auras of more than a hundred Combat Soul warriors.

“Brother, why are there so many Combat Soul warriors here?”

Wu Jiu asked in a surprised and bewildered manner.

“They’re all here to help us fight the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

Jiang Chen smiled, then he continued and explained what had happened in the past three days to Wu Jiu. After his explanation, Wu Jiu couldn’t help but let out a long sigh and give Jiang Chen a thumbs up. This little brother of his could truly create miracles.

“More than a hundred Combat Soul warriors. This amount of overall combat strength can be considered pretty strong, but compared to the Martial Saint Dynasty’s powerful force, we’re still on the weak side. It doesn’t matter if we compare Early, Mid, or Late Combat Soul warriors; we’re still fewer than them.”

Wu Jiu worriedly said. As the Ninth Emperor, as well as the Palace Chief of the Martial Palace, he knew better than anyone here how frightening the Martial Saint Dynasty’s force was.

“Don’t worry, I have a plan for that.”

Jiang Chen replied with a smile.

“You have a way to deal with them, again?”

Wu Jiu rolled his eyes and nearly fainted. It seemed like no matter what kind of situation they were facing, this guy would always be confident; no matter what kind situation they were

facing, he would always find a solution for it! However, tomorrow was the date of war, and Wu Jiu just couldn't figure out how Jiang Chen was going to deal with the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Big Yellow!”

Jiang Chen shouted, causing Big Yellow to immediately appear by his side.

“Big Yellow, I need you to set up some formations. The best are those killing formations and trapping formations that synergize well together. Let all those Combat Soul warriors join the formations; we'll fight tomorrow's war with these magnificent warriors.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

“Kaka, rest assured; just let me handle this! I will put five men in one formation, and that will be more than enough for them to fight a ten man group!”

Big Yellow excitedly laughed out. Jiang Chen had found the right candidate for this task, as Big Yellow was an expert in the Heavenly Book of Source Formations. He knew how to construct all kinds of dreadful formations, and he was confident that none of the enemies would be able to know what kind of formations he had produced. In the middle of a major war, there was no doubts that a good formation could bring tremendous positive effects, as it could greatly improve their combat strength, and with that, they would be able to face twice the amount of enemies; shortening the gap between them and their foes.

Jiang Chen felt at ease by letting Big Yellow handle this task.

Next day! The sky lit up.

The Black Sect's battle drums were rumbling, and all the great warriors had gathered outside of the Black Sect; waiting for the final war with the Martial Saint Dynasty. No matter what the result was, today's war would definitely be recorded in the Eastern

Continent's history, as this was an iconic battle with a high possibility of overthrowing the structure of the entire Eastern Continent.

Rumble...

An hour later, a huge crack suddenly appeared in the sky, and the sound of thunder resounded throughout the skies. Soon after, a huge golden battleship broke through the crack and was revealed to everyone. It was an enormous battleship with a huge dragon head staring into the sky, causing it to give of a majestic sense.

Chapter 455 – Fighting The Old Emperor

It was a huge golden battleship, and it had a circumference of nearly 300 meters. The dragon head mounted on its front was the symbol of the Martial Saint Dynasty's authority. On the deck of this battleship, numerous powerful energies shot up into the sky, creating dazzling beams that swayed back and forth; nearly causing the sky to shatter. The morning sunlight was instantly covered by these powerful energies.

Two men were standing on the front of this battleship. One of them was wearing a dragon robe, and he had an imposing and majestic appearance. He was none other than the Imperial Emperor. The other one was an old man who wore a grey robe was the previous Imperial Emperor – the Old Emperor!

Two Combat King warriors had personally arrived, and together with them was powerful army. In the entire history of the Eastern Continent, this was the first time that such an enormous army had appeared somewhere. Since the Martial Saint Dynasty had ruled the Eastern Continent for so many years, no one had dared challenge their authority, and as the Combat King warriors of the Martial Saint Dynasty sat on the absolute peak of the Eastern Continent, they had never had the chance to show off their mightiness. Normally, they would only have a chance to shine when dimensional cracks appeared, and they were required to kill the creatures that came out.

“These auras are so incredibly strong! Did you see those light beams representing their energies? I think they have at least 400 Combat Soul warriors! We don't even have 200 Combat Soul warriors; not even half of what they have... I'm afraid this is going to be a difficult battle.”

“That's right. The Martial Saint Dynasty's forces are simply too powerful! Although Jiang Chen and Wu Jiu Combat King warriors, the enemy also has two Combat King warriors! An army like that is

just too frightening.”

“Why are you so afraid? Participating in such a major war is our pleasure! Besides, we have no way to turn back now! We can either survive or perish together with Jiang Chen! The Imperial Emperor is a man who seeks revenge for the smallest grievance, and if we are defeated, only death will await us!”

“He’s right. Although they have more men, we have these fearsome formations, and that gives us the ability to fight with them!”

.....

The Martial Saint Dynasty’s army was incredibly strong; it simply showed how deep and powerful their resources were. Faced with this incredible force, many of those who joined Jiang Chen felt regret. However, under the current situation, none of them had any way of retreating. They were left with the choice to fight with everything they had alongside Jiang Chen. If they were fortunate enough to overthrow the Martial Saint Dynasty, they would be rewarded with endless benefits. However, if they lose, they would just have to accept that fact. If they backed down now, not only would other people look down on them, the Imperial Emperor would not let them off the hook.

Rumble...

The golden battleship sailed through the air at an incredible speed. In just the blink of an eye, it arrived near the Black Sect, and stopped at a place a few miles away from the Black Sect’s army. The huge golden battleship then disappeared into the Imperial Emperor’s storage ring, revealing the Martial Saint Dynasty’s entire army to everyone. It was an army of Combat Soul warriors who all acted in an imposing manner. They were all wearing golden armor and were carrying combat weapons. Judging by the size of the army, there were more than 400 men, but less than 500.

In the Eastern Continent, an army like this could no longer just

be described as formidable. There were over four hundred Combat Soul warriors, and it wasn't difficult to imagine that once the war begun; the sky above this place would shatter.

“Jiang Chen, I gave you three days to catch your last breath! From today onwards, there will no longer be a Jiang Chen in this Eastern Continent! Also, those who joined Jiang Chen in this war against the Martial Saint Dynasty; you're ridiculous and ignorant! I will let you know the price you have to pay for your actions!”

The Imperial Emperor's voice echoed out like a thunderclap throughout the entire place, and it contained the energy of a Combat King warrior.

“Imperial Emperor, it is still too early to tell who the final winner will be!”

Jiang Chen was floating in mid-air. The morning breeze fluttered his white clothes. Although he was faced with this huge army, no signs of discomfort could be seen on his face.

“Hmph! What a foolish young man! How dare you challenge the Martial Saint Dynasty?! In our eyes, you're just an insignificant ant! Today, I'll take up this matter myself and slaughter you all!”

The Old Emperor coldly harrumphed. His energy was even stronger than that of the Imperial Emperor, and his words were even more arrogant. After sizing up Jiang Chen, he turned to Wu Jiu, and the fury in his eyes became even more apparent.

“Old Jiu, you've really disappointed me! How could you betray the Martial Saint Dynasty? However, for the sake of the imperial bloodline that is flowing in your body; I can give you a chance to right your wrongs! As long as you change your mind and kill Jiang Chen now, I can forgive all your wrongdoings!”

The Old Emperor said to Wu Jiu.

However, Wu Jiu was not moved by the Old Emperor's words. With a smile on his face, he said, “Imperial Uncle, I think that the

only reason why you said those words is because you know I've broken through to the Combat King realm. If I was still the same Combat Soul warrior now, perhaps you would just kill me with a single slap, instead of talking so much garbage. As for me, when the Imperial Emperor tried to kill me; all the ties between me and the Martial Saint Dynasty were severed! Don't blame me for not cherishing my family when in the eyes of you people; there is no family but power! Those good brothers mine, neither of them could wait to swallow me alive! Should I, Wu Jiu have just stood there and waited for these people to slaughter me?"

Wu Jiu's words carried a hint of his fury. However, his determined attitude allowed the people of the Black Sect to sigh out in relief, as they had been somewhat afraid that Wu Jiu would betray them at the most critical moment and return to the Martial Saint Dynasty. If that really happened, the enemy would have three Combat King warriors, and they would have lost all ability to fight this war.

"Old Jiu, since you refuse to realize your mistakes, I'll kill you myself at this day and clean up our family's mess!"

The Old Emperor unleashed his killing intent and leapt toward Wu Jiu.

"Old fart, your opponent is me!"

Jiang Chen dashed forward and blocked the Old Emperor's path.

"You're just a little kid who still reeks of his mother's milk! With a mere Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, you're dreaming of fighting a Combat King warriors?! You're too overconfident! I will let you know the true horror of a Combat King; I will kill you and avenge my son!"

The Old Emperor was furious. When he remember that this young man in front of him was the one who had killed his son, he became unable to control his fury.

“If you really want to kill me, you will have to show some true ability!”

Not only was Jiang Chen not scared, he was actually excited, because he could feel some pressure coming from this Old Emperor. The Old Emperor was a peak First Grade Combat King, not someone the Imperial Emperor could compare with. The reason why Jiang Chen’s Dragon Transformation skill had yet to successfully evolve for the second time was because he hadn’t received enough pressure. Today, with the help of the Old Emperor’s pressure, the Dragon Transformation skill would definitely arouse his potential, causing him to grow even stronger.

The two men flew high into the sky and opened up a battlefield that belonged only to Combat King warriors.

“Little boy, face your death!”

The Old Emperor’s clothes were violently fluttering in the wind. He stretched his arm out and performed a grabbing gesture, causing the void in front of him to instantly shatter. A gigantic transparent palm that looked like a crystal and was nearly 30 meters tall was unleashed, and it was rapidly descending toward Jiang Chen’s head.

“True Dragon Palm!”

Jiang Chen’s energy shook. No signs of fear could be seen on his face as he immediately counterattacked with the True Dragon Palm; unleashing a blood red dragon claw from the sky above that collided with the Old Emperor’s gigantic illusive palm.

Rumble...

The sky was immediately sent into a turmoil, and layer after layer of void was ripped apart; causing chilling black wind to fly out the cracks. It was extremely eerie and frightening.

Tap, tap, tap...

Jiang Chen was shaken by the impact, and forced to take nearly

twenty steps back before he could finally stabilize his body. His qi and blood tumbled, causing him to suffer pain.

“En?”

The Old Emperor was struck with both surprise and shock; the way he looked at Jiang Chen immediately changed. Not only did he not feel happy about forcing Jiang Chen back with a single attack, he was actually completely baffled. With his strength, it was really shocking that he hadn't managed to kill a Mid Combat Soul youngster with a single strike, and judging from how Jiang Chen looked right now. It didn't even seem like he had suffered any injuries. This completely freaked him out. If he hadn't seen it with his own eyes, he wouldn't have been able to believe it.

“Haha... let's do it again!”

Jiang Chen aggressively roared out. An energy wave soared out from the top of his head; his black hair and white clothes were violently fluttering in the wind. At the same time, a layer of golden armor with sharp thorns appeared on top of his skin. He once again initiated an attack, and charged toward the Old Emperor. After the first attack, the Dragon Transformation skill had started circulating by itself, causing Jiang Chen's face to be covered with excitement. This was exactly what he wanted.

“Hmph! I don't believe I can't kill you!”

The Old Emperor coldly harrumphed. He unleashed a formidable beam toward Jiang Chen's direction.

An intense battle immediately erupted between these two mighty warriors. In just a very short amount of time, they had exchanged several dozen attacks. All the Combat Soul warriors were watching these two men. It was clear to them that Jiang Chen was in a disadvantageous position, but still, he had yet to suffer any real injuries, and his combat strength was slowly becoming more and more formidable.

Although this situation made the people of the Black Sect feel worried, they had yet to lose all their hope. Also, they had finally witnessed Jiang Chen's combat strength, as it was extremely rare for a Mid Combat Soul warrior to fight equally with a First Grade Combat King.

Since the Old Emperor had the upper hand, it no doubt brought a great boost to the spirit of the Imperial Army. Many of them were in high spirits and were ready to fight, they were all sending forth tremendous killing intent.

“Wu Jiu, everything between you and me shall be resolved today; once and for all.”

The Imperial Emperor threw his glance over to Wu Jiu and said. As for the battle between Jiang Chen and the Old Emperor, he found out that Jiang Chen was weaker than the Old Emperor, so Jiang Chen was going to lose sooner or later. No one knew better than him how terrifying the Old Emperor was. Hence, Jiang Chen was no match for him.

“Imperial Emperor! All these years, Wu Jiu has always treated you like a brother! But in the end, I never expected you to treat me like that! Since you want to kill me; we have nothing else to talk about! Come, let us settle everything between you and me; once and for all!”

Wu Jiu roared out. With a move of his body, he leapt into the sky. Without hesitating, the Imperial Emperor followed after. The two men opened up another battlefield in the sky above. Regardless of who it was, Jiang Chen and the Old Emperor, or Wu Jiu and the Imperial Emperor; they all chose to open up a new battlefield. They knew very well how devastating a Combat King's strength was, and if they chose to fight in the middle of all those Combat Soul warriors, it would no doubt cause tremendous losses for both sides. Just the shockwaves from these Combat King warriors was more than enough to kill many Combat Soul warriors, and it would be a scene that no one could even begin to

imagine.

Chapter 456 – The Flames Of War

Right at the beginning of the battle, the Imperial Emperor immediately unleashed the Heavenly Imperial Finger towards Wu Jiu.

“Dao of War – Peerless Saber!”

Wu Jiu furiously roared out as he countered with his Dao of War. The current Dao of War couldn't be compared to the past one. Back in Inferno Hell, Wu Jiu's Dao of War was too complicated, and it had only allowed him to mimic a variety of weapons. However, after following Jiang Chen's guidance, Wu Jiu had perfectly transformed it, and only focused on a single weapon.

Saber! It was the most commonly used weapon in a battlefield, and it was also the sharpest weapon; a symbol of war, as well as the most formidable existence within the Dao of War. Now, just from having focused on cultivating this single weapon, Wu Jiu had been able to break through his bottleneck and become a Combat King warrior in a single go, causing the Dao of War to become even stronger.

Clang!

The golden saber clashed with the Heavenly Imperial Finger, creating a violent collision. Underneath these tremendous powers, the space was instantly destroyed, and shockwaves spread across the entire scene. Feeling the shockwaves emerging from the two battlefields, all the Combat Soul warriors below couldn't help but feel frightened.

A war of this scale in the Eastern Continent was definitely unprecedented, and only Combat Soul warriors were qualified to participate. The hidden forces of the Martial Saint Dynasty were too powerful; more than four hundred Combat Soul warriors were attacking at the same time, and they didn't even bring a single Divine Core warrior.

Fortunately, the Black Sect had sent away all the disciples and elders who were below the Divine Core realm. If not, just the shockwaves of the battle would have been enough to kill them all.

All the remaining Divine Core disciples and elders were hiding in the depths of the Black Sect. There was no place for them in a war like this. If they participated, they would only serve as cannon fodder.

Rumble...

The battles between Jiang Chen and the Old Emperor, Wu Jiu and the Imperial Emperor were extremely intense. The fights were close, and it looked like it would be impossible to judge who the final winner would be at this point. Although Jiang Chen was in a disadvantageous position, he was like a stubborn cockroach. The more he fought, the stronger he became.

Although Wu Jiu had just broken through to the First Grade Combat King realm, his Dao of War was a very strong combat skill, allowing him to fight evenly with the Imperial Emperor. Neither of them seemed stronger than the other.

The Combat King warriors were fighting, and the people underneath them weren't here to chitchat either. There were more than twenty Late Combat Soul warriors on the Martial Saint Dynasty's side, and each of them was extremely strong. The leading man was portraying a mighty image, and he had a handsome face. It was none other than the Crown Prince.

"Follow my command! Kill all these people, and leave no survivor!"

With a saber in his hand, the Crown Prince raised his arm and roared out. His golden halberd had been destroyed by Jiang Chen's Heavenly Saint Sword, so he was using another combat weapon. It was also one of the strongest weapons amongst Superior Weapons.

"Attack!"

On the Black Sect's side, Han Yan's white hair was violently fluttering in the wind as he issued a battle cry. He was the first one to charge toward the enemies.

“Wakaka! Everyone listen up! Arrange the formations; let's kick their ass!”

Big Yellow sinisterly laughed out. A battle like this truly excited him. Without hesitating, his gigantic body charged forward together with Han Yan.

“Damn eunuch, take this master dog's strike!”

Big Yellow had broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm, so it was hard for him to find any match in the same realm. When he saw the Crown Prince, he immediately dashed forward, then turned around and pointed his butt toward the Crown Prince's face.

“Fuck!”

The Crown Prince's expression dramatically changed as he cursed out. This familiar scene was something he would never be able to forget. Big Yellow's fart had cast a permanent shadow in his heart.

Remembering the taste of that mighty fart, no matter how strong the Crown Prince's cultivation base was, he would never have the courage to give it a second try. With incredible speed, he instantly dodged the attack.

Rumble...

Even though the Crown Prince had dodged over to somewhere else, Big Yellow's fart was still on its way out. A green air shot out like a sharp sword toward the face of a Late Combat Soul warrior.

“What is this?”

The mighty warriors was startled for a moment, but he immediately unleashed a Yuan energy beam toward the green air.

However, the green air was not something that could be dispersed. Without missing even a single inch, it hit that mighty warrior's face.

Although the Yuan energy beam unleashed by this Late Combat Soul warrior had removed most of the power that came with Big Yellow's fart, the powerful force could never be removed by any attacks.

Therefore, the green air simply stuck onto the mighty warrior's face, and soon after moved to cover his entire body.

"Blergh... it stinks..."

The mighty Late Combat Soul warrior who came here in high spirit had instantly lost his elegant bearing as he started repeatedly puking. His expression became twisted.

"Fuck, what is this?! It really stinks... blergh..."

"It's killing me!"

"Blergh..."

In fact, more than one person was attacked by Big Yellow's attack, as it was already covering more than ten people, causing them all to vomit like there was no tomorrow. However, those people were all better off than he who was struck directly.

"The fuck, this dog is awesome!"

Han Yan staggered and nearly fell down. This dog was indeed an abnormal creature, and even his innate ability was so despicable.

"Fuck, this attack is too brutal."

"What a heaven shaking ability! This dog is too cruel, even his ability is so despicable!"

.....

All the Combat Soul warriors of the Black Sect were shocked. Big Yellow's move was indeed brutal and unpredictable. It allowed

them to witness how a mighty Late Combat Soul warrior could puke in public without any concern for his own image. It all seemed very exaggerated.

Swoosh!

A pair of wings appeared on Big Yellow's back. He continued flying with incredible speed, and charged right into the group of enemies. He opened his mouth widely, then he simply bit toward the head of the Late Combat Soul warrior who was still puking.

Crack!

That warrior was in a frenzied state right now, so he didn't have any time to defend himself, making him extremely vulnerable to Big Yellow's attack. Because of that, his head was bitten off by Big Yellow, causing blood to spray out like a fountain.

Before the two sides had begun clashing, a Late Combat Soul warrior from the Martial Saint Dynasty had died a horrible death. This no doubt gave the Black Sect's spirit a huge boost, conversely a huge blow to the Martial Saint Dynasty's spirit.

"Excellent, Big Yellow, what a beautiful move!"

Han Yan stuck his thumb up and showed it to Big Yellow!

"Damn dog, I am going to rip you apart!"

The Crown Prince furiously raised his saber and forcefully swung it toward Big Yellow.

Big Yellow opened his mouth and unleashed a frightening soundwave. The wave transformed into a sharp golden dagger as it pierced through the air toward the Crown Prince's saber.

Rumble...

Since Big Yellow possessed the Dragon Horse bloodline, his combat strength was incredible. With just a mere Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, he was able to fight equally against the Crown Prince.

The Crown Prince was at the same level as Wu Ningzhu before he was castrated. Thus, even though Big Yellow had broken through to the Mid Combat Soul realm, he was only capable of defeating ordinary Late Combat Soul warriors, not near being a match for the Crown Prince. However, the current Crown Prince was no longer the same Crown Prince; he had suffered a huge impact after being castrated by Yan Chenyu. Although he had fully recovered, he was overall much weaker than before, making him only slightly stronger than an ordinary Late Combat Soul warrior. His strength was currently the same as Big Yellow, Han Yan, and Yan Chenyu's. Compared to Wu Ningzhu, he was now far weaker.

On the other side, Han Yan unleashed his devilish energy, then he waved his hand, causing a Dragon Devil to shoot toward a Late Combat Soul warrior.

Yan Chenyu was even more frightening, as her Nine Yin Meridians allowed her to freeze any man deep to his bones. She looked like a cold and elegant fairy with a peerless beauty, and at the same, she looked like a Goddess of Ice; cruel and merciless. With a casual Ice Sword attack, she threw the enemies into chaos.

Rumble...

The flames of war were raging across the battlefield. When the battle begun, it immediately went into a deadlocked situation. The two armies slammed into each other, locking themselves in a difficult war. The fight between several hundred Combat Soul warriors, as well as four Combat King warrior; this was the first of its kind in the Eastern Continent! The battlefield spanned over a thousand miles, and it was so intense that even those neighboring provinces could feel the intensity of the battle.

“The war has begun; the Qi Province is at war now! Such incredible energies, I can feel the frightening shockwaves even here in the Qian Province!”

“Jiang Chen is an awesome man! He really started a war with the

Martial Saint Dynasty! Just his courage alone makes him worthy of respect!”

“This man will definitely become someone great in the future! If the Martial Saint Dynasty can’t eliminate him in time, they will sooner or later be destroyed by him!”

“I’m sure this war will be recorded in the book of history! I wonder who the final winner will be. I wish I could go and watch, but with my cultivation base, there is no way I can even get close to that battlefield.”

.....

Those who sensed the shockwaves were feeling extremely excited, and they were eager to witness the results of this shocking battle.

On the battlefield, devastating shockwaves were accompanying the miserable screams that continuously rang out. Blood and combat weapons ruled the ground; sketching a hellish scene. The Martial Saint Dynasty’s army was too tremendous, so even with the help of the formations, the Black Sect was in a disadvantageous positions. However, because of the formations, they could still fight on.

Because the number of Late Combat Soul warriors from the Martial Saint Dynasty were far greater than that of the Black Sect, Han Yan and Yan Chenyu were forced to take on two enemies by themselves, sometimes even three.

On the battlefield, the one who contributed the most was actually the Ice Demon King. Whenever someone on the Black Sect’s side was faced with a critical situation, this guy would appear. With a Late Combat Soul cultivation base, the Ice Demon King was a disaster for all those beneath the Late Combat Soul realm, a deadly disaster.

At the beginning, two Late Combat Soul warriors had teamed up

to kill the Ice Demon King, but they were immediately left speechless. When it had been killed, it had immediately reappeared on the other side of the battlefield to slaughter those who were weaker than it.

Its immortal ability was truly heaven defying. Therefore, no matter where it went, it would wreak havoc and caused enemies to helplessly cry out.

Chapter 457 – Reinforcements

“Hurry, kill that monster first!”

Someone shouted out loudly. Immediately, a couple of Late Combat Soul warriors turned around and charged toward the Ice Demon King. In the blink of an eye, they had surrounded the Ice Demon King.

Boom!

The combined attack of six Late Combat Soul warriors instantly shattered the Ice Demon King. However, before these few men could celebrate, the immediately saw the Ice Demon King come back to life and appear on the other side of the battlefield. With great speed, it threw out two punches, killing two Combat Soul warriors. It was extremely fierce and brutal.

“Damn it, what kind of monster is this?”

One of the Late Combat Soul warriors nearly vomited blood. None of them had ever seen such a strange monster before. No matter how much they tried, it just couldn’t be killed. How were they going to deal with a monster like this?

“This monster has caused us huge damage! Although it’s only a Late Combat Soul monster, it’s still weaker when compared to us! However, it’s still a deadly threat to the others! We have to eliminate it completely!”

Someone said while gnashing his teeth in anger.

“Damn it, let’s keep attacking it! I don’t believe it can revive itself infinitely!”

Another man said as he tightened his grip on his combat weapon and charged toward the Ice Demon King once more.

.....

Devastating energy beams flew across the battlefield, and

miserable screams could be heard from all parts. This place resembled a scene from hell, as blood was spilled everywhere. Although the war had just started, both sides had started suffering casualties.

Big Yellow, Yan Chenyu, Han Yan and Wu Lang were the primary attack force. Big Yellow was taking on the Crown Prince by himself, and was locked in a difficult battle. Yan Chenyu, Han Yan and Wu Lang were each taking on three enemies. While they could fight without being at a disadvantage, they didn't have an advantage either. After all, they were only Mid Combat Soul warriors. If they were at the same level, the Late Combat Soul realm as their enemies, perhaps they would be able to instantly kill them.

The Black Sect's Combat Soul warriors were put in groups of five, and they were fighting in the formations laid down by Big Yellow. However, because these warriors came from all over the Eastern Continent, there wasn't much connection between them, so they couldn't synergize well. If not for the formations, perhaps the Black Sect would already have been defeated. Even so, the ones on the Black Sect's side were heavily oppressed by their enemy.

In the sky, the Imperial Emperor and Wu Jiu were locked in a tight battle. After the Dao of War reached new heights, Wu Jiu's combat strength had become extremely powerful. Compared to the Imperial Emperor who had broken through to the Combat King realm long ago, he was not any weaker.

Judging from how the Imperial Emperor and Wu Jiu were fighting, it would perhaps take them another three days and three nights in order for one of them to come out victorious.

On the other side, the battle between Jiang Chen and the Old Emperor was the most intense. The Old Emperor was a peak First Grade Combat King warrior with incredible abilities. He was basically suppressing Jiang Chen like a mountain. Since the beginning of the fight, Jiang Chen had been on the defensive.

However, the Old Emperor didn't feel happy at all. For someone like to fight a Mid Combat Soul youth without being able to defeat him, it was incredibly disgraceful. A fierce storm was raging in the Old Emperor's mind, as he couldn't believe that a peerless genius like this could exist in the Eastern Continent.

With just a Mid Combat Soul cultivation, Jiang Chen was able to fight a First Grade Combat King. Throughout the history of the entire Eastern Continent, no one like him had even existed before. In the past, the Old Emperor was considered a rare genius. However, when comparing his past self with Jiang Chen, the gap was not small.

“That useless fool, how did he run the empire?! Not only did he not maintain a good relationship with this genius, he actually made him our enemy! What a fool!”

While fighting Jiang Chen, the Old Emperor repeatedly scolded the Imperial Emperor inwardly.

“But since he has become our enemy, I'll have to kill him as soon as possible; not allow him any more room to grow! If not, the consequences will be devastating! If this guy breaks through to the Late Combat Soul realm, even I won't be his match.”

The Old Emperor thought to himself. Since the relationship between them and Jiang Chen could no longer be fixed, he would have to kill this genius as soon as possible. If not, the Martial Saint Dynasty would really be destroyed by this young man one day.

Currently, it was just like when he fought the Third Emperor and the others. Jiang Chen had fallen into a unique state. Under the Old Emperor's pressure, the Dragon Transformation skill had started circulating at high speed, and it was approaching the brink of evolution. With such stimulation, new Dragon Marks had started forming in Jiang Chen's body, and with every new Dragon Mark formed, Jiang Chen's combat strength would increase even further. Conversely, the Old Emperor was constantly using up his

energy, and if the situation kept going like this, Jiang Chen would naturally have no need to fear the Old Emperor.

Jiang Chen did worry about something; the battlefield below him. For now, the fight between Wu Jiu and the Imperial Emperor wouldn't have any problems, and the battle between him and the Old Emperor would take some time. If the ones below didn't get any help, they would soon be defeated.

The battlefield below was rumbling, and a few miserable screams could be heard. Those screams came from a formation formed by five men. Their team had been broken up by their enemies, causing them to be flooded by the enemies. Three of them were instantly killed, while the remaining two were rescued by the Ice Demon King.

“Damn it, this monster!”

A few Late Combat Soul warriors were still chasing after the Ice Demon King, trying their best to kill it. However, they had lost count of how many times they had killed the Ice Demon King to no avail. Not only did they not managed to kill it, they hadn't even managed to prevent it from wreaking havoc on the battlefield, causing them huge losses.

In fact, the Ice Demon King had its own intellect. It knew that the best way to contribute to this battle was like this. With its cultivation base, if it went ahead and fought with those Late Combat Soul warriors, it would undoubtedly be something incredibly stupid. However, it was impossible for the Ice Demon King alone to change the overall situation.

Hence, the Ice Demon King decided to fight guerilla style; taking advantage of its immortal body to slaughter those below the Late Combat Soul realm, constantly reducing the overall combat strength of the enemy.

Argh...

Another formation was destroyed by the warriors from the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the miserable screams emerging from those on the Black Sect's side were becoming more intense. Many people started feeling regret; if they had known that the Martial Saint Dynasty had such a powerful force, they never would have come here to participate in this war.

The Black Sect obviously didn't have an advantage in this current situation unless Jiang Chen could kill the Old Emperor in a very short amount of time, or Wu Jiu could kill the Imperial Emperor. However, judging from their situation, it was clearly impossible. Let alone killing the Old Emperor, Jiang Chen was still in a disadvantageous position.

"We're done, we're all finished this time!"

Someone shouted.

"Haha... kill them all for me! Ignore that monster, just go and kill the other men!"

The Crown Prince who was fighting with Big Yellow joyfully laughed out. At the same time, he asked those Late Combat Soul warriors to stop worrying about the Ice Demon King, as he already knew that it was basically immortal. Many days ago, if not for this monster, he never would have reached such a miserable state.

Right at this moment, a sudden change occurred. An oppressive sound echoed out from a distance, and soon after, nearly twenty figures were seen flying toward the battlefield. There were two people in the lead; one man and one girl. The man had a tall and muscular body; a very imposing appearance, and he was carrying a long and big blue ruler. The girl was wearing a skintight black dress, giving her a beautiful and seductive look. The girl was carrying a zither in her hand, and she was also portraying a very imposing appearance.

"Haha... The Nangong family is here to help!"

Before the people arrived on the battlefield, a loud laughter sounded out. The one who just spoke was none other than Nangong Wentian! After mastering the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill, he had advanced at a tremendous pace. He was now a Mid Combat Soul warrior!

Many people were surprised upon seeing these twenty people who had suddenly appeared, as even an idiot could tell how strong this reinforcement was. Han Yan and Big Yellow were even more excited. Aside from them, only a few others here knew Nangong Wentian.

“Brother Nan, you’ve finally come back!”

Han Yan said out loud while fighting three Late Combat Soul warriors by himself.

“Attack...!”

Nangong Wentian cried out. He was the first amongst the ones who just appeared to attack. At the same time, all those mighty warriors from the Nangong family began attacking with full force. Meanwhile, Wu Ningzhu didn’t move. Her eyes were focused on Jiang Chen, who was currently fighting the Old Emperor. She couldn’t help but feel infatuated as she looked at Jiang Chen with her beautiful eyes.

“This guy has become even stronger. He is now capable of fighting a Combat King warrior.”

Wu Ningzhu shook her head. She didn’t wear her veil today, so her peerless beauty was revealed to everyone.

When Yan Chenyu who was fighting in the distance saw Wu Ningzhu, she was instantly shocked by her beauty. The way Wu Ningzhu stared at Jiang Chen made Yan Chenyu feel a bit uncomfortable. As a girl herself, Yan Chenyu could understand the meaning hidden in Wu Ningzhu’s eyes.

“Miss Wu, after traveling so far from the Southern Continent,

are you just going to stand there and watch us fight?”

Jiang Chen turned to Wu Ningzhu and teased. Actually, he had not expected the Nangong family to suddenly appear to help him, and even WU Ningzhu was here. This caused Jiang Chen to breath out a sigh of relief. Nangong Wentian was not the only person who came from the Nangong family, even Nangong Yunfan and Tu Yi was here. Jiang Chen even more amazed to see Nangong Yunzheng and his son. Jiang Chen was no idiot, he understood that the internal affairs of the Nangong family must have been fully resolved. Nangong Yunfan and Nangong Yunzheng must have reconciled. For the Nangong family, this was indeed great news.

The reinforcements were incredibly strong; all of them were mighty warriors, and Wu Ningzhu was even more frightening. Jiang Chen understood Wu Ningzhu’s abilities clearly. With her and the Nangong family’s help, the situation was most likely going to change.

Chapter 458 – Killing The Crown Prince

A dazzling smile emerged onto Wu Ningzhu's face upon hearing Jiang Chen's words. Without hesitating, she flew toward the battlefield, placed her hands on her zither, and unleashed a light wave toward the enemy.

Argh!

Two sad and miserable cries were instantly heard. With just this single attack, two Combat Soul warriors were sliced in half and died miserable. Like a demon who had just descended to the battlefield, Wu Ningzhu plucked the strings on her zither, turning the terrifying soundwaves into countless razor sharp blades that wreaked havoc, causing blood-shrieking screams to continuously sound out from those from the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“What an incredible lady!”

“Who is this lady? Not only is she so strong, she also has such a beautiful face! Judging from her figure alone, she is on par with Yan Chenyu! Jiang Chen is such a lucky guy!”

“Of course, only girls with peerless beauty can be a match for a genius like Jiang Chen! This girl is so formidable, just she alone is enough to cause havoc amongst the enemies! Those others who came to help are extremely strong as well! We finally have an advantageous position!”

“Haha, perfect! Here comes our strong reinforcement! Brothers,

let's kill all we can!"

.....

The arrival of Wu Ningzhu and the Nangong family was a heavy blow to the Martial Saint Dynasty's army, as they had caused a huge amount of casualties just by joining the battle. Furthermore, their aggressiveness and formidable combat strength would no doubt stimulate the spirit of those on the Black Sect's side.

Although the Martial Saint Dynasty still had plenty of Late Combat Soul warriors, much more than the Black Sect had, after Wu Ningzhu and the mighty warriors of the Nangong family appeared, their advantages had disappeared.

Originally, the Martial Saint Dynasty's high-end force was the Third Emperor and the others who were killed by Jiang Chen. These remaining Late Combat Soul warriors were just some mere ordinary Late Combat Soul warriors. Compared to Nangong Yunfan, Nangong Yunzheng, Thousand Hand Butcher Tu Yi, the gap between them became vivid.

With the unstoppable Wu Ningzhu, unless a Combat King warrior could fight her personally, she was like a lioness in the midst of a herd of sheep; no one were capable of stopping her.

In fact, the Southern Continent was not at peace now. The conflict between the Profound River Palace and the Demon King Palace had become heated, and a war had erupted between them. As the Profound River Palace's Holy Maiden, Wu Ningzhu had

travelled so far to the Eastern Continent at this critical moment, and the only reason was because of that guy who had removed her veil.

As for the Nangong family, not long after Jiang Chen left, Nangong Yunzheng had taken the initiative to return to the family, bringing a perfect ending to the internal affairs. And, right at that moment, Nangong Wentian told them that he would be going to the Eastern Continent, because he had already learned about the situation between Jiang Chen and the Martial Saint Dynasty before coming to the Southern Continent. He predicted that after Jiang Chen returned to the Eastern Continent, there would be a lot of trouble for him to deal with. Thus, he decided to go and offer some help. When the upper echelons of the Nangong family heard this, led by Nangong Yunzheng and Tu Yi, these guys made up their mind to go to the Eastern Continent to help.

They owed Jiang Chen a huge debt of gratitude, and Nangong Yunfan was not an ungrateful man. Therefore, this group of Combat Soul warriors started rushing toward the Eastern Continent, and they finally arrived when the war between Jiang Chen and the Martial Saint Dynasty had begun; a perfect timing. If they had arrived one hour later, perhaps the Black Sect would already have been defeated.

Wonderhand Thousandtune Wu Ningzhu served her reputation well. The terrifying zither tunes resounded throughout the entire battlefield. Wherever she went, a disaster would strike the enemies. Thus, she and the Ice Demon King became the two existences that caused the most harm to the Martial Saint Dynasty.

“Kaka... damn eunuch, taste another one of this master dog’s mighty fart!”

Big Yellow let out a sinister laughed. The sudden change in the situation made him really excited, so he just turned around and pointed his butt toward the Crown Prince. The terrified Crown Prince panicked, then he unleashed a saber beam toward Big Yellow as he quickly dodged aside.

Boom!

Big Yellow’s fart could truly startle both heaven and earth. Its powerful force instantly shattered the saber beam unleashed by the Crown Prince, and the green air shot out like a cannonball. At this moment, the entire battlefield was filled with a pungent smell.

“The fuck?! Big Yellow, stop doing that! It stinks!”

Han Yan couldn’t help but scold Big Yellow. He felt really speechless when it came to this dog. As a Dragon Horse who possessed a noble and prestigious bloodline, Big Yellow could awaken all kinds of innate abilities, but he instead had an innate ability that farted. Not only that, it was extremely stinky and loud, and no one could resist this attack.

The Crown Prince gritted his teeth tightly. His hatred toward Big Yellow made him feel a strong desire to rip his skin off and cook him alive. However, after fighting him for so long, the Crown Prince realized that it would be impossible for him to kill Big Yellow with his current ability. Thus, there was no way he could

get revenge for his humiliation.

But soon after, the Crown Prince's eyes landed on Yan Chenyu who wasn't far away from him, and an animus look immediately appeared in his eyes. This was the girl who covered his wonderful life with a dark blanket. Whenever he thought of Yan Chenyu, the Crown Prince would be unable to control his emotions.

“Bitch! You shall die for me now!”

The Crown Prince furiously roared out as he charged toward Yan Chenyu. When the two Late Combat Soul warriors who were fighting with Yan Chenyu saw this, they immediately backed off, as they knew about the resentment between the Crown Prince and Yan Chenyu.

“Hmph! Damn eunuch!”

Yan Chenyu coldly harrumphed. She waved her hand and unleashed a cloud of sharp ice crystals toward the Crown Prince. Hearing her say ‘damn eunuch’, the Crown Prince was instantly enraged. His eyes immediately turned red, and he roared out crazily as he unleashed an attack toward Yan Chenyu.

But too bad, Yan Chenyu was no longer the same as in the past, and the Crown Prince was also not the same Crown Prince. With his current ability, he was at most up to par with Yan Chenyu. Thus, killing her and avenging the Little Crown Prince was just a fat chance.

The fight instantly attracted Wu Ningzhu's attention. Her beautiful eyes stared at Yan Chenyu, and she couldn't help but feel amazed.

“What a beautiful young girl! Looks like she is the Yan Chenyu mentioned by Nangong Wentian.”

Wu Ningzhu murmured to herself. She started sizing up Yan Chenyu, then finally nodded her head, “She has a Miraculous Physique, allowing her to fight Late Combat Soul warriors with a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base. Every part of her body is portraying an aura of natural beauty, no wonder that little rascal fell in love with her. Perhaps only a girl like this is a perfect match for that little rascal.”

This was Wu Ningzhu's first impression of Yan Chenyu. For a girl, especially one who was so prideful, it wasn't easy to speak so highly of another girl.

“Little sister Yu, let me help you.”

Wu Ningzhu moved and arrived next to Yan Chenyu. She showed Yan Chenyu a dazzling smile and said, “My name is Wu Ningzhu, a friend of Jiang Chen.”

Yan Chenyu looked at Wu Ningzhu, but didn't say anything. Both girls had a mutual understanding as they launched their attack toward the Crown Prince.

“Icebound!”

“Fantasy Zither Thousandtunes!”

Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu shouted at the same time as they unleashed their respective attacks. Wu Ningzhu’s attack was faster. The tunes from her zither transformed into multi-colored lights as they flew toward the Crown Prince.

The Crown Prince’s was incredibly enraged. He attacked with his saber, but he just couldn’t withstand Wu Ningzhu’s attack. His saber was knocked out of his hand, and the frightening soundwaves even severely injured his soul.

Puh...

The attack caused the Crown Prince to throw up a mouthful of blood, and his aura to become wilted. And right at this moment, Yan Chenyu’s attack arrived. The chilling air covered the Crown Prince’s entire body like a huge blanket.

The Crown Prince had lost all ability to defend against Yan Chenyu’s attack, so he was immediately transferred into an ice sculpture; completely frozen.

“Die!”

The two girls shouted out at the same time as they once again attacked together. Wu Ningzhu unleashed a light wave, while Yan

Chenyu unleashed an ice sword. Both attacks fell onto the Crown Prince's body at the same time.

Under the combined attack of these two girls, the poor Crown Prince couldn't withstand a single strike, and was sliced into three parts. As he was frozen when he was killed, he couldn't even let out a single sound.

Wu Ningzhu and Yan Chen exchanged a glance and a smile. After that, they just dashed toward different parts of the battlefield. This was the first time they had met, and the first time they worked hand in hand.

“The Crown Prince is dead!”

Someone shouted out, simply bringing an even greater turmoil to the Martial Saint Dynasty's army, who was already in a disadvantageous side. The Crown Prince was dead; he was their leader, but even he had been killed! Could they still win this war?

The Crown Prince's death brought a huge blow to the Martial Saint Dynasty. At this moment, the spirit was all on the Black Sect's side. Although the Black Sect had fewer people, their fighting spirit was still towering. On the other side, the warriors of the Martial Saint Dynasty behaved like some drenched chickens; they had lost all their fighting spirit.

“My son!”

In the sky, when the Imperial Emperor saw that his son had been killed, he furiously roared out and unleashed an energy beam toward Wu Ningzhu. However, it was blocked by Wu Jiu.

“Imperial Emperor, your opponent is me.”

Wu Jiu said with a sneer.

“Wu Jiu, don’t get in my way! I must kill those two sluts who killed my son!”

The Imperial Emperor shouted.

“The Crown Prince deserved to die. If not for him, things wouldn’t have reached this stage. Furthermore, he has already been castrated, so did you still want to count on him to become the Martial Saint Dynasty’s next Imperial Emperor?”

Wu Jiu’s words touched the Imperial Emperor’s most sensitive spot, and it enraged him. He began attacking even more aggressively.

On the other side, the fight between Jiang Chen and the Old Emperor had reached its climax. Jiang Chen was attack as if he had gone berserk. Although only a short amount of time had passed, another 1,500 Dragon Marks had formed in Jiang Chen’s body. Including the previous 10,000 Dragon Marks, he now had a total of 11,500 Dragon Marks. As long as he reached 15,000 Dragon Marks, Jiang Chen would be able to break through to the Late Combat

Soul realm.

Jiang Chen was suppressing the newly formed Dragon Marks continuously as he fought. As the Dragon Transformation skill was on the brink of evolving, he wanted to borrow the pressure from the Old Emperor to stimulate his potential to a maximum level. Jiang Chen knew that there was a Second Grade Combat King warrior hidden behind the Martial Saint Dynasty, so he knew he had to grab onto every single opportunity that could make him progress further.

Chapter 459 – Counter Attack, Suppressing The Old Emperor!

The rumbling of the war lingered in one's ear. Shockwaves were constantly wreaking havoc across the battlefield. The entire battlefield that covered a thousand miles circumference had been destroyed, and a huge mountain range was turned to dust in the middle of this raging war. Although everyone were fighting in mid-air, the entire Black Sect was crumbling as a result of this war. Conceivably, after this war, the Black Sect would be in ruins; nothing left over. As for those Divine Core warriors, when they found out that none of them could contribute in the war, and that they could only face instant death if they were to join, they quietly left the Black Sect. If not, they would end up in the same state as those crumbled buildings.

The newly constructed main gate and buildings of the Black Sect were going to be destroyed, but no one cared about that at this moment. If they won today's war, their current location would just be a petty place, because at that point of time, the entire Martial Saint Dynasty would be theirs, or perhaps the entire Eastern Continent.

Although the Martial Saint Dynasty still had an advantage in numbers, after the Crown Prince died, as well as the reinforcement of Wu Ningzhu and the Nangong family, their spirit had hit rock bottom, and they had begun collapsing. If things kept going like this, perhaps the Martial Saint Dynasty really would be destroyed today.

Argh...

Sad and miserable screams persisted as blood was spilled in all directions. Layer after layer of space was shattered as devastating energy ripples filled every inch of the battlefield.

It was a fierce fight between the Imperial Emperor and Wu Jiu,

but the Imperial Emperor just couldn't defeat Wu Jiu. The death of his son had also impacted his mental state, causing a negative impact to his combat strength.

The bad news wasn't just about the Crown Prince's death. Looking at the escalating situation on the battlefield underneath, the Martial Saint Dynasty was getting closer and closer to being defeated, causing the Imperial Emperor's heart to be filled with both fury and speechlessness. According to his original plan, he would easily be able to suppress and crush the Black Sect with their army's mighty force, and the war would end in a short amount of time.

But he never expected the Black Sect to successfully call upon so many Combat Soul warriors, and then there was that formidable group that had appeared out of nowhere, turning the tables of the war in an instant. He was also annoyed by Jiang Chen. Initially, he thought that with the Old Emperor's formidable combat strength, killing Jiang Chen would just take a few minutes. He had also failed to take Wu Jiu seriously, as he had just broken through to the Combat King realm.

Judging from the way things were going, Jiang Chen would indeed not be able to kill the Old Emperor. However, he was like a cockroach that couldn't be killed either. The Old Emperor was obviously fighting with all his strength, but he had yet to inflict any real injuries to Jiang Chen. And, Wu Jiu, the guy who had just become a First Grade Combat King, he too was a tough nut to crack. Thus, the war that the Martial Saint Dynasty was so confident they could win had fallen into the current situation. If the situation kept going like this, forget about destroying the Black Sect, there was a possibility that the Martial Saint Dynasty would be defeated by them today.

The Old Emperor was furious as he unleashed the Overturning Heavens Seal toward Jiang Chen, only to see it destroyed by Jiang Chen's Nine Murdering Flood Dragons. Jiang Chen had formed

another one thousand Dragon Marked, giving him a total of 12,500 Dragon Marks. He was making progress by leaps and bounds.

A grin emerged on Jiang Chen's face. Right at this moment, his combat strength allowed him to fight the Old Emperor without being at a disadvantage. If he fought with all his strength, he was confident that he could inflict a deadly injury upon the Old Emperor.

“Damn little boy, enough playing with you!”

The Old Emperor furiously shouted. With a wave of his hand, a crystal sword that was radiating brilliant light appeared. It was an extremely sharp sword, and just its aura was enough to make the space shake.

Clang!

On the other side, the Heavenly Saint Sword appeared together with a loud cry and floated above Jiang Chen's head. Its aura was no weaker than that of the Old Emperor's weapon.

Swoosh!

The two powerful swords both cried out in a manner that shook both heaven and earth as they transformed into two lustrous beams. They tore apart the surrounding space as they flew toward each other, before finally colliding. The Old Emperor was able to tear the space with the Spatial Force, but Jiang Chen was able to do it purely with his own sword.

Boom!

The two mighty swords collided with each other, immediately destroying the space in that particular area. A black vortex immediately shot out from the spatial crack that had formed in that area, and it carried a tremendous suction force that was extremely eerie.

Tap, tap, tap!

Because of that tremendous collision, the Old Emperor was forced to take three steps back before he could stabilize his body. Finally, a look of shock once again emerged on his face.

“How could this be possible?”

The Old Emperor was really shocked, as the young man in front of him was too strong. A moment before this, the Old Emperor had still been able to suppress Jiang Chen, but once he took out his King Weapon, Jiang Chen had unexpectedly been able to force him back! How did this happen?

The Old Emperor was no idiot. He guessed that Jiang Chen must have gained a huge improvement in the midst of their battle, and that's why he was able to force him back. Because of this fact, a storm began raging in the Old Emperor's mind, as it was extremely terrifying to know someone who could level up in the middle of a battle.

“Haha... Old Emperor, I guess you've attacked enough. Now, it's your turn to be attacked!”

Jiang Chen started laughing as he completely unleashed the power of 12,500 Dragon Marks. The incredible power caused Jiang Chen to look like a burning sun that no one could stare straight into. The Heavenly Saint Sword was raised up high by Jiang Chen, and it was constantly letting out joyful cries. Without hesitating, he slashed the sword toward the Old Emperor. With the attack's incredible speed, it left nearly no room for the Old Emperor to respond.

Jiang Chen decided to take the initiative and attack. Although the Dragon Transformation skill had yet to evolve, Jiang Chen could no longer feel any pressure from the Old Emperor. Thus, it wasn't necessary for him to hold back.

What happened next caused many people to break into a cold

sweat. The way everybody looked at Jiang Chen had once again changed. None of them had ever seen someone become so fierce in such a short amount of time. In the second half of the battle, the Old Emperor was no longer Jiang Chen's match, and he was forced to continuously retreat because of Jiang Chen's attacks.

"This guy."

Nangong Wentian who was fighting on the battlefield beneath couldn't help but shake his head. Comparing himself to a monster like this was truly upsetting.

"Brother Jiang Chen is indeed a genius that can't be found throughout thousands of years of history. When we met him in the Southern Continent, he was far from being this strong, but just in this short period of time, he has become able to suppress a Combat King warrior! I don't think that anyone underneath the heavens can compare with his talent!"

"I'm certain his future will be unmeasurable. Becoming the enemy of a monster like this is truly not a wise decision."

Nangong Yunfan and Tu Yi were struck with shock beyond compare. When they remembered the scene where they had met Jiang Chen for the first time, they couldn't help but feel embarrassed, as none of them had taken Jiang Chen seriously at that time.

"Kaka, excellent! Little Chen, kill that old man!"

Big Yellow laughed out as he spoke. Many people were watching the fight between Jiang Chen and the Old Emperor; their positions had now switched. Before this, Jiang Chen was being suppressed in the fight, but now, he was actually the one suppressing the Old Emperor. If Jiang Chen managed to kill the Old Emperor, today's war could be considered won.

The Old Emperor had been at the First Grade Combat King realm for a long time, and he was at the peak of the current stage. He was

just a single step away from becoming a Second Grade Combat King warrior. Although Jiang Chen was currently able to suppress him, killing him would perhaps prove to be something extremely difficult to achieve.

Argh!!

The Old Emperor furiously roared out. Only he knew just how frustrated he was. He had been living in seclusion for a long time, and this was the first time in many years that he had come out to fight. However, a junior with a cultivation base many times weaker than his own had forced him to continuously retreat.

Jiang Chen became more and more aggressive as the battle progressed. However, no matter how hard he tried, he was only able to suppress the Old Emperor. It was currently very difficult for him to kill the Old Emperor.

“Hmph! There is a stronger existence hiding in the Martial Saint Dynasty; I must kill this old fart and the Imperial Emperor today!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed as he began pondering. Finally, he narrowed his methods to the Great Illusion Realm. Jiang Chen had rarely used this skill, so perhaps he could put it to good use against the Old Emperor.

“Illusion Heart Sutra – Great Illusion Realm!”

Jiang Chen suddenly shouted. At the same time, he began performing some hand gestures, unleashed mystical symbols after symbols. In an instant, the space in front of him began twisting. The Old Emperor could feel that the scene had suddenly changed, as if he had entered another universe.

The loud battlefield could no longer be heard, the Imperial Emperor and Wu Jiu had disappeared as well, and his enemy, Jiang Chen, was nowhere to be found.

After that, with a flicker of light and dark, the Old Emperor returned to a bright palace in the Martial Saint Dynasty, then he

suddenly began roaring out like a crazy man.

This heartbreaking roar resounded throughout the entire scene, attracting everyone's attention. What the crowd saw was the Old Emperor who had suddenly gone crazy. He was repeatedly waving the sword in his hand, slicing the space around him into separate pieces. However, no one knew what had happened, and why the Old Emperor had suddenly gone crazy.

Outside the Great Illusion Realm, Jiang Chen couldn't help but shake his head, "This Illusion Heart Sutra is truly powerful. It can pull out anything that is hidden in depths of one's heart. Looks like the Old Emperor has seen something he really didn't want to see, thus he became crazy."

Jiang Chen had to acknowledge the frightening ability of the Illusion Heart Sutra. However, using an illusion like this was a great risk for him, so he rarely used it against his enemy. Unexpectedly, it actually yielded a pretty good result this time.

"Almost time."

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up, and he suddenly retracted the Great Illusion Realm. In an instant, the things that had appeared in front of the Old Emperor disappeared, and he was once again back at the raging battlefield. The sudden change in environment brought the Old Emperor a lot of discomfort, so he was startled. He stood straight in mid-air with both eyes completely red, and he was panting for breath. He was still stuck in the previous environment inwardly.

No doubt, it was incredibly deadly for the Old Emperor to stand blankly like that, because Jiang Chen would never let this opportunity slip away. His feet moved, and with incredible speed, he appeared in front of the Old Emperor. Without hesitating, he sliced it toward the Old Emperor's head.

Chapter 460 – Killing A Combat King

“Not good!”

The Old Emperor sensed an extremely dangerous aura, instantly sending a chill down his spine. However, he was still a peak First Grade Combat King, so his reaction speed was naturally incredible. Hence, he was able to dodge to his side.

Slash!

However, although the Old Emperor was quick to respond, Jiang Chen’s sword was much faster. He managed to prevent the sword from hitting his head, but one of his arms was sliced off instead, causing blood to spray out like a fountain. He stumbled in mid-air, and nearly fell down. Losing one arm had greatly affected his combat strength.

“Imperial Uncle!”

The Imperial Emperor who was fighting fiercely with Wu Jiu immediately cried out in shock. The Old Emperor was the most important person in today’s war, and if he was defeated, it meant that this war had come to an end. Jiang Chen was an incredibly frightening man, as he was able to defeat the Old Emperor with just a mere Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, something truly unbelievable. Since the Old Emperor had lost one of his arms, he was no longer Jiang Chen’s match. If the Old Emperor was killed by Jiang Chen today, the consequences today would be beyond the Imperial Emperor’s imagination.

“Damn it, this is so awesome!”

“This Jiang Chen is going to defy the heavens! I placed my bet correctly this time, even the Old Emperor is not his match! I think the Martial Saint Dynasty is going to be destroyed by Jiang Chen, and if we follow the Black Sect, good days will come!”

“This is the most heaven defying existence I have ever seen!

Jiang Chen is the miracle of the Eastern Continent! However, the Old Emperor is still a Combat King warrior. Although he has lost one arm, he can still escape from this place. I wonder if Jiang Chen has the ability to completely kill him.”

All the people on the Black Sect’s side were feeling really excited. There was no doubt that Jiang Chen’s aggressiveness had calmed their minds, especially those who were regretting helping Jiang Chen; they felt really lucky right now, as Jiang Chen was just a Mid Combat Soul warrior, but was still able to defeat a First Grade Combat King warrior. With his potential, it was almost certain that he would soon break through to the Combat King realm, and no one could imagine how terrifying he would be upon breaking through to the Combat King realm.

After losing one of his arms, the Old Emperor was struck with great shock, and he was now completely enraged. His hatred toward Jiang Chen had reached a new peak, and he felt a strong desire to rip Jiang Chen into a thousand pieces. However, he had lost that opportunity.

“Old fool, you can die now.”

Jiang Chen continued attacking with incredible speed, not allowing the Old Emperor any time to respond. Once again, he casually swung his Heavenly Saint Sword, unleashing countless dazzling sword beams. The beams waved into a gigantic net that then descended toward the Old Emperor.

The attack came too quickly, and it caused the Old Emperor’s nerves to tense up. Without any hesitation, he raised the sword in his hand and swung it toward the Heavenly Saint Sword.

The collision of these two weapons sent sparks flying all over the place. After losing an arm, the Old Emperor’s combat strength was halved, so he was no longer a match for Jiang Chen who fought as fiercely as tigers and wolves, let alone Jiang Chen who was attacking with the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Argh!!

A miserable scream sounded out from the Old Emperor's mouth. His sword was knocked out of his hand and was taken away by Jiang Chen. Numerous wounds appeared on the Old Emperor's body after being hit by Jiang Chen's attack. Blood was constantly dripping down, and his spirit had already reached the bottom.

"You're finished."

Without wasting any time, Jiang Chen once again attacked the Old Emperor in an oppressive manner.

"Want to kill me? Fat chance!"

The Old Emperor gritted his teeth tightly as he spoke. Although he was no longer a match for Jiang Chen, it was still easy for him to run away because of his Combat King cultivation base. He had mastered the Spatial Force, allowing him to enter a different dimension whenever he wanted and escape. The Combat Soul warriors who couldn't use Spatial Force couldn't compare with him.

Like a phantom, the Old Emperor had simply disappeared in the blink of an eye.

"Want to escape in front of my eyes? That's impossible."

Jiang Chen said in a cold manner. He predicted that the Old Emperor would use this method, and he had prepared for it. It was any other ordinary Combat Soul warrior, even if they could defeat a Combat King warrior, it would be impossible to kill him. Once a man reached the Combat King realm, he would comprehend the Spatial Force, allowing him to easily travel across space and dimensions, making it very difficult to kill him. If a Combat King warrior wanted to run away, it would be extremely difficult to stop him.

But unfortunately, the Old Emperor had encountered Jiang Chen, a true freak. As the reincarnation of the greatest Saint

underneath the heavens, Jiang Chen knew all kinds of powerful tricks. Ordinary people had no way of comparing with him.

“Come out now!”

Jiang Chen fiercely roared out as he thrust his Heavenly Saint Sword like a poisonous snake forward, piercing the air in front of him. It was an incredibly fast and powerful strike, and penetrated right into a different dimension. Following a ‘puchi’ sound was a miserable scream.

Jiang Chen shook his sword and pulled it out from the different dimension together with the Old Emperor. It was a frightening scene, and the Old Emperor’s entire body was trembling. Jiang Chen’s sword had pierced through his head all the way through. Fresh and warm blood was dripping down from the Heavenly Saint Sword.

It was a deadly strike, but the Old Emperor was still alive, as Combat King warriors possessed incredible life force. The dying Old Emperor stared straight into Jiang Chen’s eyes and said with a vague voice, “No, impossible, this can’t be possible... you haven’t comprehended Spatial Force, how could you accurately find my position?”

The Old Emperor was struck with great shock. What happened had gone beyond his knowledge and imagination. He never thought it would be possible for a First Grade Combat King warrior to die by the hands of a young Combat Soul warrior, and he never thought it would be possible for him to fail to escape even with the ability of a Combat King warrior.

The Old Emperor sensed his life force gradually fading away with a face full of despair.

“Oh heavens, he really killed the Old Emperor!”

“How could this happen?! Is this guy a monster?! Even the Old Emperor was killed by him! We’re finished, we’re all finished!”

“Perhaps the Imperial Emperor is going to face the same fate... We’re all going to die today!”

.....

The Combat Soul warriors of the Martial Saint Dynasty were well on their way to complete defeat. And now, after witnessing Jiang Chen kill the Old Emperor, their spirit had completely collapse. None of them had any courage to fight anymore.

“This is awesome, he has killed a Combat King warrior!”

“The birth of a peerless monster! He has created a miracle by killing a Combat King with just a Combat Soul cultivation base! The Eastern Continent’s history will definitely focus on today’s war!”

“Jiang Chen’s great name will be spoken of for generations, he will be the idol for countless younger generations!”

.....

Contrary to the people of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the ones on the Black Sect’s side were filled with great joy. In a major scale war like this, the high-end combat force was the key to their victory. Basically, after Jiang Chen killed the Old Emperor, they had basically won.

Furthermore, the Old Emperor’s death signified one thing; the Imperial Emperor was going to face a similar fate. The Imperial Emperor was weaker than the Old Emperor, and since Jiang Chen was able to kill the Old Emperor, killing the Imperial Emperor would be a piece of cake, let alone the fact that he also had Wu Jiu to help him.

“You can die in peace now.”

Jiang Chen shook his arm, unleashing an energy wave from the Heavenly Saint Sword that shattered the Old Emperor’s head, killing him on the spot. Although Jiang Chen just killed a Combat King warrior, the previous Imperial Emperor, he showed no

emotions while doing so, as if he had just killed an ordinary man.

In fact, this Old Emperor was no different from an ordinary man in Jiang Chen's mind.

“What?!”

On the other side, the Imperial Emperor who witnessed this cried out in shock, and blood almost burst out from his eyes. He couldn't accept this result, it was something he hadn't thought to be possible. He came here today in high spirit, but he was greeted with such a miserable ending. First, it was the Crown Prince, then the Old Emperor. He had underestimated Jiang Chen, and if he knew that this would happen, he would have called upon the Old Great Emperor, then he would be able to rip Jiang Chen into a thousand pieces.

“Jiang Chen, I'll definitely have you killed the next time!”

The Imperial Emperor shouted toward Jiang Chen. After that, he tore a crack in the air with his bare hands and stepped into a different space. The Imperial Emperor was a wise man, he knew they had been completely defeated today, as even the Old Emperor had died. If he kept fight, he would face the same fate. Hence, the Imperial Emperor chose to run for his life.

“Since you're already here, you might as well stay. Brother Jiu, stop him!”

Jiang Chen shouted. He had killed the Old Emperor, and there was no way he would let the Imperial Emperor escape. Sparing the life of a dangerous man like this would be disastrous.

Jiang Chen's reminder was needless, as Wu Jiu had already move. Right when the Imperial Emperor stepped into the different space, Wu Jiu followed after him. Soon after, a rumbling sound could be heard in mid-air, even though there was nothing there. The two men were currently fighting in another dimension.

Jiang Chen unleashed his aura, and once again forcefully pierced

through the space in front of him. With the Great Soul Derivation skill, he was able to pinpoint the Imperial Emperor's exact position and injure him. A moment before this, the Old Emperor was killed with the help of this.

Buzz...

The air was violently trembling as Jiang Chen's sword penetrated straight into the other dimension. In the following moment, two figures suddenly emerged in mid-air. The Imperial Emperor's body was swaying, and he could barely stand. A bloody hole was visible on his chest, and blood was constantly dripping down. This injury was clearly caused by Jiang Chen.

"Imperial Emperor, there is no way you can run away today."

Jiang Chen stood in front of the Imperial Emperor and said. After forming another 2,500 Dragon Marks, Jiang Chen's combat strength had far exceeded the Imperial Emperor's, and with the help of Wu Jiu, the Imperial Emperor simply had no way of escaping.

"Haha, Jiang Chen, I've truly underestimated you; I never thought you could grow so quickly. I just hate the fact that I didn't kill you earlier, leading me to this miserable ending."

The Imperial Emperor started laughing. He felt deeply grieved. When he met Jiang Chen for the first time in the Martial Saint Palace, Jiang Chen was just a kid who had yet to reach the Combat Soul realm. In the Imperial Emperor's eyes, Jiang Chen was an ant whom he could easily crush. If he had killed Jiang Chen at that time, today's disaster would never have happened.

Too bad, there were no pills that could cure one's regrets.

"Jiang Chen, I suggest you stop right now. If you kill me today, you won't be able to deal with the consequences. Wu Jiu should know this. There is another formidable existence in the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Old Great Emperor. He is a Second Grade

Combat King warrior, and he's not someone you are capable of dealing with."

The Imperial Emperor threatened with another mammoth of the Martial Saint Dynasty.

Little to his knowledge, a threat like this was useless in front of Jiang Chen, as Jiang Chen already knew about that Second Grade Combat King warrior.

Chapter 461 - The Second Transformation

Buzz~

With a swing, the Heavenly Saint Sword arrived straight in front of the Imperial Emperor's neck. Jiang Chen laughed coldly and said, "Imperial Emperor, you will do today, there is nothing that can prevent that. Also, sooner or later, the Old Great Emperor will face the same fate, and the Martial Saint Dynasty will vanish. It is time for the Eastern Continent to replace the old regime with a new one."

Jiang Chen's words caused the Imperial Emperor's face to turn pale. He could see ruthlessness and determination in Jiang Chen's eyes. This youngster in front of him was not joking with him. Although he was a man who sat on the imperial throne, it looked like there would be no way for him to escape his ill fate today.

Right at the same moment, the battles underneath them had come to a complete stop. Everyone were looking into the sky, toward Jiang Chen and the Imperial Emperor. The winners had been decided; the Old Emperor had died, and it looked like the Imperial Emperor wouldn't be able to live either. Once he was killed by Jiang Chen, the Black Sect would obtain victory, and it was also an omen that foretold the fall of the Martial Saint Dynasty.

The eyes of those on the Black Sect's side shone brightly, and their faces were covered with indescribable excitement. Being able to witness this moment, being able to participate in this war that would certainly go down in history, furthermore, on the victorious side, they were incredibly lucky.

"We're screwed, we're all screwed! Even the Imperial Emperor is going to die, can we still survive?"

“Damn it, let’s surrender to Jiang Chen! Perhaps we’ll be able to keep our lives!”

“What a miserable defeat... Jiang Chen is too frightening, he’s able to defeat such a powerful army, and not only that, he also killed the Old Emperor who is a Combat King warrior, and is about to kill the Imperial Emperor. How could we possibly fight against him?”

.....

Everyone on the Martial Saint Dynasty’s side were feeling downhearted, and had lost all their will to fight. Many of them had even began preparing to surrender. They had lost all reason to fight, and if they kept fighting, they would only increase the number of casualties on their side.

“Haha, Jiang Chen, you’ll have to pay a great price if you want to kill me!”

The Imperial Emperor unexpectedly started laughing. He was well aware of what kind of man Jiang Chen was. Knowing that there was no way for him to live another day, he raised his combat weapon and leapt toward Jiang Chen.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed, then he thrust the Heavenly Saint Sword forward as if it was a true dragon pouncing toward its enemy. After forming another 2,500 Dragon Marks, the current Jiang Chen was not someone the Imperial Emperor could deal with. Furthermore, he had previously been injured by Jiang Chen, and blood was still dripping down from the wound on his chest.

Clang!

The Heavenly Saint Sword clashed with the Imperial Emperor’s weapon and forcefully knocked it aside. The force was so powerful that the Imperial Emperor arm went numb, and almost lost it from his grip.

Puchi!

It continued in an unstoppable manner and stabbed right into the Imperial Emperor's chest, and came out from the other side of his body.

Swoosh!

With amazing speed, Jiang Chen pulled the Heavenly Saint Sword out and pressed its sharp tip against the Imperial Emperor's throat, a chilling look apparent in his fierce eyes.

"Imperial Emperor, is there anything else you wish to say?"

Jiang Chen asked with a loud voice.

"Haha..."

The Imperial Emperor started laughing again, his laughter full of bitterness and regret.

"Jiang Chen, I have been a wise emperor for many years, but I never expected to be destroyed by a teenager. I have to admit that you are a peerless genius. My only regret is not killing you with a single slap when we met in the Martial Saint Palace, which could have prevented today's disaster. However, don't be overjoyed, the Martial Saint Dynasty has a powerful foundation, and you are not able to deal with that. After the Old Great Emperor hears about mine and the Old Emperor's deaths, I'm sure he'll leave his secluded cultivation and come seek revenge. At that point, you'll die, and so will all those from the Black Sect."

The Imperial Emperor said while gritting his teeth in anger.

"Imperial Emperor, you should not have provoked me; that was your biggest mistake. We could have gotten along just fine without any trouble, and I would have no issues with your Martial Saint Dynasty either. It is you who brought all this upon yourself. The moment you passed down the Imperial Decree to kill all my family and friends, the destiny between us was decided; the Martial Saint Dynasty was destined to be destroyed by my hands. As for the Old

Great Emperor, he will follow your steps.”

Jiang Chen said with a cold tone. In his eyes, there was no difference between killing an emperor and an ordinary man.

"I feel so much regret..."

The Imperial Emperor let out a miserable scream. In fact, he really did regret provoking Jiang Chen, this monster. If he had treated him nicely, perhaps this genius could be the one to give him the most help.

"A single slip may cause everlasting sorrow. Looking back, your whole life has passed by."

With his black hair aggressively fluttering in the wind, Jiang Chen merciless swung the Heavenly Saint Sword, slicing the Imperial Emperor's head off and sending blood all over the place. The emperor of a great dynasty had fallen. After today's war, the entire Eastern Continent would be in huge turmoil.

Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and grabbed the Imperial Emperor's head. His eyes shone like blazing torches as he gazed at the people of the Martial Saint Dynasty, sending a shiver down their spines. None of them dared stare back.

"God of War, God of War..."

"God of War, God of War..."

A tremendous storm immediately exploded from the Black Sect's side. Everyone were yelling as loudly as they possibly could as they raised their weapon high up into the air and yelled God of War. All of them were looking at Jiang Chen with eyes full of respect and appreciation. Throughout all of history in the Eastern Continent, there had never been a glorious man like this.

In the minds of these people, Jiang Chen truly deserved the God of War title, as he had triumphed in every battle and succeeded in every invasion. No one could blunt the edge of his mightiness.

On the other side, the ones on the Martial Saint Dynasty's side all wore pale and unsightly expressions, and their minds were filled with great terror.

Ruined, completely ruined!

This was the only thought that was lingering in the minds of these people.

"Listen up! Surrender, and I won't kill you!"

Jiang Chen shouted. He didn't want to kill them all, but instead provide them an opportunity. After all, Jiang Chen's real enemy was the Imperial Emperor and the upper echelons of the Martial Saint Dynasty. These people in front of him were merely the weapons used by the Martial Saint Dynasty, and none of them had any grudges with Jiang Chen.

His words instantly caused the survivors of the Martial Saint Dynasty to sigh out in relief, making them feel as if the shadow of death looming over them had just been blown away. They all thought they would die for sure, and none of them thought that there actually was hope to live. Jiang Chen was known as the Devil King, an existence who never blinked his eyes when slaughtering his enemies, but he had just spared their lives. They felt incredibly lucky right now.

Surrender! Of course they would surrender! There wasn't even a need to think about it!

All of them had witnessed Jiang Chen's performance, and now, following the death the Old Emperor and the Imperial Emperor, the Martial Saint Dynasty was basically done for. Jiang Chen had created miracle and miracle, and these people believed that even though there was a Second Grade Combat King in the Martial Saint Dynasty, it would still be destroyed by Jiang Chen sooner or later. The time to replace the Martial Saint Dynasty with a new regime was here, and the entire power structure in the Eastern Continent would be completely changed. The fall of a dynasty meant the

birth of a new empire. For these people, it made no difference who they worked for. If they followed Jiang Chen, they might even get more benefits.

More importantly, nothing was greater than staying alive! So, aside from surrendering, what else could they possibly do?

Fight back? What a joke! How was that any different from seeking death? Putting aside the God of War – Jiang Chen, just take a look at Wu Ningzhu and the few others. Any one of them were able to kill any of these survivors with a single slap.

Finally, the remaining three hundred Combat Soul warrior all chose to surrender. Thus, under the lead of Jiang Chen, the Black Sect had obtained an unprecedented victory.

The result quickly spread across the entire Eastern Continent. In fact, everyone had been paying close attention to this war, so it was impossible for it not to spread quickly. No doubt, the death of the Imperial Emperor and Old Emperor had caused a great storm to appear; a mighty uproar.

“Heavens! What is this result, I can hardly believe it!”

“Two Combat Kings of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Old Emperor and Imperial Emperor have both been killed by Jiang Chen! He is too mighty! Not only that, with the surrender of more than 300 Combat Soul warrior, it could be said that the Martial Saint Dynasty’s entire force has been taken away! The time to replace the old with the new has come!”

“This is truly frightening! Jiang Chen only made his debut not long ago, and now, he has altered the entire power structure of the Eastern Continent! He is an abnormal monster! With all that has happened, the Black Sect’s reputation is now greater than the Martial Saint Dynasty’s! And since the Imperial Emperor is dead, doesn’t that mean that the Martial Saint Dynasty is already destroyed?”

“Not necessarily, I heard that the Old Great Emperor has yet to strike, and he is much stronger than the others. Since the Imperial Emperor and Old Emperor are now dead, I’m sure that the Old Great Emperor will soon strike. I wonder if Jiang Chen will be able to deal with him.

.....

Everyone were discussing this topic, as this was a huge turning point in the Eastern Continent’s history.

Back to the Black Sect.

More than half of the building had been destroyed, but there were still many intact. Today’s war satisfied many people of the Black Sect, so a crazy celebration was currently ongoing.

Wu Ningzhu and Yan Chenyu were happily talking with each other. After fighting shoulder to shoulder in the previous battle, their relationship had become closer. Usually, talented and beautiful girl tended to be very prideful, and Wu Ningzhu and Yan Chenyu were both like that. Thus, those who could befriend them must be equally excellent.

Wu Ningzhu knew that Yan Chenyu was Jiang Chen’s fiancée, but Yan Chenyu had no idea what the current relationship between Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu was. However, based on her womanly instincts, she knew that Wu Ningzhu had fallen in love with Jiang Chen.

While the Black Sect was joyously cultivating, Jiang Chen was busy cultivating. Right after the war had ended, he had gone straight into secluded cultivation.

Jiang Chen had currently placed himself in an isolated and hidden secret room. His eyes were tightly shut, and a loud rumbling sound was sounding from his body and his aura gradually became stronger.

He had gained something significant in today’s war. The Dragon

Transformation skill was on the brink of transforming; a second evolution of the skill! After he killed the Imperial Emperor, it was as if Jiang Chen had fulfilled a requirement; accomplished his goal, and his mind had suddenly opened up! That was actually what had pushed Dragon Transformation skill to its current state.

Now, Jiang Chen was in the middle of having his Dragon Transformation skill transform; evolve to the next level! New Dragon Marks were constantly forming in his body. According to Jiang Chen's estimation, he would break through to the Late Combat Soul realm immediately after the second evolution. Not only that, a new True Dragon Skill would awaken!

Chapter 462 - True Dragon Skill – Azure Dragon's Five Steps

Within the Black Sect's main meeting hall, nearly 30 people belonging to the upper echelons sat on either side of the table. Two men were sitting on the upper end of the table, and one of them was Wu Jiu. With his status as a First Grade Combat King warrior, no one had any objections regarding him sitting at the upper end. It was only logical and natural.

However, the man who sat beside him was just a Divine Core warrior. Amongst all the people sitting here, the weakest man had a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base. Even someone like Wu Ningzhu and Nangong Yunfan who were both powerful Late Combat Soul warriors sat one seat behind the master seat. Yet, this Divine Core warrior was actually sitting comfortably with Wu Jiu, side by side.

This Divine Core warrior believed that they were all overestimating him, but throughout the entire meeting, no one had thought in this way. If only one person was allowed to sit in the master seat, the priority would be given to this man rather than Wu Jiu, and no one would have any complaints, not even Wu Jiu.

Because he was Jiang Zhenhai!

That's right, Jiang Chen's father! Just this identity alone was more than enough to place him at the topmost position; the man who held the highest status in the entire Eastern Continent. Although every single warrior in this hall was a mighty warrior, each of them had to pay respect to Jiang Zhenhai, and no one dared neglect him.

Jiang Zhenhai didn't possess an incredible cultivation base, and he wasn't a man with amazing talent. However, he is the reason Jiang Chen was born into this world, so no one could take him

lightly.

Right at this moment, Jiang Zhenhai was sitting at the upper end of the table with a bright smile visible on his face. The scene in front of him made him feel as if he was dreaming. However, even in his wildest dreams, he had never seen this day coming. Although he appeared to be sitting comfortably in front of everyone, he felt extremely anxious deep in his mind. All the people in front of him were famous, and there was no way he could compare with any of them strength-wise.

Pride!

Having a son like Jiang Chen naturally made Jiang Zhenhai feel proud. Under the heavens, perhaps he was the only person with a Divine Core cultivation base who gained so much respect from Combat Soul warriors, and even a Combat King. This was a supreme honor! From now on, no matter where he went; no one would dare offend him.

"Brother Jiang, you have a good son."

Wu Jiu turned to Jiang Zhenhai and cupped his fist. Jiang Chen's incredible progress had given him a huge surprise, and the result of today's war was something he had never thought possible before. Jiang Chen was constantly progressing. From when he killed the Third Emperor and the others, until he killed the Old Emperor today. It was just a matter of days; progressing like this could only be described as heaven defying.

"Haha, thank you! I'm glad he has all your support!"

Jiang Zhenhai's smile was so big that the edge of his lips nearly touched his ears. He was incredibly happy, because even a Combat King warrior had addressed him as brother. Ugh, something wasn't right... Wu Jiu greeted Jiang Zhenhai's son as brother, and now, he also addressed Jiang Zhenhai as his brother? What kind of relationship was this?

Of course, Jiang Zhenhai was not bothered a bit by this. Having a Combat King warrior address him as brother was unprecedented honor, and it was all because of his son. If not for Jiang Chen, he would just be a man from some remote place, and this Combat King warrior would never take him seriously.

“Kaka! Sir, having such a heaven defying monster in your family, I’m sure your ancestor’s tomb must have exploded with smoke!”

Big Yellow said with a laugh. He was very familiar with Jiang Zhenhai, as he had followed Jiang Chen since the beginning of his journey. Naturally, he didn’t show much politeness and respect when talking.

"Haha..."

Hearing Big Yellow’s words, many people started laughing.

“Nephew Jiang is indeed an unprecedented genius. He was only a Divine Core warrior when he visited the Southern Continent, and in just the matter of a few days, he is now able to kill Combat King warriors. This can no longer just be described as frightening.”

Nangong Yunfan added. When he remembered the moment when Nangong Wentian brought Jiang Chen to their family, he couldn’t help but sigh.

“Having such achievements at that young age... The entire Eastern Continent has been flipped over underneath brother Jiang’s feet; he has just toppled a dynasty! It truly is an amazing achievement!”

Tu Yi also joined the conversation and praised Jiang Chen. He had a really good fight today. As the Nangong family’s Elder, it had been a long time since he participated in a battle like this, and today, he had enjoyed himself to the fullest.

“Although the Old Emperor and the Imperial Emperor are both dead now, there is an even stronger existence in the Martial Saint Dynasty. The Martial Saint Dynasty is very old, so we shouldn’t

underestimate their powerful resources.”

Han Yan said, expressing his worries.

“What Brother Yan said is correct. What you all saw today was not everything the Martial Saint Dynasty had to offer. Although the Old Emperor and Imperial Emperor have both been killed by Jiang Chen, there is still a Second Grade Combat King warrior hiding in the Martial Saint Dynasty, my Great Imperial Uncle. He has been living in seclusion, cut off from all worldly matters, and I am afraid he has reached the peak of the Second Grade Combat King realm, and is only one step away from the Third Grade Combat King realm. It’s going to be really difficult to deal with him, and I don’t think it will take long before the Old Great Emperor strikes.”

Wu Jiu said. He hid nothing and told everyone about the Martial Saint Dynasty’s strongest person.

"What?!"

Many people cried out in shock and their expressions changed. Their joyful atmosphere was immediately frozen. Although they had won the war, if the enemy still had an incredibly strong Second Grade Combat King warrior, none of them would be able to predict the final result.

“A peak Second Grade Combat King warrior; that is an existence much stronger than the Old Emperor! I don’t think any of us are capable of defending against his attacks! Soon, that Old Great Emperor will come here to vent his anger at us... how are we going to stop him?”

A Late Combat Soul warrior said, extremely worried.

“In fact, we don’t have to worry about this, because someone will deal with the Old Great Emperor.”

Wu Jiu said with a smile on his face.

"Jiang Chen!"

Many people's eyes lit up as they once more thought of Jiang Chen; the young man who was capable of doing anything.

“That's right, brother Jiang! I'm sure everyone knows that after the war ended, he went straight into secluded cultivation, and I'm sure the result will be amazing! Furthermore, the reason he entered secluded cultivation is to find a way to deal with the Old Great Emperor.”

Wu Jiu explained with a faint smile visible on his face. If this was in the past, he would be as worried as the other people here, but now, he was basically free of worries, because Jiang Chen had created too many miracles. The confidence that unintentionally came from Jiang Chen could make all the people around him feel safe. Therefore, Wu Jiu believed that even if the Old Great Emperor was here, Jiang Chen would still have a way to deal with him.

This was Jiang Chen, an abnormal monster who decided how things ended.

“However, Jiang Chen is just a Mid Combat Soul warrior. Although being able to kill a First Grade Combat King with his current cultivation base is extremely frightening, in order for him to fight against a Second Grade Combat King warrior, one who is at the peak of the Second Grade Combat King realm... it will be very difficult.”

Someone said with a frown visible on his face.

“Haha, you don't have to worry about this. I can tell you honestly; there is nothing Jiang Chen has decided to do but failed to do it in the end. What kind of altitude he can reach after breaking through, no one has ever been able to predict. I believe that even when facing the Old Great Emperor, Jiang Chen still have ways to deal with him.”

Han Yan started laughing as he spoke. Anyone who was familiar with Jiang Chen had indescribable confidence in him.

“That’s right, brother Jiang Chen is a man of miracles. Furthermore, we don’t have to worry about this matter, as we can’t do anything about it. Now, with the death and surrender of those from the Martial Saint Dynasty, the only man remaining on their side is the Old Great Emperor himself. The upcoming battle between brother Jiang Chen and the Old Great Emperor, there is no way we can provide him any help, and we have no place to put our hands.”

Wu Lang who had been keeping quiet joined the conversation as well.

His words caused everyone to nod their heads in agreement. Wu Lang was correct, the upcoming battle had nothing to do with these people. The Old Great Emperor and his Second Grade Combat King cultivation, not only them, even Wu Jiu was unable to fight against him. Also, there were only a few Combat Soul warriors left in the Martial Saint Dynasty, meaning that all the people sitting in this hall had done their jobs. The fate of the Black Sect and the Martial Saint Dynasty, who the overall winner of this war would be; it all depended on the final battle between Jiang Chen and the Old Great Emperor.

Everyone realized that this was the most crucial battle, as it was the key to the future of the Eastern Continent. Although they couldn’t do anything, they could still pray inwardly, hoping the Jiang Chen could create another miracle and truly overthrow the Martial Saint Dynasty.

After all, the result of this final battle would not only decide the future of the Eastern Continent, it also concerned the safety of these people. It wasn’t difficult to imagine what would happen if Jiang Chen failed to defeat the Old Great Emperor and was instead killed by him. All the people here would be killed by a furious Old Great Emperor.

At the same time, Jiang Chen who had everyone’s hopes pinned onto him had reached a critical moment. The Dragon

Transformation skill's second transformation had brought him unimaginable benefits. Currently, he had a total of 14,000 Dragon Marks in his body, and as long as he could form another thousand Dragon Marks, he would be able to break through to the Late Combat Soul realm.

Judging from the current situation, there would be no problems with him forming another 1,000 Dragon Marks.

Buzz...

Late at night, a buzzing sound could suddenly be heard from the Black Sect's secret room. A golden light fully covered the surface of Jiang Chen, and his energy was like that of a barbarian beast awakening. Blood red dragon scales had emerged on his palm, and were blinking with light.

Crack.

A crystal clear cracking sound sounded from Jiang Chen's body. At this very moment, the Dragon Transformation skill had successfully transformed for the second time; completed its second evolution! A message that seemed to come from the ancient times suddenly flowed into Jiang Chen's mind like spring water, and soon merged with his consciousness, becoming one with it. A powerful True Dragon Skill had awoken!

"Azure Dragon's Five Steps."

Jiang Chen's eyes suddenly opened up, and an ancient dragon like power was emitted from his body.

Chapter 463 – Old Great Emperor

Currently, as the Dragon Transformation skill's second transformation had finally been completed, Jiang Chen had gained a huge leap in his cultivation base. Not only had he broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm, he now had a total of 16,000 Dragon Marks. According to the Dragon Transformation skill, as long as he could form another 4,000 Dragon Marks, he would be able to break through to the Combat King realm and start utilizing Spatial Power.

“With my current combat strength, killing a Second Grade Combat King warrior will be a cinch. Old Great Emperor, I will be waiting for you.”

A faint smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. After attaining his current cultivation base, he had no more fear; he was now invincible in the Eastern Continent. Even the Second Grade Combat King warrior hiding in the Martial Saint Dynasty was no match for him.

What made Jiang Chen so formidable was not only that. After the Dragon Transformation skill's second transformation, he had learned another powerful True Dragon Skill. As all True Dragon Skills were from the ancient era, and were all innate skills that could only be used by dragons, it was impossible for them to be used by anyone else in the Saint Origin realm, and that made them even more powerful and frightening.

During the Dragon Transformation skill's first transformation, the True Dragon Palm and True Dragon Flame had awakened. The True Dragon Palm had proved to be an incredibly mighty skill in all the previous battles. This time, the newly awakened Azure Dragon's Five Steps was even stronger skill.

“This Azure Dragon's Five Steps is indeed a supreme skill of the True Dragons. Each step carries a massive force, and every step is twice as strong as its previous step, giving it the ability to easily

shatter space. This incredible strength is truly beyond my imagination. Second Grade Combat King; I can't wait to meet you."

Jiang Chen's eyes were glowing, and his face was shining brightly. He couldn't wait to fight that Second Grade Combat King so that he could test his current combat strength. However, Jiang Chen was in no rush either, because he knew that the Old Great Emperor would definitely come to him, and it wouldn't take long before he arrived.

The Martial Saint Dynasty was on the brink of annihilation. All their hidden forces had been destroyed by Jiang Chen, and when the Old Great Emperor finally received the news, his anger would definitely soar through to the roof, then he would immediately rush over to the Black Sect to find Jiang Chen.

"The Dragon Transformation skill's second transformation has brought me many benefits, and my cultivation base has reached the Late Combat Soul realm. I'll just stay back here and continue strengthening my cultivation base. Once that Old Great Emperor arrives, I'll teach him a lesson."

Jiang Chen once again sat down with his legs crossed, then closed his eyes and began cultivating while waiting for the final battle. Once he settled that Old Great Emperor, the Eastern Continent would be in a stable state, and he would be the one with complete control over it.

After that, Jiang Chen would proceed to the Divine Continent. Or, put it this way, Jiang Chen would return to the Divine Continent. That place was the real gigantic world, and to return there was his first goal after reincarnating. Jiang Chen wanted to return to the pinnacle of the Divine Continent, and he wanted to visit the Saint Cliff once again, and also search for the other four broken pieces of the Heavenly Saint Sword. Therefore, Jiang Chen was eager to visit the Divine Continent.

.....

The entire Eastern Continent had sunk into a great turmoil. Even though it was late at night, the shock news were still spreading at an incredible speed. Everyone were baffled by the news, because they knew that the Eastern Continent's sky would completely change.

“Did you guys see what happened? That Jiang Chen is such a terrifying man! With his sword in hand, he simply swung it from left to right, immediately slicing off the Old Emperor and Imperial Emperor's heads! That is really frightening!”

“Hold on, you're talking as if you witnessed that scene yourself? But you're right, that Jiang Chen is a really frightening man! With just a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, he is able to kill Combat King warriors! Honestly speaking, I still don't quite believe it, but it is an actual fact...”

“The Eastern Continent's sky is going to change. The Martial Saint Dynasty is doomed, the Imperial Emperor and Old Emperor are both dead, and all their remaining Combat Soul warrior have surrendered to Jiang Chen. Soon, the entire Eastern Continent will belong to Jiang Chen!”

“That's not for sure. I heard that the Old Great Emperor is still in the Martial Saint Dynasty, and that he is many times stronger than the Old Emperor and Imperial Emperor. I'm guessing he'll strike very soon. So, no matter how formidable Jiang Chen is, I don't think he can defend himself from this man.”

“That's hard to tell. Jiang Chen gained his fame extremely quickly, and he has created countless miracles. By aggressively fighting the Martial Saint Dynasty this time, he has caused them an unprecedented loss. Perhaps he can still continue this and show us another miracle.”

.....

Discussions regarding this matter could be heard everywhere. Many people were rushing toward the Qi Province. They all knew that the Old Great Emperor and Jiang Chen would have their final battle there, and they wanted to witness it with their own eyes. They wanted to know if Jiang Chen could show them a final miracle, and change the Eastern Continent entirely.

Of course, such explosive news reached the Martial Saint Dynasty as well, striking panic into all the people who stayed there and the Imperial Capital. When an old eunuch heard the news, he was immediately scared out of his wits, then he rushed his way to the depths of the Martial Saint Dynasty.

The old eunuch actually had a pretty strong cultivation base, he was a peak Late Combat Soul warrior, and he was an old man who had served three generations of Imperial Emperors. Yesterday, when the Old Great Emperor and the Imperial Emperor led an army to launch an attack against the Black Sect, this old eunuch thought it would be an easy victory for them. He never expected to receive such terrible news in the end.

Within the depths of the Martial Saint Dynasty, there was a completely isolated place. The fluctuations of space in this area was very different from the outside world. Obviously, it was a space personally set up by a Combat King warrior. This place had been completely cut off from the outside world, and it was very difficult for ordinary people to come in.

Within the entire Martial Saint Dynasty, only a handful of people were qualified to enter this place, and this old eunuch was one of them.

Ripples appeared in the tranquil air as the old eunuch entered with a trembling body. He slowly arrived in front of an old man, then bowed deeply.

“Something terrible has happened! Old Great Emperor, a disaster is imminent.”

The old eunuch said with a hoarse voice, his forehead filled with cold sweat.

The old man slowly opened up his eyes. At the beginning, his eyes seemed cloudy, but in the following second, they turned extremely bright. The old man looked to be over a hundred years old; his body was skinny, and he was wearing a loose imperial robe.

Although the old man looked skinny and weak, just from the aura he casually unleashed from his body, no one would underestimate his ability. With a casual glance, he could make one's heart startled and shudder with terror, as if the glance dragged that person to hell.

"Old Nu, didn't I tell you before? I won't interfere with any matters that are related to the Imperial Dynasty. If you have anything to say, just go to the current Imperial Emperor."

The old man said. He hadn't talked to anyone for a very long time, so his voice was quite hoarse as well. However, it quickly returned to normal. This old man was none other than the Old Great Emperor, the strongest man of the Martial Saint Dynasty. He was a peak Second Grade Combat King warrior, and he was one foot into the Third Grade Combat King realm.

"Old Great Emperor, something terrible has happened! The Imperial Emperor and Old Great Emperor, they are both... dead!"

The old eunuch dared not hide anything.

"What did you just say?!"

Two ice-cold beams instantly shot out from the Old Great Emperor's eyes. The two beams behaved like sharp swords, and they instantly poked through the air, creating cracks.

"Tell me, what's all this about."

The Old Great Emperor's tone had clearly increased, and anyone could feel the anger that came together with his words. The Old

Emperor and Imperial Emperor had both died, was this a joke? The Martial Saint Dynasty had ruled the Eastern Continent for so many years, and this was something that had never happened before. Furthermore, they were both Combat King warriors, and there had never been anyone capable of killing them in the Eastern Continent before.

"Old Great Emperor, this is how it happened..."

The old eunuch dared not hide anything, so he started telling the Old Great Emperor about everything related to Jiang Chen and the Black Sect, from beginning to the end, and he also described yesterday's battle in great detail. Of course, he had learned all these details from someone else. However, the fact that Jiang Chen had killed both emperors was true, as well as the fact that all their Combat Soul warriors had either died or surrendered to Jiang Chen. An army of more than four hundred powerful men had left, and none of them had returned.

A violent energy wave burst out from the Old Great Emperor's body, causing the old eunuch to let out a miserable shrill as he was knocked a few dozen meters away. However, he dared not be impolite, so he immediately returned to the Old Great Emperor and kneeled down.

"You're saying that a young man whose name is Jiang Chen, with only a Mid Combat Soul cultivation base, killed the Imperial Emperor and the Old Emperor, who are both First Grade Combat Kings?"

The Old Great Emperor's eyes were burning with fury as he stared at the old eunuch in front of him.

"Yes, Old Great Emperor! This Jiang Chen is a peerless genius who can't be found even in ten thousand years! He confronted the Martial Saint Dynasty, and now, the entire dynasty has been destroyed by him, and my people have died because of him. At this current state, only the Old Great Emperor can subdue him."

The old eunuch said.

“Jiang Chen, Black Sect... good, very good! You have destroyed my imperial family; I will definitely smash you all into pieces and wreak havoc! I will also execute all those useless fools who chose to surrender!”

The Old Great Emperor was enraged. All his descendants had died, thus, no matter how good his temper was, there was no way he could restrain his fury.

Swoosh!

In the following moment, the Old Great Emperor simply disappeared from where he stood. The old eunuch wiped away the sweat on his forehead, then he slowly walked out from the isolated space.

The sky lit up, and most of the people in the Black Sect were still immersed in the excitement of yesterday's victory. Right at this moment, an extremely powerful aura suddenly appeared in the distance, and in a few breaths time, an old man wearing an imperial robe appeared in the sky above the Black Sect.

"Jiang Chen, get yourself out here right now!"

The Old Great Emperor furiously roared out. Then, he waved his palm and turned a tall mountain to dust.

“Not good, the Old Great Emperor is here!”

“Such a formidable aura, I think he's a Second Grade Combat King warrior! Just he alone is enough to kill everyone here!”

“Quickly, go get Jiang Chen! Only he is capable of dealing with the Old Great Emperor!”

.....

The Black Sect was instantly struck with panic. For them, the arrival of a Second Grade Combat King warrior foreboded a disaster; even Wu Jiu couldn't prove any help. In the entire Black

Sect, aside from Jiang Chen, no one were a match for the Old Great Emperor who was a Second Grade Combat King warrior.

Chapter 464 - The Pinnacle Fight

The energy of a Second Grade Combat King warrior was incredibly strong, even more so for a peak Second Grade Combat King. At this moment, the Old Great Emperor stood in the sky above the Black Sect, and the air was filled with his fury and killing intent. Looking at how he was behaving, it seemed that the Old Great Emperor was determined to slaughter every single person in the Black Sect today.

All the people of the Black Sect raised their heads and looked into the sky, but none of them dared go out to face the enemy. Beyond any doubts, if any of them went out at this moment, that old man would definitely rip that person apart in an instant. Throughout the entire Black Sect, only Jiang Chen was capable of dealing with the Old Great Emperor.

At the same time, in a place not far away from the Black Sect, many people had gathered. These people were here to witness the battle. When they saw that the Martial Saint Dynasty indeed had a Second Grade Combat King warrior, they were all struck with mixed emotions.

“This is really frightening! Is this the energy of a Combat King warrior?”

“He is the Old Great Emperor, and he has been in secluded cultivation for many years. With the crisis the Martial Saint Dynasty is now facing, and with the death of both the Imperial Emperor and Old Emperor, it is impossible for him to keep silent, and there is no way he can remain in seclusion.”

“Why haven’t we seen Jiang Chen? I wonder if Jiang Chen can really deal with the Old Great Emperor. If he can’t defeat the Old Great Emperor, perhaps the Black Sect will have to face annihilation, and the Eastern Continent will still be controlled by the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

“It’s hard to say. Let’s just keep watching, I’m sure Jiang Chen will show himself.”

.....

Those who were watching from afar started discussing the matter. Actually, it was the first time they had witnessed the mighty energy of a Combat King warrior. Thus, everyone were shocked by how formidable he was. Although Jiang Chen was truly amazing, when people looked at the Old Great Emperor, many people started worrying about Jiang Chen. After Jiang Chen’s fame spread across the Eastern Continent, he had constantly created miracles. Thus, these people were waiting to see if he could create another miracle. If they could witness the fall of a dynasty; a turning point in history, they would feel much honored.

While everyone were in the midst of talking about what was to come, an extremely powerful energy shot up from the depths of the Black Sect. The energy began swimming around in the sky like an Azure Dragon, and it was letting out deep dragon-like roars, giving it a majestic touch.

Soon after, a white-clothed figured appeared in the sky like a sudden clap of thunder and positioned himself opposite of the Old Great Emperor. This person was none other than Jiang Chen.

Yesterday, Jiang Chen had successfully broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm, and formed a total of 16,000 Dragon Marks. After that, he continued cultivating in order to stabilize his cultivation base. He never expected the Old Great Emperor to arrive so quickly. Thus, after he sensed the energy of a Second Grade Combat King warrior, he immediately emerged from his cultivation.

"Look, that's Jiang Chen."

“Amazing! After entering secluded cultivation for just a single day, his energy has become much stronger than yesterday! He really is a monster!”

“What a freak! He has broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm! I supposed Jiang Chen is now capable of facing a Second Grade Combat King warrior.”

.....

When the people of the Black Sect saw Jiang Chen, their faces were immediately covered with wild excitement. As all the people here were Combat Soul warriors, their knowledge and experience was quite good, so of course they could tell the difference between yesterday's Jiang Chen and today's Jiang Chen.

In the sky, Jiang Chen and the Old Great Emperor were staring at each other, causing fiery sparks to erupt from the point where their glares met.

“Old Great Emperor, you came faster than I had expected.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. Although he was facing a Second Grade Combat King warrior, no signs of nervousness could be seen on his face.

"So, you're Jiang Chen?"

The Old Great Emperor's words contained an ice-cold killing intent. He could feel the energy unleashed from Jiang Chen's body, amazing him. At the same time, he predicted Jiang Chen's identity correctly. Having energy that could match a Combat King warrior at the Combat Soul realm, under the heavens, perhaps only Jiang Chen who had killed the Old Emperor and Imperial Emperor had such energy.

"That's right."

Jiang Chen nodded his head. If this was yesterday, he'd be a bit cautious in front of the Old Great Emperor, but today, this Second Grade Combat King warrior could no longer make Jiang Chen take him seriously.

“You killed the Old Emperor and Imperial Emperor, as well as all the other emperors of the Martial Saint Dynasty! Who gave you the

audacity to do that?!”

The Old Great Emperor furiously roared out. When he thought of the gigantic losses this young man had brought to the Martial Saint Dynasty, he became enraged.

“You have to face the consequences of your actions. The Martial Saint Dynasty is destined to be destroyed by me, and that includes you. From today onwards, there will no longer be a Martial Saint Dynasty in the Eastern Continent.”

Jiang Chen replied with a loud voice, not taking the Old Great Emperor’s speech to heart.

“What a brave man, you simply have no idea what death really is! You think you can disregard everything just because you have amazing talent?! Today, I will teach you a lesson! No matter how strong you are, there is always someone stronger! I will let you taste how frightening a Second Grade Combat King warrior is! Not only will I kill you today, I will execute every single person in the Black Sect as well, and leave no stone unturned! The Eastern Continent still belongs to the Martial Saint Dynasty, and anyone who thinks otherwise will be sent to hell!”

The Old Great Emperor’s hair was fluttering about as he spoke, and two bright beams shot out from his eyes, portraying an incredibly imposing appearance.

“Haha, just save your breath. Let’s fight!”

Jiang Chen started laughing. His hands were covered with blood red dragon scales, and his palms had transformed into two extremely sharp dragon claws. With a casual movement, the dragon claws tore apart the space. He stretched his hand forward, causing a loud ‘boom’ to resound. A blood red dragon claw that was more than 30 meters long descended from the sky toward the Old Great Emperor.

"So strong!"

The Old Great Emperor's expression immediately changed, with this attack, he no longer dared to underestimate Jiang Chen. It was difficult for him to imagine how a young Late Combat Soul warrior could possess such incredible combat strength.

“Overturning Heaven Seal!”

The Old Great Emperor pushed his palms upward and unleashed a mountain-like golden seal. This seal that vaguely resembled a golden mountain carried a tremendous weight, and was forcefully tossed toward the True Dragon Palm by the Old Great Emperor.

Bang!

The space around the collision instantly shattered to pieces, causing cracks to appear and numerous black vortexes to leak out from the crack, forming into ferocious-looking tornados. This was the result of a battle between Combat King warriors, just the shockwaves alone could kill most Combat Soul warriors.

Tap, tap, tap...

The Old Great Emperor was forced back tens of steps before he could stabilize his body. On the other side, Jiang Chen only took a couple of steps back. From this first exchange, Jiang Chen came out on top.

"What?!"

The Old Great Emperor cried out in shock, and fiery sparks nearly erupted from his eyes. He couldn't believe what he had just seen! With his strength, as well as his dynasty's Overturning Heaven Seal, he had actually lost this first exchange against a young Combat Soul warrior! This was something that wouldn't even happen in his wildest dreams!

“Incredible! Jiang Chen is such a frightening man, he really can defeat a Second Grade Combat King warrior!”

“Heavens, what did I just see? Jiang Chen has really created another miracle! Looks like the Martial Saint Dynasty's luck has

come to an end! Indeed, everything is possible when it comes to Jiang Chen!”

“Amazing! In just a single day he has gained so much strength! However, that Old Great Emperor is not an easy target! Both of them were just probing each other’s strength, what happens next will be the real show!”

.....

The people of the Black Sect were incredibly excited, and their worry was completely gone. The first exchange of attacks between Jiang Chen and the Old Great Emperor had given them confidence.

"What a peerless genius."

Wu Jiu shook his head and said. When it came to Jiang Chen, he was truly speechless.

"This guy."

Wu Ningzhu’s eyes became brighter and brighter as she looked at Jiang Chen.

A smile emerged on Nangong Wentian, Han Yan, and the few other’s faces. They felt happy seeing how strong Jiang Chen had become. However, at the same time, they felt a tremendous pressure as well. Each of them could be considered a rare genius, and no matter if it was in terms of talent or cultivation base, they were all elites. Regardless of where they went, they would always get the respect they deserved. However, when compared to Jiang Chen, the gigantic gap immediately showed up.

“This is really unexpected, the strength of Jiang Chen has actually reached this stage. No wonder he could kill the Old Emperor and Imperial Emperor. Now, even the Old Great Emperor is no longer his match. Looks like the Martial Saint Dynasty’s luck has run out.”

“A peerless monster indeed. Even the Martial Saint Dynasty is just a stepping stone to him.”

“Don’t come to conclusions so quickly, it isn’t easy to kill a formidable Combat King warrior. Jiang Chen only won the first exchange, but he has yet to defeat the Old Great Emperor. As the Martial Saint Dynasty’s pinnacle warrior, I’m the Old Great Emperor will have more means than this.”

.....

The bystanders who were watching from afar had started discussing once more. Many people predicted that the Martial Saint Dynasty would fall today.

"Second Grade Combat King warrior, you're nothing more than this!"

Jiang Chen shouted. Once again, he dashed forward and launched the True Dragon Palm toward the Old Great Emperor. It was an incredibly powerful True Dragon Skill, and it was the perfect skill to take the initiative.

Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, and that alone made him destined to become someone really powerful. If he had just broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm with 15,000 Dragon Marks, his combat strength would only be equal to that of the Old Great Emperor. But now, as he had a total of 16,000 Dragon Marks, he was able to suppress the Old Great Emperor with his combat strength.

And this suppression was under the situation where he hadn’t even used the newly acquired skill, Azure Dragon’s Five Steps.

"Heavenly Imperial Finger!"

The Old Great Emperor was furious! With all his strength, he unleashed the Heavenly Imperial Finger, revealing a gigantic golden finger that ripped the space apart as if crashed down toward the blood red dragon claw.

Boom!

Another loud explosive sound resounded, causing both heaven

and earth to shake. The Heavenly Imperial Finger and True Dragon Palm clashed against each other, and once against shattered the space. The two extremely powerful attacks were destroyed at the same time. This time, since the Old Great Emperor had used all his strength, it was an equal match.

On the surface, both men were almost on par. However, the Old Great Emperor did not feel happy about this. Jiang Chen's strength made him realize that it would be extremely difficult for him to kill Jiang Chen.

The Old Great Emperor had estimated that he would be able to handle Jiang Chen and the entire Black Sect in a matter of minutes. However, judging from the current situation, that would be really difficult.

Chapter 465 - Killed In Three Steps

Boom!

Both heaven and earth started trembling as the sky shattered into pieces. Jiang Chen and the Old Great Emperor turned into two trails of light and established a violent battlefield high up in the sky. It was a difficult battle for both sides, and the two men were both moving around at an incredible speed. All the bystanders could see was their afterimages.

The intense battle between two Second Grade Combat King warriors; it was an extremely violent scene! Each collision brought the sky down and made the earth sink, and the entire area was a complete mess. Under the panic-stricken glances of these bystanders, Jiang Chen and the Old Great Emperor had fought for more than ten minutes, and countless attacks had been exchanged between them. However, a winner had yet to be determined.

Just as what most people had expected, as the strongest existence of the Martial Saint Dynasty, the Old Great Emperor had a bag full of incredible skills. The Old Great Emperor fought in a mighty manner, but even so, he was still suppressed by Jiang Chen. The Old Great Emperor did indeed have a lot of powerful skills, but on the other side, Jiang Chen was not weaker.

“This is too intense! Putting aside who’ll end up winning, being able to witness this high-level battle has already brought me a lot of benefits!”

“That’s right! Just being able to personally witness this battle between two Combat King warriors is indeed a rare opportunity! Just experiencing this atmosphere alone has brought me a lot of benefits!”

“Jiang Chen has been suppressing the Old Great Emperor, so perhaps he is going to kill him today. Jiang Chen isn’t a person who is easy to deal with, I’m guessing he has some even more

powerful skills in store! This time, the Martial Saint Dynasty is truly on the brink of destruction!”

.....

Everyone were astounded by what they were witnessing. For all cultivators, having the opportunity to witness this kind of battle was incredibly beneficial. In the Eastern Continent, it was incredibly difficult to witness the battle between two Combat King warriors, even more difficult than climbing the heavens.

In the sky above, the more the Old Great Emperor fought, the more scared he became. He had used all his skills and hidden tricks in this intense battle, but he still didn't have the advantage. If the situation went on like this, perhaps he would have no chance of winning.

However, he still had to kill him even if it didn't seem possible. The Old Great Emperor had nowhere to turn now, and since pretty much all of his descendants had been killed, the Martial Saint Dynasty would be annihilated as well. At that point of time, he would be the only survivor. Could he still stay alive at that point of time and live the life of a refugee?

One way or another, he had to get revenge. This was a huge debt of blood, therefore, even if it would be at the cost of his life, he still wanted to kill this youngster in front of him.

The Old Great Emperor unleashed his energy once again, and it was even more powerful than before. At the same time, a dazzling saber appeared in his hand. It was a King Weapon, an ordinary King Weapon. The Old Great Emperor was after all just a Second Grade Combat King warrior, and with his cultivation base, he was already an ancestor-level existence in the Eastern Continent. However, if he went to the Divine Continent, he would be nothing. If King Weapons were classified into lower, middle and upper stages, the King Weapon of a Second Grade Combat King would only be a lower stage King Weapon.

Right at this moment, the Old Great Emperor suddenly began emitting a frenzied energy.

“Is he going to fight desperately?”

Noticing this, an ice-cold smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. Two beams shot out from his eyes, and a killing intent began leaking from his body. He could tell that the Old Great Emperor was going to put up a desperate fight, but Jiang Chen didn’t care.

"Jiang Chen, draw your weapon!"

The Old Great Emperor said.

“I need no weapon to defeat you.”

Jiang Chen confidently responded. He wanted to test out the power of the Azure Dragon’s Five Steps.

“You’re being overconfident! If that’s what you want, then face your death!”

The Old Great Emperor stomped his feet, causing spatial cracks to appear in the air. Right after that, he shot forward like an arrow leaving its bow while raising his saber high up into the air. He had injected all his Yuan energy into the saber, and he had even started burning his natal blood essence.

This was a fighting style that would sacrifice one’s own life. As the Old Great Emperor was determined to kill Jiang Chen, he didn’t care what price he would have to pay. No doubt, when a Second Grade Combat King warrior became desperate, it would be incredibly frightening.

"Azure Dragon’s Five Steps!"

Jiang Chen roared out. His voice was loud like a sudden clap of thunder, and even the heavens shook from its sound. Many people felt a constant buzzing sound in their ears.

Under the appalled gazes of everyone, Jiang Chen took a mysterious step forward. The step was so mystical that no one

could clearly see its pattern. When Jiang Chen's body moved, his feet arrive right on the Old Great Emperor's saber.

Roar~

Underneath Jiang Chen's feet, there was a figure of a dragon that was blinking in the air. The dragon issued a roar that caused the hearts of all present to tremble.

Bam!

Jiang Chen had stepped onto the Old Great Emperor's saber; he was using his body to face a King Weapon. A method like this, perhaps only Jiang Chen alone had the courage to do it.

No one knew how much force Jiang Chen's step actually contained, and when it clashed with the King Weapon, it was actually on par with the weapon's force. The collision immediately caused a frightening shockwave to spread across the entire sky like a raging tsunami.

"Second step!"

With powerful momentum on his side, after taking his first step, Jiang Chen immediately took a second step, and the force that came with his step had actually doubled, as compared to the first step. Pressured by this tremendous force, the Old Great Emperor could barely hold onto the saber in his hand.

The Old Great Emperor cried out in shock. The combat skill used by Jiang Chen was extremely terrifying, as each step came with a massive force that went beyond his imagination. The first step was already enough to equal his King Weapon, and when he took the second step, even his King Weapon could no longer fight against it.

"Haha!"

Jiang Chen started laughing as he once again exerted force from his feet, impacting the combat weapon tremendously. The Old Great Emperor could no longer hold onto the saber in his hand, and it was finally knocked away.

"Give it to me!"

Jiang Chen stretched out his arm and grabbed the saber, taking it into his possession with no feelings of guilt.

"Old Great Emperor, you've lost your combat weapon. How are you going to fight me?"

Jiang Chen's mighty power caused the sky to tremble. The illusionary dragon underneath his feet was still blinking, and it looked like he could take a third step at any time. He had no idea how strong the Azure Dragon's Five Steps was, and he could only find out by using it. With Jiang Chen's current ability, he could at most take three steps. However, this skill had given him a tremendous confidence. With this third step, it looked like he would be able to kill the Old Great Emperor.

"Heavens, what did I just see? Jiang Chen's attack is too incredible, even a King Weapon is no match for it!"

"Such an overbearing skill! It even has the figure of a dragon blinking underneath his feet, giving him such formidable power! So this was Jiang Chen's hidden trick. The Old Great Emperor is suffering greatly right now, I'm afraid he won't meet a good ending today."

"That skill is indeed frightening. If Jiang Chen takes a third step, I'm certain the Old Great Emperor will have no way of defending himself against it. The Martial Saint Dynasty is truly doomed now; Jiang Chen has fully grown up, and he is now invincible in the Eastern Continent!"

.....

Everyone were shocked by what they had just witnessed. After the Old Great Emperor took out his King Weapon, they thought that Jiang Chen would draw out his weapon as well, and both men would have another fierce round of battle. But unexpectedly, Jiang

Chen had unleashed an extremely powerful combat skill instead. It was so strong that even the Old Great Emperor's King Weapon was no match for it.

It wasn't difficult to tell that the Old Great Emperor had used up all his available tricks. Also, fighting desperately just now had brought him a negative impact, and combined with the injuries inflicted onto him by Jiang Chen as well as losing his King Weapon, as well as the fact that Jiang Chen had an incredibly powerful skill, faced with this situation, there was no way the Old Great Emperor could be a match for Jiang Chen any longer.

"Impossible! You're just a Late Combat Soul warrior, how could you be this strong?!"

The Old Great Emperor just couldn't accept this reality.

"There is nothing impossible in this world. You think this is impossible because of your ignorance. I have said this before; I will overthrow the Martial Saint Dynasty. After I've killed you today, the Martial Saint Dynasty will come to a complete end. Come, let me see how you're going to deal with my third step."

Jiang Chen was portraying a mighty image as his black hair violently fluttered in the wind. A dazzling golden light was emitting from his body, causing him to look like a God of War. He raised his foot and finally took the third step.

Boom!

This single step nearly poked a hole in the skies. With incredible speed, Jiang Chen arrived above the Old Great Emperor's head, causing him to turn pale with fright. This skill used by Jiang Chen was incredibly terrifying, and each step was stronger than the previous one. This third step was twice as strong as the second step, and there was no way the Old Great Emperor could defend himself against it. If this step really reached his head, the consequences would be devastating. Perhaps his head would simply just explode.

"Damn it!"

The Old Great Emperor cursed. At this final moment, he forcefully tore a crack in the air, then he shot into the inner dimension of that spatial crack. Jiang Chen was too strong, and he just couldn't defend against him. It looked like all he could do now was run away for his life.

"Hmph! I will kill you today, there is no way for you to run away!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. To prevent the Old Great Emperor from escaping, he had long ago began circulating the Great Soul Derivation skill. He had to kill the Old Great Emperor today. If not, the disaster a Second Grade Combat King could bring would be unimaginable.

After the Old Great Emperor escaped, he would definitely go hide somewhere. Then, the ones from the Black Sect, as well as Jiang Chen's closest friends would have to constantly worry about the threat of a Second Grade Combat King warrior, and it was an invisible threat. If that really happened, there would be no peace in the Black Sect.

According to Jiang Chen's plan, after settling the Martial Saint Dynasty, he would go to the Divine Continent. However, if the Old Great Emperor was still alive, he would have no courage to leave this place, because if he did, the Old Great Emperor might immediately strike, and kill everyone who were related to him.

Therefore, Jiang Chen would definitely not let the Old Great Emperor escape.

"Come out now!"

His eyes blazing like torches, Jiang Chen stepped onto a specific area. In an instant, a sad and miserable scream was from the other dimension, and the Old Great Emperor was kicked out of there by Jiang Chen's foot.

At this very moment, the Old Great Emperor could be seen floating unsteadily. One of his arms had been shattered by Jiang Chen, and blood was constantly pouring out from his wound.

"True Dragon Palm!"

Without giving the Old Great Emperor any chances, Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and unleashed a huge dragon claw, instantly trapping the Old Great Emperor within. At this moment, the Old Great Emperor was like an arrow at the end of its flight, and he had lost all ability to fight.

"I have nothing to say to you. So, you can go to hell and reunite with your descendants."

An enormous force suddenly emerged from the True Dragon Palm as it squeezed down on the Old Great Emperor, crushing him.

"Nooo...!"

This was the Old Great Emperor's last scream.

Chapter 466 - New Emperor?

Accompanied by a heartrending cry came the fact that the once strongest man of the Eastern Continent had fallen. From now on, the Martial Saint Dynasty was history, and the Eastern Continent would welcome a new set of rulers. The scene caused everyone to shudder with terror, because after the huge and frightening dragon claw had disappeared, all they could see was a huge cloud of blood mist; nothing else.

A Second Grade Combat King; the Old Great Emperor, the man who once deserved the name of strongest man in the Eastern Continent had just been killed by Jiang Chen. He had died in a miserable manner, and disappeared like vapor.

Silence weighed down upon the entire scene, not even a single cry was heard. Everyone were dumbfounded by the shocking scene. It was an image that none of them would even see in their wildest dreams. At this moment, the image of that white-clothed youngster had become incredibly enormous.

Especially for the people of the Martial Saint Dynasty who had yesterday surrendered to Jiang Chen. All of them felt extremely lucky, because the Martial Saint Dynasty was completely finished. It looked like they had all made a wise decision when they surrendered.

The battle had come to an end, and Jiang Chen remained floating in the air. His black hair was dancing in the wind, and a faint smile was apparent on his face. Everyone could sense a strong aura coming from Jiang Chen; the aura of a true king! It caused all those

who stared at him to feel respect, but also a bit of fear.

This was something innate; this was a peerless monster who had the destiny to walk an extraordinary path. It also meant that no matter where Jiang Chen went, he would bring great chaos.

“Sigh... Jiang Chen eventually won, and he has created yet another miracle. From now on, everything in the Eastern Continent is going to change.”

“Even the Old Great Emperor is dead; the Martial Saint Dynasty no longer exists. Throughout Jiang Chen’s journey, he has offended countless powers and people. Back then, Jiang Chen killed many people in Inferno Hell, and nearly offended every single power in the Eastern Continent. Countless mighty warriors were trying to hunt him down, but luckily, those powers were rather rational, and stopped their pursuit. If they hadn’t, they would have to face the same fate as the Martial Saint Dynasty.”

“Those powers who offended Jiang Chen have to come out and show appreciation so that Jiang Chen might forgive them. If he’s still angry at them, none of those powers have the ability to defend themselves against him. Of course, with Jiang Chen’s current status, he most likely won’t lower himself to assault those small powers.”

“From today onwards, Jiang Chen’s name will eternally be recorded in the history of the Eastern Continent. This day marks the birth of a God of War!”

.....

Everyone were shocked, but at the same time, they started discussing the recent scene amongst each other. Today's battle would eternally be in the Eastern Continent's history, and Jiang Chen's name would stand at the pinnacle of this generation.

Like a raging storm, the result of this battle spread across the entire Eastern Continent. Every single person who heard the news were struck dumb, because from now on, the Martial Saint Dynasty would be no more, and it would instead be replaced by another major power that would be led by Jiang Chen.

Those superpowers who had some grudges with Jiang Chen in the past were secretly rejoicing. Jiang Chen's existence had taught everyone a lesson; there were some people who could never be offended, because once you offended them, you would have to pay a devastating price.

After the battle, Jiang Chen didn't go to occupy the Martial Saint Dynasty like everyone had expected, and he didn't even do anything to the Shangguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect. In Jiang Chen's mind, it didn't matter if it was the Martial Saint Dynasty, Shangguan Clan or the Myriad Sword Sect; all the resentments between them had come to an end. The ones who were lucky enough to survive could not fight with him, so Jiang Chen didn't bother wasting his time and energy on these survivors.

Within the Black Sect's main meeting hall, dozens of Combat Soul warriors sat together. Jiang Chen fully deserved the honor, and sat on the foremost seat; still wearing his white clothes. With a

smile on their faces, Jiang Zhenhai and Wu Jiu sat on each side of Jiang Chen. Also, specially invited by Jiang Chen, Yan Zhanyun was also sitting on the same level as Jiang Zhenhai and Wu Jiu, causing his entire body to tremble with excitement. Not once in his wildest dreams had seen a day where he could participate in this kind of meeting. Not only that, he was given such a huge position! Thus, feeling honored could no longer be used to describe what Yan Zhanyun was feeling right now.

“Brother, although the situation in the Eastern Continent has settled down, we need to reorganize everything. Do you have any ideas?”

Wu Jiu asked, a smile visible on his face. The Martial Saint Dynasty was no more, and although the situation in the Eastern Continent was clear, the transition would require a period of time, and they would need a person to stand out. Of course, aside from Jiang Chen, no one else were qualified for this position.

"I wonder, does any of you have any suggestions?"

Jiang Chen asked with a smile on his face.

“Do we really need to discuss this? The Martial Saint Dynasty has fallen; we need to establish a new dynasty!”

Nangong Wentian said.

“What brother Nangong said is correct. The Martial Saint

Dynasty is now gone, so we naturally need to establish a new dynasty. Brother Jiang Chen is the founder of this new dynasty, and the man who sits at the helm. With brother Jiang Chen's strength and status, you're undeniably the strongest man in the Eastern Continent, so no one would object to the idea of you becoming the new Emperor."

It was Golden Lion who said this. Everyone nodded their heads in agreement upon hearing his words. If they had to establish a new order, Jiang Chen would be the main candidate, and no one was against this.

"Brother Jiang Chen, since everyone has the same idea, why don't we just establish a new dynasty, and you'll be the new Emperor. All of us will be under your command. All we need to do now is think of a new name for this new dynasty."

Master Blissful joined the conversation. At the same time, the people in the meeting hall began discussing amongst themselves. However, all of them had the same thought; they wanted Jiang Chen to be the new Emperor!

Only Big Yellow, Han Yan, Yan Chenyu and a few others didn't express their thoughts. This was because they all knew what Jiang Chen's ambitions were. Becoming the Emperor of the Eastern Continent was not something Jiang Chen cared about, and he had never intended to become the new Emperor. Now that everything in the Eastern Continent had been settled, and Jiang Chen had also become the strongest man in the continent, it was meaningless for him to stay here. His next step would definitely be to proceed to the Divine Continent. That place was the heart of the entire Saint

Origin realm; a place that was considered the true world of cultivation. For an outstanding man like Jiang Chen, there was no way he could hide in this small Eastern Continent and be the Emperor.

"Do you know about the Divine Continent?"

Jiang Chen asked.

His words startled everyone, and they began showing longing expressions afterwards. They had all clearly heard about the Divine Continent. Being able to cultivate to their current level, they more or less had some knowledge about the Saint Origin realm. They knew that the entire Saint Origin realm was divided into five continents. The Northern, Southern, Eastern, and Western on each side, and the Divine Continent in the center.

They all knew that in the entire Saint Origin realm, the Divine Continent was the land with the richest Yuan energy; it was the heart of the Saint Origin realm, a remarkable place propitious to giving birth to great men. People of talent existed in large numbers, and mighty warriors emerged in endless streams. With their Combat Soul cultivation bases, they were considered men at the pinnacle of the Eastern Continent, but in the Divine Continent, they were just some small fry.

Also, because it took a ridiculously long time to travel from the Eastern Continent to the Divine Continent, none of them had really thought about traveling to the Divine Continent, and they had never thought about one day visiting that place. However, none of these people were idiots. Since Jiang Chen had mentioned

the Divine Continent, it was clear to them what he meant.

But after giving it a second thought, it seemed perfectly normal. With Jiang Chen's talent, he had become the strongest man of the Eastern Continent at such a young age, so it was meaningless for him to keep stay in this place. Hence, no one were surprised about his decision to travel to the Divine Continent.

“With Brother Jiang Chen's talent and strength, traveling to the legendary Divine Continent is only normal. However, he still need to establish a new order here; we need a new dynasty. Since Brother Jiang Chen has decided to leave, I suggest we choose someone else to be our new emperor. Sir Jiang – Jiang Chen's father! It's Brother Jiang Chen who took down the upper echelons of the Martial Saint Dynasty, and the only reason we're talking about establishing a new dynasty is him. Thus, the new dynasty should be ruled by the Jiang family. Sit Jiang is Jiang Chen's father, so he's obviously qualified to be the new Emperor. Although Sir Jiang's cultivation base isn't great at this moment, I'm sure it won't take long for him to reach new heights with our current resources.”

Master Blissful said.

“I agree with his words. Sir Jiang is indeed our best candidate. Besides, with the support from everyone here, Brother Jiang Chen can leave with a peace of mind. In the future, this land will belong to the Jiang family, and no one will ever question it.”

Old Man Ling Shan said. He too agreed with the suggestion brought forth by Master Blissful.

“Excellent, this is a good idea; I agree with it as well. It’s Jiang Chen who brought all this, thus, only those from the Jiang family are qualified to become the new Emperor. We have no rejections regarding this.”

“That’s just as it should be. Putting aside everything, just raising a genius like Brother Jiang Chen, Sir Jiang should be able to claim a lot of credit. Thus, he is the most qualified man to become the new Emperor.”

.....

Everyone were talking at the same time, all attention now shifted onto Jiang Zhenhai. It was certain that Jiang Chen would travel to the Divine Continent soon, because if they were Jiang Chen, they too would go to a better place to cultivate. After reaching his current stage, it would be really difficult for him to progress further in the Eastern Continent.

Also, since the state of power had been seized by the Jiang family, having Jiang Zhenhai be the new emperor was also an appropriate measure. In fact, by suggestion this, it was obvious that their real motive was to please Jiang Chen. Everyone knew about the relationship between Jiang Chen and Jiang Zhenhai. Although Jiang Zhenhai was only a Divine Core warrior, he was the person Jiang Chen respected the most. Thus, who would dare neglect him?

At this very moment, Jiang Zhenhai could hardly remain sitting.

He could feel countless stars spiraling above his head, and he was struck by a storm of happiness. He wasn't prepared for this at all.

This was too sudden!

He was going to be an Emperor, the Emperor of the entire Eastern Continent? Damn it, wasn't this a joke?

Dreaming? No! This was a scene that Jiang Zhenhai had never even dared dream about. Putting aside the fact of whether or not he would become the new Emperor, just the scene he was now facing gave him a strong sense of satisfaction.

"Haha, brother Jiang, congratulations!"

Yan Zhanyun forcefully slapped Jiang Zhenhai's shoulder, a huge smile blooming onto his face.

Meanwhile, Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He looked at his father and said with a soft voice, "Dad, you have to be the new Emperor."

Chapter 467 – Marry Me!

Everyone turned their glances toward Jiang Zhenhai. Obviously, it would take a word from him in order to become the new Emperor. As long as he nodded his head, Jiang Chen would immediately establish an empire for him; a dynasty that belongs to the Jiang family!

Jiang Zhenhai's face became solemn. He had never dreamt about a day like this. A dynasty that ruled the entire Eastern Continent was going to be built, and it only required single word from him in order for him to become the Emperor of this new moment. Not once his life had Jiang Zhenhai felt as if his words carried so much weight.

While everyone were wondering about what Jiang Zhenhai's decision would be, he actually remained in deep silence. Since he had yet to speak, none of the people in the meeting hall spoke either. Jiang Zhenhai was immersed in deep thought.

Becoming an emperor; a man who ruled millions of people and brought glory to the ancestors of the Jiang family, this was an absolute honor, and no one could withstand such an enormous temptation. It was the power and status that he had never even dreamt about. But now, everything was place in front of him. As long as he agreed, the entire continent would belong to him.

Every man dreamt about being a king; every many wanted power, and Jiang Zhenhai was no exception! However, with all of these people placed in front of him, he hesitated.

After some thought, Jiang Zhenhai slowly raised his head. He shook his head and said, "I think I'm going to disappoint everyone; I don't want to be the new Emperor."

Jiang Zhenhai finally relaxed after he finished speaking. He also noticed that his son, Jiang Chen seemed to let out a sigh of relief as well.

No doubt, absolute power was something really tempting. However, Jiang Zhenhai had his own pride, and his son was his ultimate pride. Having a son like this had already brought glory to his ancestors, and he didn't need the Emperor title. He knew that Jiang Chen also didn't want him to be the Emperor. Sooner or later, Jiang Chen would leave this place and go somewhere far away. There was a saying that a tall tree caught the wind; a person with a high position was liable to attacks. Jiang Chen didn't want to put the Jiang family in such a high position. In his mind, the safety of Jiang Zhenhai was the number one priority. As long as the Jiang family's safety was ensured, only then could Jiang Chen leave with a peace of mind.

Therefore, Jiang Chen wanted the Jiang family to maintain a low profile. It wasn't necessary for Jiang Zhenhai to be an Emperor, and he could still be a man who was respected by the Emperor himself. And that, would be something even better. In any way, Jiang Chen still hoped that Jiang Zhenhai could focus on his cultivation. He knew how profound the path of cultivation was, and Jiang Zhenhai was far from reaching a profound stage. Jiang Chen hoped that his father could one day visit the Divine Continent as well, and he wished that his father would follow him and venture into the supreme Realm of Immortals. Of course, this was still very far away.

Jiang Zhenhai was the man Jiang Chen respected the most; he was Jiang Chen's father, and whatever his father wanted; Jiang Chen would give. Taking today's situation as an example, as long as Jiang Zhenhai said he wanted to be the Emperor, Jiang Chen would immediately establish a new empire. Even if that wasn't something he wished to do, if his father wanted it, he would just do it.

At the end, Jiang Chen felt at ease, because Jiang Zhenhai could understand his intentions, and thus rejected this enormous temptation.

“Sir rejecting this is really a pity.”

“In my opinion, I think Sir Jiang is the most suited candidate for this. With that, the situation in the Eastern Continent would quickly calm down.”

“I think Sir Jiang worries that his strength isn’t enough to convince everyone. However, with Brother Jiang Chen’s support, who would dare object? We’d be the first to obey, and we will support Sir Jiang wholeheartedly.”

.....

Master Blissful, Old Man Lingshan and a few others began persuading.

“That’s enough. Since my dad doesn’t have the intentions of becoming the new Emperor, let’s not force him. We, the Jiang family came from the Fragrant Sky City, which is just a small place. We don’t have many wild ambitions. Besides, even if my father isn’t the Emperor, who would dare treat him badly? Even the Emperor would have to show respect when facing him.”

Jiang Chen waved his hand, signaling for everyone to stop the discussion.

Many people showed disappointed expressions on their faces. Jiang Chen was leaving, and Jiang Zhenhai didn’t want to be the new Emperor. No matter what, they still needed someone to be their leader.

"If that is the case, how are we going to handle this situation?"

Someone asked.

“That’s easy. It isn’t necessary for the Martial Saint Dynasty to be completely destroyed. In my opinion, the Martial Saint Dynasty is still the same Martial Saint Dynasty, but from today onwards, the name will be changed to the Martial Dynasty. This land has always belonged to the Wu family, so I think it’d be best to let the Wu family manage it. Brother Jiu, you ought to be the new

emperor.”

Jiang Chen turned to Wu Jiu who sat next to him.

Wu Jiu was instantly startled by Jiang Chen’s words, then shock emerged onto his face.

"Brother, this..."

Wu Jiu never thought Jiang Chen would give the position to him, because pretty much everything had been done by Jiang Chen alone.

“All this time, I’ve only focused on those people who tried to hurt me, rather than a power as a whole. If not, I wouldn’t have allowed those warriors of the Martial Saint Dynasty to surrender. The old blood of the Martial Saint Dynasty is gone, thus, rather than establishing a brand new dynasty, why don’t we just let the Martial Saint Dynasty go on, but also change its name to the Martial Dynasty? With this, the land will still belong to the Wu family. In fact, Brother Jiu, you were supposed to become the Imperial Emperor. So, today, let your brother make this happen for you. If you don’t want to be the Emperor, you can just be father of the reigning Emperor, and let Wu Lang be the Emperor.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. In fact, this was something he had planned in advance. As long as the Eastern Continent was stable, it was unnecessary to establish a brand new dynasty. Furthermore, after he left, Wu Jiu would be the strongest man in the Eastern Continent, and as a matter of course, he would be the new Emperor, and no one would disobey his command.

"Brother..."

Wu Jiu wanted to say something, but Jiang Chen waved his hand and stopped him.

“What does everyone think about this? With Brother Jiu’s status and strength, I’m sure he fully deserves this position.”

Jiang Chen turned to the others and asked.

The people looked at each other before nodding their heads in agreement. Since Jiang Chen had made up his mind, none of them had any objections. Besides, it was a fact that Wu Jiu had a formidable cultivation base, and if the Martial Saint Dynasty wasn't replaced by a new dynasty, Wu Jiu would of course be the most suited candidate for the throne.

"That's true. Since the Martial Saint Dynasty isn't going to be replaced, Lord Jiu is worthy enough to be the new Emperor. He is part of the Wu family, and he possesses an incredible cultivation base; a Combat King! I'll be the first to agree with this matter!"

"I agreed as well!"

.....

Everyone nodded their heads and spoke in agreement. In fact, as long as it was Jiang Chen's decision, there would be no room for them to object. Furthermore, Wu Jiu was indeed a strong man, and he was more than enough to convince the public.

"Since no one has any objections, the final decision is made. Brother Jiu, Wu Lang, you two should bring those who originally belonged to the Martial Saint Dynasty over there and reform everything. I hope that the future Martial Dynasty won't follow the same path as the Martial Saint Dynasty."

Jiang Chen said to Wu Jiu and Wu Lang.

Wu Jiu was struck with mixed emotions, but he didn't say anything. No matter what, the Martial Saint Dynasty belonged to the Wu family, and if it was allowed to survive, he would naturally be happy. He also understood what Jiang Chen was thinking. Although he had no interest in being the new Emperor, he would still do as Jiang Chen wished, as Jiang Chen only wished for the Eastern Continent to maintain peace after he left. Thus, Wu Jiu was the only person who could carry this responsibility.

Since Jiang Chen had given him a dynasty, he would pay him

back with a peaceful Eastern Continent.

"Alright, I won't decline."

Wu Jiu bashfully cupped his fist toward Jiang Chen, then he brought Wu Lang and left the meeting hall.

After settling everything in the meeting hall, Jiang Chen returned to his own courtyard. All of his brothers were with him, and they were having a huge celebration. Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, Big Yellow, Yu Zihan, Guan Yiyun, Tian Yishan, and a few others were there. All of them were laughing and drinking, this was joyful day that deserved a great celebration. They still felt as if they were dreaming, as everything had happened so quickly. They never thought they could accomplish something so huge. Ever since they began following Jiang Chen, their lives had been filled with vigor and vitality.

Yan Chenyu wasn't around, as she was with her father. She knew that Jiang Chen would soon proceed to the Divine Continent, and she wanted to be with him. Thus, she wanted to cherish every moment she had with her father, as she had no idea when they would be able to return from the Divine Continent after they left.

Outside of the courtyard, Wu Ningzhu stood by herself as she looked up towards the dark sky.

"Little Chen, look..."

Nangong Wentian hinted Jiang Chen with his eyes, telling him to take a look at Wu Ningzhu.

"Little Chen, you really have a lot of luck when it comes to attracting beautiful girls. With just a single trip to the Southern Continent, you actually won the heart of their Holy Maiden."

Han Yan let out a mischievous laughter. Nangong Wentian had obviously told Han Yan and the others about what happened in the Southern Continent, and naturally, Wu Ningzhu was included in his story.

"Get lost!"

Jiang Chen glared at Han Yan for a moment. He slowly stood up and walked out from the courtyard, but was stopped by Wu Ningzhu.

"Miss Wu, you've come a long way from the Southern Continent and helped me, I really appreciate your help."

Jiang Chen said.

"If you really appreciate my help, marry me."

Wu Ningzhu turned to Jiang Chen and showed him a charming smile as she glanced at him with her coquettish eyes. Her flirtatious expression couldn't even be hidden by the dark curtains of the night.

Ugh...

Jiang Chen was dumbfounded. This girl was really amazing, she actually wanted him to marry her. Damn it, he was a man!

"What? You have no idea how many geniuses and handsome guys there are who wants to get in touch with me in the Southern Continent. I just asked you to marry me, and you're so reluctant..."

Wu Ningzhu teased.

Cough, cough...

Jiang Chen let out a few faint coughs. Although he had experienced all kinds of big and small events in his life, he simply lacked experience when it came to situations like these.

"Hehe, I never knew that you, Jiang Chen, the God of War could feel shy."

Wu Ningzhu chuckled, completely revealing her seductive and charming side.

"Do you know why I always wore a veil?"

Wu Ningzhu's voice suddenly became solemn.

"Why?"

Jiang Chen asked. This was also something that he wanted to know. Wu Ningzhu's appearance was equal to that of Yan Chenyu. In fact, it was so great that it could cause both cities and kingdoms to fall. With such good looks, no matter where she went, she would definitely become the center of focus. This was one of the things that made a girl proud. However, Wu Ningzhu had actually hidden her own pride. This didn't fit the nature of a girl.

Chapter 468 - Wu Ningzhu's Secret

Jiang Chen didn't interrupt, he just quietly stared at Wu Ningzhu. From her eyes, Jiang Chen could tell that she was girl with a story.

Wu Ningzhu let out a long sigh, then she raised her head and looked at the bright moon. She took a step forward and continued speaking with a voice so soft that it could only be heard by herself, "A beautiful appearance is a girl's biggest pride. However, I have been hiding it all this time."

A wry smile emerged on Wu Ningzhu's lips. After that, she seemed like she was immersed in deep thought, as if she had just recalled an unforgettable past. Her eyes seemed blurred, and she looked absolutely beautiful underneath the gentle moonlight. Her beautiful face seemed to be hiding a trace of pain. At this moment, Jiang Chen felt a pain in his heart. This was the second time he had experienced such a feeling for a girl. The first time, it was Yan Chenyu. He knew that Wu Ningzhu had a complicated story she wanted to speak about.

Wu Ningzhu didn't say anything for a long time, and Jiang Chen remained standing next to her, not speaking either. He knew that Wu Ningzhu was hesitating; wondering if she should tell Jiang Chen about her secret. Everyone had their own secret, and some secrets could only be hidden in one's heart, without allowing anyone to peek at it. Jiang Chen too had his own secret; that he was once the greatest Saint underneath the heavens, that was his biggest secret, and only he himself could ever know this secret.

"That year, I was only ten years old."

Wu Ningzhu began to talk. A ten year old child already had a good memory. It wasn't difficult to imagine that when she was ten years old, her appearance must already have started to shine, as she was a perfect beauty.

“My mother’s name is Gu Lan. She and my dad were deeply in love with each other, and they were the role models of many. However, one day, a man who claimed to be my mother’s elder brother, my uncle, suddenly arrived from afar. His arrival changed everything. When that man saw my father and me, he became extremely angry, and started yelling that he wanted to kill me and my dad. However, using her own life as a ransom, she saved me and my dad, and was thus brought away by that heartless man to a place far away. After that, my father told me that he had for a long time known of my mother’s identity, as she came from an ancient clan located in a place far away from where we lived. It’s a clan with powers beyond anyone’s imagination. I can still remember, the man who came and brought my mother away is a very strong man, and it wasn’t until I progressed further on the path of cultivation that I started to realize just how strong that man really was. In fact, he could easily destroy the entire Southern Continent with a single hand.”

Wu Ningzhu said, still deeply immersed in her own memories. After a small pause, she continued speaking, “So, my mother left me and my father. From that day onwards, she never came back. Before she left, she told me, “Ning’er, when you’re looking for your other half, find a man who loves you, and whom you love.” Indeed, my mother and father, they truly loved each other. However, what I saw was the pain that existed between them. Because my mother loved my father, she had to pay a heavy price, and I am the witness of their suffering.”

“That’s why you hid your extraordinary beauty behind your veil?”

Jiang Chen asked. He never thought Wu Ningzhu had such a story to tell.

“Not quite. I once swore to myself that I would one day find my mother and allow her to reunite with my father. That’s why I put all my focus into cultivation, and hid my face behind the veil. I

vowed that before I find my mother, I would never remove that veil from my face. And, if a man removes it, one of three consequences will happen.”

At this point, Wu Ningzhu gazed at Jiang Chen with her bright eyes.

Jiang Chen’s heart started pounding, and he suddenly realized he had made a huge mistake. However, he still wanted to try his luck. Thus, he asked, “What... What kind of consequences?”

“I made a vow; if a man removes my veil, I will kill that man with my own hands. And, if I can’t kill him, then I’ll kill myself. Or... I’ll marry him.”

Once again Wu Ningzhu giggled. She looked really beautiful when she smiled.

"So..."

Jiang Chen’s eyes were widen open. Heavens! He had removed her veil, and she hadn’t killed him, as she didn’t seem to have the ability to kill Jiang Chen. However, Wu Ningzhu also hadn’t killed herself, but instead came to help him. So, the only answer was obviously the third consequence.

Heavens, this had gone too far! Only the heavens knew that Jiang Chen didn’t desire Wu Ningzhu!

"So, I want to marry you!"

Wu Ningzhu said in a determined manner, and she had raised her voice as well, causing those guys who were happily drinking in the courtyard to spit everything out of their mouths.

Braghhh...

Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, Yu Zihan, and the few others instantly spat out whatever they had in their mouths, and nearly threw themselves onto the table. The eyes of these men were widen open. Through the door, the immediately gazed at the

scene, forgetting to even close their mouths.

“Heavens, this damn heavenly bastard! Why! Why! Is he still a human?!”

Han Yan started pounding his own chest and yelling. He felt a desire to rip Jiang Chen apart.

“This is such a straightforward girl, but I like her character.”

Yu Zihan expressed his surprise.

“Get lost! What’s the point of liking her, she’s Boss Jiang’s girl!”

Tian Yishan immediately slapped the back of Yu Zihan’s head.

"Cough... I said I like her character, that's all!"

Yu Zihan let out a few mild coughs.

“Sigh... this is so ridiculous. I’m so handsome, but I’ve yet to find a girl for myself. That rascal only went to the Southern Continent for a short while, and he already got the prettiest girl there to want to marry him. Guys, tell me, I am a man; a handsome one! However, why is there such a huge difference between us? Sigh... what a lonely life.”

Nangong Wentian shook his head and sighed. When compared to Jiang Chen, he felt a lot of envy.

"Women, not interested."

Big Yellow showed no interest as he continued drinking his wine. This was a guy who had no interest in girls.

“Of course you’re not interested in girls, you only have an interest in female dogs.”

Han Yan rolled his eyes at Big Yellow.

Outside the courtyard, Jiang Chen became speechless because of the astonishment. He only felt as if a sudden clap of thunder had struck his head. This was all too sudden, he was not prepared for this at all.

“Hehe, don’t be afraid, I won’t ask you to marry me right now.”

Wu Ningzhu giggled as she went back to her normal behavior.

“I know about the relationship between you and younger sister Little Yu, it must be hard for you to accept immediately. However, don’t worry, I’ll wait for the day where you truly fall in love with me. You’re going to the Divine Continent, and so will I. I’m sure my mom’s home is somewhere in the Divine Continent. Sooner or later, I’ll go there as well.”

Wu Ningzhu said, her eyes full of determination.

Jiang Chen stared at Wu Ningzhu’s magnificent face, and saw her stubbornness. Apparently, both of them had the same goal; to visit the Divine Continent. He could only imagine how hard it must have been for Wu Ningzhu all these, and she only had her current achievement as the number one genius of the Southern Continent. Currently, she was at the peak of the Late Combat Soul realm, and with her talent, breaking through to the Combat King realm would be simple. All she needed was a catalyst.

"You said your mother's name is Gu Lan?"

Jiang Chen suddenly recalled the name of Wu Ningzhu’s mother, and he couldn’t help but try to confirm it once more.

"That's right."

Wu Ningzhu nodded her head, not having noticed anything.

"Gu Lan, Gu Family... Could she be from the Gu Family?"

A respectful feeling suddenly emerged in Jiang Chen’s mind. The Gu Family was an ancient family in the Divine Continent. They had rich and powerful resources, and they were a huge influence. In his previous life, Jiang Chen had some connections with them. According to what Wu Ningzhu just said, Gu Lan was from an ancient family, and her brother was a very strong man who had the ability to destroy the Southern Continent with a single hand. A man like that was probably a Combat Emperor.

This was a family with a lot of history and inheritance. Since Wu Ningzhu was given birth to by Gu Lan, she must have the bloodline of the Gu Family in her body, and that was also the reason why she could have such extraordinary achievements at her young age, and become the number one genius of the Southern Continent.

“What are you thinking about?”

Wu Ningzhu asked.

“Nothing, I was just thinking about your mother’s family, wondering how strong they really are.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. He didn’t tell her anything he knew about the Gu Family, because if he did, he just wouldn’t be able to explain how a genius of the Eastern Continent who had never been to the Divine Continent could know so much about the superpowers of the Divine Continent; it would make no sense.

Right at this moment, the men from the Nangong Family approached from afar. When they saw Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu, they cupped their fists and greeted.

"Uncle, why did you come at this hour? Is there anything urgent?"

Jiang Chen asked.

Seeing that the Nangong Family was here, Nangong Wentian and the others left the courtyard and joined them.

“Nephew Jiang Chen, since everything in the Eastern Continent has been settled, we need to rush back to the Southern Continent.”

Nangong Yunfan said.

"Oh, why the rush?"

Jiang Chen felt surprised.

At the same time, it seemed like Wu Ningzhu had suddenly remembered something. She said, “Yes, what Chief Nangong said

is correct, we need to leave as soon as possible. The Demon King's Palace was infuriated after you killed four of their guardians in the Dancing Sun City. Because of this, the master of the Demon King Palace, Lord Combat Wolf furiously declared war against the Profound River Palace. When we left, the Southern Continent had already fallen into chaos, and many cities were being attacked by the large armies of the demons. The safety of the Southern Continent is at stake, so we have to rush back to help."

"That's right. Although the Profound River Palace can fight with the Demon King Palace, there are way too many demons in the Southern Continent. We, the Nangong Family has to contribute in this war as well."

Nangong Yunfan said.

"This isn't good."

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He had witnessed those demons running amok in the Southern Continent. Now that a war had erupted between the demons and the humans, it would no doubt be a war of a gigantic scale, and many innocent lives would be sacrificed.

"Jiang Chen, using my own name, I want to ask you to come to the Southern Continent and help us."

Wu Ningzhu stared in Jiang Chen's eyes with a serious look on her face. She didn't invite him in the name of the Profound River Palace's Holy Maiden, instead, she used her own name. The reason was that the Southern Continent truly needed some extra help, and if a mighty warrior like Jiang Chen could provide them some help, the Demon King Palace would not be so frightening. Secondly, she wanted to see if she carried any weight in Jiang Chen's heart.

Chapter 469 - Visiting Southern Continent Once Again

It seemed like the situation in the Southern Continent was critical, as they had no time to waste. It took Wu Ningzhu and the others at least half a month to travel from the Southern Continent to here, and after so many days had passed, the situation in the Southern Continent must've become even more chaotic. Perhaps an intense war was already erupted between the Demon King Palace and the Profound River Palace.

Initially, Jiang Chen planned on traveling to the Divine Continent once everything here was settled. However, because of this, it looked like he would have to postpone his trip. No matter what, because of the relationship between him and these people, there was no way he could avoid the Southern Continent's situation.

“Alright, even if not for those people in the Southern Continent, just because of Elder Sister Ning, I'll have to travel to the Southern Continent. Besides, during the most chaotic period of the Southern Period. Elder Sister Ning and the Nangong Family still came all the way here to help me. Jiang Chen is not an ungrateful man, and since the situation in the Southern Continent is so critical, let's begin our journey immediately.”

Without hesitating, Jiang Chen accepted the request. Hearing Jiang Chen address her as Elder Sister Ning instead of Miss Wu, Wu Ningzhu chuckled to herself, as this was a sign that Jiang Chen had stopped treating her as an outsider.

“This is excellent! Little Chen can kill a Second Grade Combat King warrior, so with his help, we can definitely defeat the Demon King Palace!”

Wu Ningzhu was really happy. It looked like she hadn't wasted her time during this trip to the Eastern Continent. Not only had

she fulfilled her heart's desire, she had also managed to bring a powerful helper to the Southern Continent; a man who could fight a million enemies!

“Haha, perfect! Now we can fight side by side again!”

Nangong Wentian laughed as he placed his arm on Han Yan's shoulder.

“Hehe, we've gotten back to business again. I'll show no mercy when slaughtering those demons.”

Han Yan started laughing as well. After his Ancient Divine Devil bloodline had awakened, he had been progressing at an incredible speed. However, compared to Jiang Chen, the gap between them was still big. Soon, he would go to the Divine Continent together with Jiang Chen, and they were going to continue their journey in an even bigger world, causing him to feel somewhat anxious. By going to the Southern Continent to fight those demons, he might be able to find a catalyst and manage to break through to the Late Combat Soul realm, gaining even more strength. Then, he would at least have some strength when in the Divine Continent.

Meanwhile, Big Yellow was excitedly wagging his tail. He obviously felt thrilled by this as well. He was a creature that could never settle for peace, and the more chaotic the situation was, the more excited he became. So, being able to visit the Southern Continent was something that could fulfil his craving, for now.

“Brother Yan, Big Yellow, go get Little Yu; we'll go to the Southern Continent together.”

Jiang Chen turned around and said to Han Yan and Big Yellow. Now that the Eastern Continent was completely stable, he wouldn't have any worries when leaving. So, if he asked Han Yan and Big Yellow to stay behind this time as well, they would definitely fight him to death.

Yu Zihan and the other two shook their heads with helpless

smiles on their faces. The three of them had yet to reach the Combat Soul realm, so if they followed Jiang Chen, they would only serve as burdens. Thus, they just kept silent.

“Zihan, since the Black Sect will have to be reorganized, you three can just stay here and help with this matter. I have fully activated the energy vein underneath the Black Sect, so you can all absorb as much essence as you want; try your best to improve your strength.

Jiang Chen turned to Yu Zihan and said.

At the same time, Big Yellow turned around and disappeared without a trace. A few minutes later, he returned with Yan Chenyu.

“Little Sister Little Yu, I have to bother you this time and ask you to help me in the Southern Continent.”

Wu Ningzhu said upon seeing Yan Chenyu. A look of admiration could be seen in her eyes as she looked at Yan Chenyu.

“I’ll definitely help Elder Sister Ning. I can take this opportunity to see the Southern Continent with my own eyes as well.”

Yan Chenyu said with a smile. Seeing that both girls had a harmonious relationship, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian once again started pounding their own chests in agony. They stared at Jiang Chen as if they wanted to devour him. For heavens’ sake, why was this guy so lucky?! Two girls with unrivaled beauty, and they weren’t fighting against each other for Jiang Chen’s favor. Instead, they treated each other politely. This made them feel jealous.

“Little Chen, since everything is ready, let’s begin our journey as soon as possible. With our ability, it’ll take at least half a month for us to return to the Southern Continent. Even with your help, we won’t be able to shorten that time by much. I just hope we can still make it.”

Wu Ningzhu said.

“Miss Wu, don’t worry. Yes, it took us half a month to travel from the Southern Continent to here, but when traveling from the Eastern Continent to the Southern Continent, it will only take us an hour.”

Nangong Wentian said with a smile on his face.

"Half an hour? Impossible!"

Wu Ningzhu felt as if Nangong Wentian was joking with her. Not only her, everyone at the scene were thinking the same thoughts, including Han Yan and Yan Chenyu. The distance between the Eastern Continent and the Southern Continent stretched was gigantic, and crossing this gigantic distance in just half an hour, it seemed like a plain joke to them.

“Brother Nan is correct, it will only take us half an hour, because I have this.”

Jiang Chen flipped his palm, revealing the bright bronze plate once again. Other people might feel that this bronze plate is strange, but Han Yan and Big Yellow didn’t.

“Island of Ice!”

Both of them immediately cried out in surprise. Jiang Chen hadn’t told anyone about this bronze plate, as he had only remembered it and used when he was previously traveling to the Southern Continent. After he returned from the Southern Continent, Jiang Chen was busy with the war between himself and the Martial Saint Dynasty, so he hadn’t had the chance to explained this secret to anyone.

"What’s this?"

Wu Ningzhu asked.

“The bronze plates we found in the Island of Ice never disappeared, they all merged into a single piece. And this, this is

the key to the Island of Ice.”

Jiang Chen began to explain everything about the bronze plate, including how he and Nangong Wentian had used it to travel to the Southern Continent. Finally, Han Yan and Big Yellow came to understand. At the same time, they thought Jiang Chen was an incredibly lucky guy, as he could obtain such a precious treasure.

But for Wu Ningzhu and the people of the Nangong Family, it was more than a sudden understanding. A huge Teleportation Formation that could allow them to travel straight from the Eastern Continent to the Southern Continent, none of them had ever seen something like that before.

"If this really works, that would be great!"

Nangong Yunfan said.

“Dad, of course it works! If not for this bronze plate, Jiang Chen and I would have never made it back to the Southern Continent in time!”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Let me find the exact location of the Island of Ice first. The Teleportation Formation is located on the island, so we’ll have to find out where exactly the island is first, only then can we use the formation.”

While explaining, Jiang Chen injected his divine sense into the bronze plate. Soon, a route became clear to him. It still led toward the ocean north of the Eastern Continent, and there was a bright dot at the bottom of the Northern Ocean. And that, was the current location of the Island of Ice.

“I’ve found it. Although the exact location of the Island of Ice is constantly changing, it is still at the Northern Ocean. As of now, it’s located in the heart of the Northern Ocean, let’s go there now.”

Without delaying a single second, everyone leapt into the sky and turned into trails of light as they shot toward the Northern Ocean.

Every person here was a Combat Soul warrior, so they were able to fly with incredible speed, and with the help of Jiang Chen, they arrived at the Northern Ocean in less than half an hour, and smoothly found the location of the Island of Ice.

Jiang Chen threw the bronze plate into the sky, then it made a connection with the Island of Ice and transformed into an illusionary looking door. Led by Jiang Chen, the group passed through the door, and with a flash before their eyes, they arrived on top of the black altar.

Swoosh...

Ice-cold wind was blowing in their faces, causing them to tremble a bit. As Han Yan and Big Yellow had been here before, they didn't feel anything strange. But, for Wu Ningzhu and the others, it was a shocking experience, and they felt really curious toward this strange dimension.

“That is the Teleportation Formation.”

Nangong Wentian pointed at the gigantic Teleportation Formation not far away from them.

“Damn it, when we were previously leaving this place, I knew there was something unusual about this broken formation, but as the doorway was about to disappear, we just didn't have enough time to study it. I never thought this broken formation would be so great!”

Big Yellow said. When they were here last time, because the doorway out of the Island of Ice was disappearing, they were forced to hastily leave. If they hadn't, they might get trapped for another hundred years. Thus, they didn't have enough time to take a second look at this Teleportation Formation. However, out of their expectations, Jiang Chen was the man who got all the benefits. With the bronze plate, this Island of Ice could be considered Jiang Chen's garden.

Jiang Chen strode toward the Teleportation Formation, then he placed the bronze plate in its center. Soon after, dazzling beams started shooting out from it, and not long after that, a black illusionary looking passage appeared, as well as a strong suction force.

After Jiang Chen pin-pointed the destination at the Southern Continent, he shouted, "Let's go!"

The group immediately followed after Jiang Chen and entered the passage.

Half an hour later, in an open area on a mountain range in the Southern Continent, a spatial crack suddenly erupted in mid-air. Then, human figures started shooting out from the cracks like cannon balls. Each of them looked to be in a difficult position, with the exception of Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian had experienced this before. All of these people were thrown onto the ground, causing a huge crater to appear. Yan Chenyu and Wu Ningzhu both landed safely, as Jiang Chen took care of them.

"Cough... damn it, that force is just too strong!"

"What the fuck, I nearly died!"

Big Yellow and Han Yan both crawled out from the crater while gloomily cursing. Meanwhile, Nangong Wentian was laughing out loud at the side, delightedly watching how these two fellows were behaving.

The people of the Nangong Family also crawled out from the crater. Luckily, all of them were Combat Soul warriors who possessed strong bodies. If it was some ordinary Heavenly Core warriors, they might have died upon landing. After gloomily tidying themselves up, the people started examining their surroundings.

"We've really arrived at the Southern Continent! That Teleportation Formation is just amazing, we've truly saved a huge

amount of time!”

Wu Ningzhu said, feeling surprised. Without the Teleportation Formation, they would have to fly across the ocean in order to return, and that would take a really long time.

“This place seems really abnormal, we can’t see anyone around; not even a demon beast. This is strange.”

After looking around, Nangong Wenyan couldn’t help but say.

Chapter 470 - The Demon King Palace's Evil Plot

Nangong Wenyan's words alerted everyone. Only now did Jiang Chen and Nangong Wentian noticed that this was the mountain range they had arrived at the previous time. When they came here previously, although there weren't many people around, they could still find some, and they could also sense the auras of demons. However, this place seemed unusually quiet right now. Looking ahead, they couldn't even find a single person.

“Indeed, this isn't right. There are usually many demons roaming about freely in this mountain range, and all sorts of natural resources can be found here as well. That's why many people from all sorts of different background usually come here to train, and a lot of merchant groups would also come here to hunt for demons and natural resources. So, why is it so quiet here now?”

Nangong Wentian said.

“Looks like the situation in the Southern Continent is getting more intense. If my guess is correct, a war has already erupted between the Profound River Palace and the Demon King Palace. We need to leave this place quickly and rush to the Profound River Palace.”

Wu Ningzhu said with a serious expression. No matter what kind of unusual situation, it was most likely caused by the war between the two superpowers.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. The reason why he came here was to help the Profound River Palace and the people of the Southern Continent. Although the Profound River Palace and Demon King Palace would eventually go to war, what triggered it this time was actually him killing four of their guardians.

With incredible speed, the group traveled toward the Profound River Palace. In just a brief moment, they had flown past many cities. Some of those cities were once prosperous ones, but they were all in ruins now. They had clearly gone through violent battles.

“Looks like a lot of battles have taken place during this period, many cities have been attacked.”

Nangong Yunfan said, his voice solemn.

After traveling further, they arrived at another city. Black smoke could be seen soaring up into the sky, and flames were raging across the entire city. However, no fights were taking place here. With their experience, they could easily tell that a disastrous battle had just ended here. Although it was now over, it had left this city a scar that could never be healed.

The group anxiously sped up, and they soon arrived above another city. Presented in front of them was a chaotic scene. Corpses of both demons and humans were scattered all over the place, and the entire city was smeared with blood. The air was filled with a pungent smell that could make one throw up.

Cries and screams were lingering by their ears. They saw a corpse of a demon the size of a small mountain, and some human warriors furiously roaring at it, venting their grief. It was a miserable scene, and it caused Han Yan and the few others to remember the scene of those Dimensional Creatures wreaking havoc on the other side of Mount Origin.

“This is Evergreen City, a once prosperous and bustling city. I never thought it could reach such a state. It looks like the war between humans and demons has reached a critical state.”

Nangong Yunfan said with an unsightly expression.

Han Yan and Yan Chenyu were both shocked. In the Saint Origin realm, humans and demons were the two major species, and they

were innate rivals. However, in most parts of this world, humans still occupied the dominating position. Take the Eastern Continent as an example, although there are countless demons there, sizeable demon clans were incredibly rare, let alone a superpower consisting only of demons like the Demon King Palace, which was equal in power to the humans' strongest power.

In this Southern Continent, things were different from what Han Yan and Yan Chenyu had expected. This was a good land for demons to live in, and both humans and demons had their own superpowers in this place. Following the eruption of the war, complete chaos struck the entire Southern Continent.

“Since I, Jiang Chen am here, I will break the social order of this continent. I will annihilate the Demon King Palace and make the humans the only masters of this land.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. The reason why he wanted to destroy these demons was simple; he was a human, a real human, and he didn't want to let these demons brutally slaughter his own kind.

Swoosh, swoosh, swoosh...

Six powerful figures flew into the sky above Evergreen City and arrived in front of the group. The leading man was an old man in his fifties, and he was a Mid Combat Soul warrior. The few men behind him were all Combat Soul warriors as well. Two arrogant-looking young men stood between them as well. Being able to reach the Combat Soul realm at such a young age, they deserved to feel proud of themselves.

When the old man saw Wu Ningzhu, he immediately stepped forward and bowed, “Holy Maiden, welcome back. Greetings, Chief Nangong.”

"Elder Xu, what is going on here?"

Wu Ningzhu asked. These men were all from the Profound River

Palace, and Wu Ningzhu knew them pretty well. The Old man's name was Xu Danian, a respectable man from the Profound River Palace. However, his status was still below that of the Holy Maiden.

“After Holy Maiden left, a war erupted between the Profound River Palace and the Demon King Palace, and both parties have suffered many casualties. Under the attacks of the Demon King Palace, all the demons in the different places across this continent started launching attacks against human cities. In just a short period of time, three cities have fallen into their hands. The battle of Evergreen City was also an unexpected event, we came here right after we were informed, and were fortunate enough to suppress the battles.”

Xu Danian said.

“These demons are aggressive and cruel in nature. Because someone killed four of their guardians in the Dancing Sun City, the three demon kings of the [Demon King](#) Palace were infuriated. Thus, they declared war against the Profound River Palace, and dragged the entire Southern Continent into complete chaos, causing many innocent lives to be sacrificed.”

[TL: I can't remember if it has been mentioned yet, but Demon King is basically the demons' version of Combat King.]

One of the young geniuses of the Profound River Palace said, expressing his indignation.

“Indeed, these demons are aggressive and brutal by nature. However, the Demon King Palace is also a very powerful clan, as all three masters are Demon Kings. They're truly not easy to handle.”

Nangong Yunfan said. However, when he saw Jiang Chen's face, his tone was obviously relaxed. No matter how strong these three Demon Kings were, as long as Jiang Chen was here, it seemed like everything would be easily settled.

“What Chief Nangong said is correct. There are three Demon Kings in the Demon King Palace, and their Eldest Palace Master is a frightening Second Grade Demon King, and his strength is equal to that of our Palace Master. However, the Profound River Palace only has two Combat Kings, while they have three Demon Kings. We’ve been at a disadvantageous side ever since the war erupted. However, if the Demon King Palace really attacks the Profound River Palace, with our hidden resources and forces, we should be able to hold on against them. But it’s a shame, the Demon King Palace actually employed such a despicable tactic.”

Xu Danian angrily said.

"Elder Xu, what happened?"

Wu Ningzhu asked.

“The Demon King Palace have been capturing all of our geniuses these last days. Until now, they’ve captured more than three hundred of them, and several dozen geniuses of the Profound River Palace has been captured by them as well. The third Palace Master, Lord Nether made an announcement; tomorrow, he’ll execute them all at Nether Mountain.”

The more Xu Danian spoke, the angrier he became.

Hearing what he said, the expressions of Wu Ningzhu and the others instantly changed.

"Such an evil plot!"

Wu Ningzhu said.

“Yes, you’re right, Holy Maiden. This is the Demon King Palace’s evil plot. Because their ultimate target is the Profound River Palace, if they had the intentions of fighting us face to face, there would be no need for them to capture those geniuses. With their characters, they would usually just kill them on the spot. Now, what Lord Nether wants to do is force us to save our men at Nether Mountain. If we really want to do it, the Profound River Palace

would have to send at least one Combat King warrior, and even that wouldn't guarantee the success of this rescue mission.

Xu Danian said.

“If the Profound River Palace really sends a Combat King to the Nether Mountain, the other two Demon Kings will definitely gather all their forces and launch an attack at the Profound River Palace. At that point of time, we will only have one Combat King left, and there would be no way to defend ourselves against them, because our Profound River Formation requires two Combat Kings to fully function, and that's what allows us to fight with the force of three Combat Kings. That is also the reason why the Demon King Palace is scared of us, and also the reason why they're using this kind of dirty method in order to split our strength. If the Profound River Palace sends someone to rescue our men, the Demon King Palace will kill all those geniuses in front of us, and use it as a way to strength the demons' spirits, while also dealing a heavy blow to the humans' spirits. Not only that, the Profound River Palace's reputation would suffer greatly as well. What an evil plot!”

Two ice-cold beams shot out from Wu Ningzhu's eyes. The Demon King Palace's tactics were truly cruel, as it put the Profound River Palace in an incredibly difficult position. The men who had been captured were all geniuses of the younger generation, and if these people were all killed, the humans would suffer an incredibly great loss, and it would also strength the spirit of the many demons. This would put the humans in an even more disadvantageous position. However, if the Profound River Palace really went on a rescue mission, the other two Demon Kings would lead a massive army to launch an attack against the Profound River Palace.

Therefore, one way or another, Lord Nether's tactic was extremely beneficial for the Demon King Palace. It could almost be considered a flawless strategy.

After Wu Ningzhu expressed her anger, her expression became relaxed as well, and a faint smile emerged onto her face, as if she didn't feel any anxiousness regarding the situation. If it was in the past, the Demon King Palace's strategy would definitely have destroyed the Profound River Palace, and perhaps it could even be the strategy that led to the fall of all humans in the Southern Continent. Once the Demon King Palace defeated the Profound River Palace, all humans in the Southern Continent would become their slaves, and it would be a devastating situation that no one could imagine.

However, that was before. Now, Jiang Chen was here, and everything was going to change. They would rescue those geniuses, and the Demon King Palace would be destroyed.

“What decision did the Palace Chief make?”

Wu Ningzhu asked.

Xu Danian and the few others behind him seemed to notice something, as after he told Wu Ningzhu and those from the Nangong Family about the Demon King Palace's evil plot, they actually behaved as if it was nothing serious. This made Xu Danian feel both curious and gloomy. The situation was getting worse and worse, so why did they still look so free of worries? He did see Jiang Chen and the others as well, but he didn't take them seriously.

“The Palace Chief has decided to let the Great Elder handle the rescue mission at Nether Mountain, while he holds the Profound River Palace by himself. There is nothing much else we can do.”

Xu Danian let out a long sigh.

“No need to do that. Elder Xu, I need you to return to the Profound River Palace and inform the Palace Chief about this; he and the Great Elder should just stay in the Profound River Palace, and I will bring all those captured geniuses back. Oh, the head of that Lord Nether as well.”

Wu Ningzhu indifferently said. She was going to rescue the hostage and kill Lord Nether at the same time, and her tone made it seem like this near impossible mission would be easy for her.

"What?!"

Xu Danian and the few others cried out in shock and started staring at Wu Ningzhu with looks of disbelief. In their minds, their Holy Maiden was someone cool, elegant and wise, and she would always go about things steadily. So, why did it seem like she was bragging today?

Chapter 471 - Poisonous Nether Toad

“What’s wrong? Did you guys not hear what I said?”

Wu Ningzhu's eyes widened.

Xu Danian and the few others dared not show any neglect, and immediately bowed toward Wu Ningzhu. As the Profound River Palace’s Holy Maiden, Wu Ningzhu held a superior position, and it was much more supreme than that of these people. Also, as she possessed a formidable cultivation base, she was the one most likely to break through to the Combat King realm next. Thus, no one dared show her any disrespect.

However, Xu Danian still voiced out his doubts, “Holy Maiden, Lord Nether is not an ordinary Demon King, he has a very strong cultivation base, and he employs brutal and cruel tactics. He is an existence who is very difficult to handle. May I know how Holy Maiden is planning on rescuing our people?”

If it was during a more stable time, Xu Danian would never have been able to find the courage to doubt Wu Ningzhu’s words. However, since they were now in a very critical situation that concerned the survival of humans in the Southern Continent, and even Wu Ningzhu herself, Xu Danian had to find the answer. With that, when he returned to the Profound River Palace, he would be able to answer the Palace Chief.

"Let me introduce a person to you all."

Wu Ningzhu turned to Jiang Chen. An infatuated and prideful look emerged in her eyes as she said, "This young man is Jiang Chen, the man who killed those four guardians in the Dancing Sun City, and he is also the man who defeated me in the Nangong Family, and the peerless genius who attracted Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Early Combat Soul realm."

"What?!"

After listening to Wu Ningzhu's introduction, Xu Danian and the others immediately cried out in shock as they turned their eyes toward the white-clothed youngster. When they had seen this young man just now, none of them had taken him seriously. However, this youngster was unexpectedly that peerless genius who had brought a tremendous storm to the Southern Continent.

During the incident in the Dancing Sun City, a white-clothed youngster had made his debut. He attracted Heavenly Tribulation while breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, and eventually killed four guardians of the Demon King Palace, which was considered a huge contribution to the human race of the Southern Continent. After that, the Profound River Palace had started restlessly searching for this genius, but all of their attempts failed. Thus, none of these people were able to associate this youngster in front of them with that peerless genius when they first saw him.

Xu Danian instantly cupped his fist toward Jiang Chen. A Divine Core warrior who could attract Heavenly Tribulation while breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, kill four guardians of the Demon King Palace, and also defeat the number one genius of

the Southern Continent, Wu Ningzhu; Xu Danian was not qualified to look down on a mighty person like this.

“Young Master Jiang Chen is currently a Late Combat Soul warrior, and not long ago, he killed a Second Grade Combat King, as well as two First Grade Combat Kings in the Eastern Continent. Go back and tell Palace Chief about this, just let them guard the Profound River Palace with a peace of mind. Young Master Jiang Chen and I will rescue all of our people, and we will bring back Lord Nether’s head.”

Wu Ningzhu said with utmost confidence, as if Lord Nether had already been killed. In fact, not only her, everyone around here were showing the same confidence; it was the trust they had in Jiang Chen. For those who had witnessed Jiang Chen, they had no doubt about whether or not Jiang Chen could kill Lord Nether.

Her words caused Xu Danian and the ones behind to stare at Jiang Chen with eyes and mouth wide open, and the same shocked expressions on their faces. Killing a Second Grade Combat King with just a Late Combat Soul cultivation base, if their Holy Maiden hadn’t said this, they would definitely think that they were being lied to. However, since it was Wu Ningzhu had told them this, they had all the reasons to believe her.

With the way Wu Ningzhu usually handled matters, if she didn’t have absolute confidence, she never would have made such a reckless decision regarding such a major event. Not only that, only one month had passed since Jiang Chen had broken through to the Combat Soul realm in the Dancing Sun City. In just one month, he had broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm, this was an

incredibly astonishing speed! However, when someone could attract Heavenly Tribulation cultivated at such incredible speed, it seemed perfectly normal.

“Alright, we’ll return now. We’ll be waiting for Young Master Jiang Chen and Holy Maiden’s victorious return!”

Xu Danian cupped his fist toward Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu. After that, he brought the men of the Profound River Palace and returned to where they came from. These men left with excited expressions, as if they had finally seen hopes of victory.

Of course, in the minds of these people, it was still unknown if Jiang Chen would truly be able to defeat Lord Nether. Although Wu Ningzhu had told them so, none of them had ever witnessed what Jiang Chen was capable of, after all. The gap between the Combat Soul realm and Combat King realm was extremely huge, and it was nearly impossible to kill someone who was one realm higher.

The Profound River Palace had no other alternative right now, so they could only place their hopes on Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu. If they failed, the Profound River Palace would face great danger, and once the Profound River Palace collapse, it would also mean the fall of the Southern Continent’s human race.

"Little Chen, let's go to Mount Nether now."

Wu Ningzhu turned to Jiang Chen and said.

"Alright."

Jiang Chen replied with a smile. His purpose for coming to the Southern Continent was to help, and it would be really great if he could kill a Demon King. Besides, Jiang Chen had a great interest in this Lord Nether. Killing a demon was different from killing a human, as he would be able to absorb the demon soul of any demon. With his current cultivation base, absorbing a Demon King's demon soul would no doubt bring him a lot of benefits.

The group didn't stop by Evergreen City, but instead changed their original plan and flew toward Mount Nether.

"Brother Jiang Chen, that Lord Nether is not easy to handle, you have to be extra careful."

Along their way, Tu Yi tried to warn Jiang Chen.

"He's just a First Grade Demon King, not really a threat to me."

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders.

"Nephew Jiang Chen, we really can't underestimate this Lord Nether. Although he only broke through to the Demon King realm a few years ago, and was promoted to Third Palace Chief not long ago, he is a sinister and ruthless demon, and his body carries a deadly venom. When he was a Mid Combat Soul demon, no Late Combat Soul warriors were willing to fight him."

Nangong Yunfan also warned him.

"Deadly venom? What is the original form of this Lord Nether?"

Jiang Chen curiously asked.

"Lord Nether is a rare Venomous Nether Toad. He isn't good at fighting, but his venom is something that always catches his enemy by surprise. Therefore, Chief Nangong's warning does make sense. We'll definitely fight against that Lord Nether tomorrow. Little Chen, you need to be careful!"

Wu Ningzhu said. When the Venomous Nether Toad was mentioned, everyone's expression immediately changed. These people were all very strong, and they knew a lot of things that ordinary people didn't. Thus, they understood how frightening this Venomous Nether Toad was. There were many venomous things in this world, but those with Nether in its name were rare.

Nether represented hell; it was the symbol of death. Only the most deadly venoms were qualified to bear the name Nether. Clearly, the venomous strength of this Venomous Nether Toad was many times stronger than that of the Green Hellish Python.

"If that's the case, I won't find it challenging at all."

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders. In his body, he already had the poison of the Green Hellish Python, as well as a few others that he had previously absorbed. If he was able to

absorb the Venomous Nether Toad's poison tomorrow, his poison would definitely become stronger. Although Jiang Chen didn't like using poison, he also didn't fear poison.

For others, this Venomous Nether Toad was an existence similar to a messenger of death, but for Jiang Chen who was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, it couldn't pose any threat to him. It would instead just contribute further to Jiang Chen's abilities.

"Kaka... this guy is invincible against poison."

Big Yellow started laughing. Others might not know much about Jiang Chen's abilities, but he did. Not only was Jiang Chen not afraid of poison, he could actually attack with poison, and even produce it in his body. Big Yellow could remember the moment they first met in Mount Origin. At that time, Jiang Chen had just obtained the Green Hellish Python's poison, and he had used it against Big Yellow, causing him to constantly throw up.

Seeing the relaxed expressions on both Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's faces, Wu Ningzhu, Nangong Yunfan, and the others were finally at ease. In fact, they had always been confident in Jiang Chen, and although that Venomous Nether Toad was very frightening, Jiang Chen would definitely have ways of dealing with it, as he was someone capable of achieving anything.

Mount Nether was actually a quiet mountain. Lord Nether loved this place, and thus made the entire place his own, and renamed it to Mount Nether. Jiang Chen and the group had purposely slowed down their speed, so when they arrived at Mount Nether, the sky

had already turned dark. The entire place was completely silent at this moment. However, behind the cover of this seemingly peaceful atmosphere, it was a completely different situation.

With Jiang Chen and the other's senses, they could clearly feel many auras hiding within this mountain range. There were so many demonic auras here that it could cause anyone's heart to shudder in terror.

“Damn it, there are at least ten thousand demons here, and I can sense many Combat Soul demons as well. Looks like Lord Nether is well prepared.”

Big Yellow whispered.

“I can sense the aura of those human geniuses as well. I think they're being kept in some sort of jails. We should wait until the sky turns bright before we strike.”

Nangong Yunfan turned to Jiang Chen and said. At this moment, Jiang Chen was their pillar.

“Be patient, I'm sure that Lord Nether will bring all human geniuses out tomorrow, and he will make it into a grand event. We'll strike at that moment, using our strongest attacks to hit them in their face, and at the same time rescue our people when the situation turns chaotic. We'll also take that opportunity to kill Lord Nether. Doing this will bring us the greatest results, and it won't only serve as a heavy blow to the demons, it will also serve as a major encouragement to the humans.”

Jiang Chen said. He always considered every point and how to maximize the result.

“What Little Chen said is correct. This battle will have a great influence on the future of the Southern Continent, so we have to bring up the spirit of the humans. We’ll wait until Lord Nether makes his move tomorrow before we strike. Not only will we catch them unprepared like that, we will also strengthen the spirit of the humans.”

Wu Ningzhu fully agreed with Jiang Chen’s plan.

Thus, the group led by Jiang Chen hid somewhere outside Mount Nether. The next morning, the peaceful atmosphere surrounding Mount Nether was broken by countless ground-shaking roars of demons, like a cry for battle. The entire Mount Nether had become restless.

A nearly 300 meter tall platform was quickly built. A gigantic steel cage was placed on top of this platform. A bit more than three hundred young men could be seen trapped in this cage, and all of them wore furious expressions. Many of them were covered in blood, and had bodies riddled with scars. They had clearly suffered torture from these demons. The cage was covered with a powerful demonic energy, that’s why these genius couldn’t break this cage and free themselves.

Chapter 472 – Bloodstained Mount Nether

(1)

Over three hundred geniuses of the human race had been imprisoned like slaves. They looked gloomy. Some of them were covered in cuts and bruises, and some were on the brink of death; it was a miserable scene. If one paid enough attention, he would noticed a man in black clothes standing at the front. This man looked to be in his early twenties, but he had a Late Combat Soul cultivation base, which was comparable to Wu Ningzhu. No one knew when such a formidable genius had appeared in the Southern Continent, perhaps not even the Profound River Palace.

Many wounds were visible on the body of this young man, there was even a bloody scar on his face. However, his eyes looked calm as a peaceful lake; no signs of panic could be seen on his face. Just this temperament alone made it so that few could compare with him.

Of course, at this moment, no one really noticed this young man in black, including Jiang Chen.

The three hundred meter tall platform seemed as tall as the skies. Apparently, Lord Nether was planning on executing all these geniuses on this tall platform, and it use it to stimulate the spirit of the demons, while at the same time, dealing a heavy blow to the humans.

Roar~

The demons' roars resounded throughout Mount Nether. They were so loud that even those who were far away from this place could clearly hear the ferocious roars of these demons. Lord Nether had long ago announced today's purpose to the public. The geniuses imprisoned on this tall platform were just like bait; the Demon King Palace was trying to attract the mighty warriors of the Profound River Palace.

There were at least ten thousand demons here; a gigantic and devastating army. If humans truly showed up, there would definitely be a bloody war.

Roar~

Suddenly, a roar that shook both heaven and earth resounded. When this roar was made, all the other demons immediately stopped roaring, and the entire Mount Nether became quiet once more. After that, Jiang Chen and the others saw a black beam shoot out from the center of Mount Nether, and a man in black clothes flew out from where the roar came from and hovered in the sky. He had a pair of toad's eyes, and he was gazing coldly at the human geniuses in the cage. He carried a bloodthirsty aura.

An indistinct spatial force was being emitted from this man, clearly showing that he was a Demon King existence. On his forehead, there was a spot that shone in a green color. He also had a huge stomach. All of this signified that his original form was that of a toad.

"What an ugly man."

Yan Chenyu couldn't help but say.

“He is Lord Nether, and his original form is that of a Venomous Nether Toad. His body is full of poison, and no one can afford to touch him. Brother Jiang Chen, if you’re going to fight him, you must pay attention to that green spot on his forehead. That’s the part with his strongest venom.”

Nangong Yunfan said.

After Lord Nether appeared, Mount Nether began shaking once again. Numerous powerful figures flew up in the sky. All these figures had a human figure, but at the same time, they had some unique features. Some had faces fully covered with scales, some had horns on top of their heads. They were all transformed from their demon forms.

Most of these demons possessed a powerful cultivation base, and every single one of them was a Combat Soul demon. Behind them was a large army of Divine Core demons. Not only that, roars could still be heard from all over Mount Origin; echoing across the sky above the entire mountain range.”

"What’s the situation like?"

Lord Nether asked.

A guy with a pair of black wings came forward, cupped his fist

and said, “Third Palace Master, we haven’t found any traces of humans within a thousand miles circumference, and it doesn’t seem like the Profound River Palace has sent any warriors here.”

The guy said. He was the person responsible for gathering information. However, he had been unable to discover Jiang Chen and his group. In fact, with the presence of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, it was extremely easy for them to hide, and no ordinary person would be able to notice where they were hiding.

"Hmph! The Profound River Palace is really patient."

Lord Nether coldly harrumphed, then turned his ice-cold glance over to the cage.

“Do you see this? All of you are the so called geniuses of the human race, and many of you are from the Profound River Palace. However, in the eyes of the Profound River Palace, you are nothing, and they don’t care for your lives! Do you feel sad? Disappointed?”

Lord Nether said in a sarcastic manner.

“Haha, you’re just a toad. Kill us if you will. The Profound River Palace will sooner or later get revenge for us.”

A man in his late twenties said with a loud voice. His injuries were the most severe amongst those in the cage, and he had a pretty strong cultivation base. At his young age, he was already an

Early Combat Soul warrior. A prideful look could be seen on his face; even when facing death, he didn't frown.

"You're seeking death."

Lord Nether's face became cold. He opened his mouth and spat out a green cloud. The green cloud flew toward the young man's head like a sharp blade, and it passed straight into the head of this young man.

Ssssss...

Argh!!

The green cloud was one of the strongest poisons underneath the heavens. Even though this young man had a firm and strong attitude, he couldn't help but let out a heart-wrenching cry. In almost an instant, the green cloud covered his entire body; from top to toe, corroding the young man and turning him into something that resembled a burnt charcoal. It was a scene that made everyone's hair stand up.

Some people who stood the closest to this young man were struck with great fear, and their bodies began trembling.

"Bastard!"

Wu Ningzhu was enraged upon seeing this. With a sway of her body, she immediately shot herself toward Lord Nether. The

genius who was killed by Lord Nether just now was one of the Profound River Palace's geniuses. Thus, Wu Ningzhu couldn't remain indifferent after seeing Lord Nether slaughter him. If she still didn't do anything, more people would be slaughtered by this foul toad.

"Let's go!"

Jiang Chen shouted. He was the first one to fly out after Wu Ningzhu. In a split second, he had already flown past Wu Ningzhu. Big Yellow was also incredibly fast, and he was following closely behind. Behind them were the people from the Nangong Family. The group soon after arrived and stood opposite of Lord Nether.

"You stinking toad, let these men go!"

Wu Ningzhu shouted at Lord Nether.

All these demons were startled by the sudden appearance of this group. Even Lord Nether was caught by surprise, especially the demon who just said that he couldn't find any traces of humans with a thousand mile circumference; an unsightly expression emerged onto his face. These humans had apparently been hiding in Mount Nether, and he wasn't able to notice any traces of them.

No matter what, Lord Nether didn't blame that demon, because even with his Demon King cultivation base, he had also failed to notice that there were humans hiding in Mount Nether.

However, when he sensed the cultivation base of Wu Ningzhu and the other humans, he immediately became relaxed.

“I’m guessing you are the Holy Maiden of the Profound River Palace, your appearance is truly magnificent, just as I expected. Wait, I never thought there was an equally beautiful girl? Since when did the Southern Continent have such a pretty girl? And why have I, Lord Nether never been informed of this before?”

Lord Nether stared at Wu Ningzhu with a lustful look in his eyes. When he saw Yan Chenyu, his eyes immediately lit up. Wu Ningzhu was the prettiest girl in the Southern Continent, and he had never expected to meet another peerless beauty who was equal to Wu Ningzhu. This caused the lustful Lord Nether to feel really excited.

“Lord Nether, you, a Palace Master, how could you use such despicable methods?! Do you not care about your face?!”

Wu Ningzhu said in a cold manner.

When the geniuses who were imprisoned in the cage saw the Holy Maiden, their despair was immediately reduced. However, when they found out that Wu Ningzhu had only brought a few men with her, it was instead replaced by worry for her.

“Jiejie, Wu Ningzhu, I never expected the Profound River Palace to actually send you here, and you only brought these few men with you? Clearly, you’re just here to seek death! However, if you promise to be my woman, I’ll spare your life.”

Lord Nether said while sneering.

“Since you said that, you will die.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent voice.

No one had noticed him before he talked, but when he did, Lord Nether immediately threw his glance toward Jiang Chen. Two green beams shot out from Lord Nether's eyes, and in the blink of an eye, they appeared before Jiang Chen face. These beams were obviously venomous as well, and was not something that a Combat Soul warrior could withstand.

"Careful!"

Wu Ningzhu quickly warned. However, Jiang Chen didn't seem to panic. He could even maintain the same smile on his face. With great speed, he stretched his arm forward and caught both green beams. After that, he opened his palm and revealed two green lights that were dancing around like two tiny snakes.

This caused Lord Nether's expression to change. He stared at this young man he had never met before with disbelief in his eyes. He clearly knew how strong his venom was, and no one had ever dared to touch it with their hands, let alone put them in his palm as if it was some toy.

"Is this all you got? And you're being so arrogant? Such an idiot."

Jiang Chen kept talking with the same indifferent tone. He casually shook his palm, then the two green beams simply entered his body through his palm. After absorbing this poison, Jiang Chen still looked normal.

"What?!"

Lord Nether cried out in shock, and he was unable to remain calm. A young Combat Soul warrior had just absorbed his deadly poison, and nothing had happened! This was completely absurd!

Not only Lord Nether, even Wu Ningzhu and those from the Nangong Family were staring at Jiang Chen with shock. They knew Jiang Chen was very formidable, but they never thought he would be unaffected by such deadly. If he really was like how Big Yellow had describe; invincible against poison, then Jiang Chen could be considered Lord Nether's natural predator. Lord Nether's strongest advantage was his deadly poison, and if it was taken away, then Lord Nether was nothing compared to Jiang Chen.

"Who are you?"

Lord Nether asked.

"I am the guy who attracted Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, the same person who kill those four guardians. So, now you should know who I am."

Jiang Chen revealed his identity.

"What? It's you!"

Lord Nether once again cried out in shock. However, a sinister expression quickly emerged onto his face. "Excellent! You're really brave to show yourself here, because you're just seeking your own death! Since the Profound River Palace doesn't dare send any Combat Kings here to rescue your people, I will kill all of you today, as well as these few hundred geniuses! Then, I'll bring your Holy Maiden away! This will be a huge blow to the Profound River Palace, and I'll be able to bring the fame of the Demon King Palace to greater heights!"

With towering killing intent, Lord Nether unleashed a black mist that carried a strong pungent smell, and made it float in the sky above the entire mountain range. At the same time, more than ten thousand demons began furiously roaring. Every single one of them were emitting intense killing intent and wanted to kill Jiang Chen.

Chapter 473 - Bloodstained Mount Nether

(2)

"Attack...!"

Jiang Chen roared out. He turned into a trail of light as he shot toward Lord Nether. Wu Ningzhu and the others unleashed their powerful energies and flew toward the army of demons. All of these people were extremely strong; they were all frightening existences.

With incredible speed, Jiang Chen arrived in front of Lord Nether. He waved his hand and threw out a bright beam which crushed its way toward Lord Nether.

"Hmph! A puny Combat Soul warrior, how dare you fight with me?! You are overestimating yourself!"

Lord Nether coldly harrumphed. He suddenly stretched his sharp claw forward and shattered Jiang Chen's bright beam. Not only that, the claw continued its way and grabbed toward Jiang Chen. At this moment, Jiang Chen suddenly became about three times faster than before, and swiftly dodged Lord Nether's attack like a stealthy ghost. When Lord Nether finally realized this, Jiang Chen had already arrived on top of the huge cage.

Boom!

Unleashing the True Dragon Palm, Jiang Chen forcefully tore the

huge cage apart. Jiang Chen's target wasn't actually Lord Nether, primarily, but these geniuses of the human race. As the cage had been covered with Lord Nether's special energy, no ordinary man could break it. However, it was piece of cake for Jiang Chen.

"Attack! Kill all these demons!"

The geniuses who were now free furiously cried out, and their eyes turned red. They immediately pounced toward the army of demons. Each of these now freed geniuses were the elites of the younger generation, and they all possessed incredible strength. However, as they had been imprisoned by Lord Nether, they had no way to show their mighty strength. Now that Jiang Chen freed them, they were going to vent all the anger that had built up during these few days on these foul demons.

After being imprisoned for so many days, these geniuses had suffered all kinds of humiliation and torture. It wasn't difficult to imagine what kind of hatred they felt toward these demons. One way or another, they had to vent their anger, and there was no doubt that the best way to do so was kill these demons.

Not only this, these genius had been facing what they thought to be certain death, and many of them had prepared to die. Thus, their minds were filled with despair. When they were released, it was like they had just gone through a life and death experience. A man who had just been brought back to life would attack without any thought regarding his own safety; he would possess unimaginable strength! Thus, it was easy to imagine how much damage these people would be able to inflict upon the demons.

After the young man in black clothes was freed, he didn't recklessly attack those demons like the others, but instead turned his eyes to Jiang Chen. His eyes shone brightly, as he never expected to see such an amazing genius in the Southern Continent.

As Jiang Chen was fighting Lord Nether, he didn't notice this young man in black.

The young man turned around, and with a sway of his body, he too dashed toward the demon army. His energy was extremely powerful, and he was not any weaker than Wu Ningzhu. A golden barrier appeared around his body, and he went on a rampage amidst the army of demons.

Bang, bang, bang...

Wherever this young man in black arrived, all demons would be crushed into pieces. A Combat Soul demon tried attacking him, but the young man simply punched its head, causing it to explode. He was courageous, resolute, and vicious.

Argh...

Blood was splashing in all directions within the army of demons. Painful and miserable screams were constantly sounding out. This bloody scene immediately alerted everyone; even Wu Ningzhu and the other looked at this young man in black clothes.

"Damn it, this guy is incredible, who is he? Why have I never

seen him before?"

Nangong Wentian's eyes widened.

"He is not weaker than me. I've never met anyone like this in the Southern Continent. If he really is from the Southern Continent, I should know him."

Wu Ningzhu was surprised as well.

"Let's not care about that for now. He is a human, and that means he is one of us. Once this battle ends, we'll find him and ask all the questions."

While killing some demons, Nangong Yunfan told them.

On the other side, Jiang Chen who was confronting Lord Nether had finally noticed this young man as well, and he too was taken by surprise. This young man's strength was on a level similar to that of Wu Ningzhu's, and he looked to be even stronger than the Crown Prince. However, he didn't seem to be any older than the Crown Prince. It was really rare for someone to have such a cultivation base at such a young age, and be one step into the Combat King realm.

"You actually can rip apart the cage made by me."

Lord Nether had all his attention focused onto Jiang Chen. The cage made by himself was fully covered with spatial energy, and no

Combat Soul warrior should be able to break it. However, this young man in front of him had just done that, causing Lord Nether to think highly of Jiang Chen.

“Ripping that cage apart is nothing much. I will rip you to pieces, toad.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders and said with an indifferent tone.

“Hmph! Young man, don’t talk big! Today, all of you are going to die in this Mount Nether!”

Lord Nether coldly harrumphed. Once again, his energy rose to a new level. He waved his hand, unleashing countless beams toward Jiang Chen. All these beams shone with a green light and gave off a pungent poisonous smell. Aside from carrying an extremely powerful force, they also carried a deadly poison. If they hit their target, the consequences would be devastating.

Although faced with Lord Nether’s attack, Jiang Chen still behaved as calm and steady as Mount Tai. His fist shone with a golden light, and he simply punched it toward these beams. It was a punch that carried tremendous force, like a mountain. No one really knew how much strength this punch contained.

Boom!

The surrounding space was shattered by this punch. The

seemingly simple punch had instantly destroyed Lord Nether's beams. However, the green poison came together and smeared his fist like some bone eating worms, and quickly squeezed themselves into his body. However, the scene Lord Nether expected to see disappointingly didn't play out; Jiang Chen wasn't killed by the poison. Although the poison had entered Jiang Chen's body, it didn't seem to have any effect against him.

"What?!"

Lord Nether cried out in shock. Attacking with poison was his expertise, and also where most of his confidence came from. As his poison was qualified to bear the name of nether, it simply meant that it was the king of almost all poisons. Let alone a Combat Soul warrior, even if a First Grade Combat King was attacked by his poison without any precaution, it would inflict devastating damage. However, the poison actually didn't do anything to this young man in front of him. No doubt, this was a huge blow to Lord Nether's confidence.

"Lord Nether, show me what you got! Don't say I never gave you a chance."

Jiang Chen said in a ridiculing tone. In his mind, Lord Nether would inevitably die today. As long as Jiang Chen desired his death, he could easily kill this toad in less than a minute. However, he was in no rush to kill. Not because playing with this toad was something fun, but because he wanted to give those geniuses a chance to vent their anger after being imprisoned and humiliated for so many days.

“I don’t believe you can really compete against a Demon King, and I refuse to believe you can’t be hurt by poison!”

Lord Nether was enraged. His body swayed, and he transformed back into his original form. In an instant, a 30 meter tall appeared and hovered in the sky like a large clump of black clouds. This venomous toad was incredibly ugly, and its body was covered with venomous lumps that shone in a green light. It had a pair of sinister looking eyes that seemed like a gaze from hell, and there were few who had the courage to stare right into them. The green spot on its forehead had also become much bigger.

Gua...

Lord Nether croaked at Jiang Chen. It was an awful and jarring sound. At the same time, layers of light shot out from its mouth. Each layer looked like a razor-sharp scythe, and it sliced through space as if it was butter.

With unparalleled fighting intent and a pair of iron-like fists that seemed capable of taking on the entire world; Jiang Chen simply attacked the light waves with a simply punch.

On the other side, the battle had reached a climax. Although there was a massive amount of demons, not many of them were Combat Soul demons. For Wu Ningzhu, Han Yan, and a few of the other abnormal warriors, those below the Combat Soul realm were nothing. They could take on ten, or even a hundred Combat Soul demons at the same time.

Also, as all the humans were filled with killing intent and were enraged, therefore, even though they were outnumbered, they still made the demons cry out from their formidable attack.

The young man in black kept attacking in all directions like a devil on a rampage. In just a very short amount of time, he had already killed more than 200 demons, as well as a few Combat Soul demon lords.

"Bastard, die now!"

At this moment, a man with a bulky body charged toward this young man dressed in black. This muscular man's original form was that of a lion, and his cultivation base was really strong. He was also a Late Combat Soul demon, and he was one of the eight guardians of the Demon King Palace.

Out of all eight guardians of the Demon King Palace, Jiang Chen had killed four of them in the Dancing Sun City. Today, another two had followed Lord Nether here, and this lion was one of them.

"Heavenly Dipper Wave!"

The black-clothed youngster roared out as he forcefully punched out. In an instant, a boundless, gigantic wave appeared in the sky and started violently rolling about. Numerous razor sharp energy waves were formed within this huge wave, and they sliced through the air, producing cracking sounds as it violently rolled its way toward the lion guardian.

Boom!

This young man was really fierce, truly an existence who was one step into the Combat King realm. With just this attack alone, he had knocked the lion away and caused it to let out a miserable scream and spit a mouthful of blood out of its mouth.

The young man didn't stop there. He once again leapt toward the lion and launched another attack.

At the same moment, another guardian of the Demon King Palace was also being suppressed by Wu Ningzhu. It looked like it wouldn't take long before she could completely kill it.

It was a horrifying scene! The entire Mount Nether now looked like a place that could only be found in hell. Blood and flesh was constantly flying through the air, and miserable screams and cries were constantly sounding out. The humans were in a frenzied state, and some didn't even pay attention to their own injuries, and some were already badly injured. However, all of them just kept killing the demons, even if that meant their own death.

The battle between Jiang Chen and Lord Nether seemed to have reached its climax as well. It was a gloomy battle for Lord Nether, because no matter what kind of powerful attack he launched, his enemy would easily counter it. What made him even angrier was the fact that his poison couldn't hurt him, and this young man wasn't using some kind of method to block this deadly poison either, but actually just absorbed it all. He was truly frightening.

“I refuse to believe I can’t kill a young human! Boy, you’ve really pissed me off!”

Lord Nether was completely enraged right now. The green spot on his forehead started expanding and wriggling as if something was going to burst out from it, causing anyone who looked at it to feel disgusted. This was the most venomous part of Lord Nether, and it seemed like this toad was really going to launch its most powerful attack now.

Chapter 474 – Strengthening The Morale Of Humans

The green spot was the heart of Lord Nether's poison, and every single drop of poison in his body came from there. Thus, the poison store in there was the true king of all poisons; the one that could frighten both ghosts and gods.

Gua, gua...

Lord Nether kept croaking. When the green spot finally expanded to a decent size, it simply cracked from the middle, and then suddenly!

Swoosh!

The crack looked like a third eye, and a green beam shot out from it like a fountain. With amazing speed, it quickly approached Jiang Chen's face. This green beam was made up from a greenish slime, and it smelled bad. It could even corrode the surround air, causing cracking sounds to be heard as it flew toward Jiang Chen.

This was Lord Nether's most powerful offensive skill, and it could be called its innate ability. Aside from containing a very strong poison, it also carried powerful offensive strength. If someone was hit by hit, that man would almost certainly die. Even a formidable Combat King couldn't withstanding this powerful venom.

"Perfect! True Thunderous Flame!"

Jiang Chen shouted. He waved his hand, unleashing a flaming dragon. This flame was the combination of his True Dragon Flame and True Thunder Flame, and it was capable of burning anything underneath the heavens. It was also the natural predator of all evil. When the flaming dragon emerged, it immediately covered the venom, causing it to produce cracking sounds.

Originally, the green venomous beam contained a very powerful offensive strength. It was after all Lord Nether, a Demon King's most powerful attack. However, Jiang Chen's flame was even stronger, and it immediately caused the green venomous beam to disperse. Not only that; all the impurities contained within the venom was instantly destroyed by the flame.

Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and grabbed the poison. After that, he simply opened his mouth and swallowed it.

"What?!"

Lord Nether felt as if something was stuck in his throat, and felt like the whole sky was spinning after seeing what Jiang Chen just did. His heart filled with shock, extreme shock! The guy in front of him actually extracted his poison and swallowed it, just like that! How could this be possible?!

The extracted poison was actually the source of Lord Nether's deadly venom, and it was incredibly powerful. Even a poisonous creature who carried an equally deadly poison would be unable to

absorb it. However, Jiang Chen simply just swallowed it, and he was showing no signs of being uncomfortable.

After launching such a powerful attack, Lord Nether clearly looked weaker, and his energy was no longer as strong as it previously was.

“Enough playing around. Lord Nether, it’s time for you to die.”

Jiang Chen unleashed his Azure Dragon’s Five Steps and stepped forward. In the blink of an eye, he arrived above Lord Nether and forcefully trampled upon his back.

Bam!

Argh!

Accompanied by a miserable scream, Lord Nether’s 30 meter tall body was blasted into pieces by Jiang Chen’s foot; causing a huge amount of blood and flesh to pour down from the sky. With just a single strike, the formidable Lord Nether was left with nothing but a head. However, he had yet to die, and he was miserably crying out.

With powerful killing intent, Jiang Chen pointed his finger forward like a sword. In an instant, a golden beam shot out from the tip of his finger and cut through Lord Nether’s skull, breaking the metal-like skull in half. After that, a green fist-sized demon soul flew out from Lord Nether’s skull.

Although Lord Nether was now dead, his demon soul still had its own consciousness. After it left his skull, it immediately started flying in a random direction, hoping to retreat. However, as a demon soul unfortunately had no way of attacking, there was no way it could escape from Jiang Chen. What Jiang Chen wanted the most in this battle was this demon soul-.

Jiang Chen stretched his arm forward and grabbed the demon soul. Under the scorching heat of the True Dragon Flame and True Thunder Flame, the demon soul was quickly being purified. Jiang Chen flipped his palm and placed it into his storage ring. He didn't absorb it straightaway.

"Awesome, nephew Jiang Chen is really fierce! Lord Nether's deadly poison actually couldn't harm him a bit!"

After Nangong Yunfan witnessed Jiang Chen killing Lord Nether, he couldn't help but sigh.

"Kaka, this guy is getting stronger and stronger!"

Big Yellow excitedly laughed out. Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were both smiling as well. The stronger Jiang Chen became, the happier they would be.

Lord Nether had been killed. At this moment, everyone were looking at Jiang Chen; staring at this white-clothed youngster hovering in the sky, especially those human geniuses. Every single one of them stared at him with mouths wide open in shock. Unlike

Wu Ningzhu and those from the Nangong Family, they had never seen Jiang Chen kill a Combat King, and that's why they were deeply shaken.

Aside from feeling shocked, they also felt a strong sense of gratitude. Since Jiang Chen had ripped apart the cage and released them, they also felt thankful.

“I don't think he is from the Southern Continent, he is the helper brought here by the Holy Maiden. He is truly amazing!”

“He is truly a man who has attracted Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm! The ability of a peerless monster is not something that we ordinary people can ever begin to imagine! Being able to kill a Demon King while just a Combat Soul warrior, my horizons have truly expanded today!”

“Excellent! Lord Nether is now dead, and both guardians have been killed by the Holy Maiden and that young man! It's a truly great loss for the Demon King Palace, it looks like the victory belongs to us humans!”

All the geniuses were so excited they could hardly speak. Lord Nether was finally dead, and it was an overwhelming victory for the humans today. Now that a Demon King and two guardians had died, even though there were still plenty of demons in Mount Nether, they were no longer a threat, as none of them could withstand these formidable warriors.

“Ahh! The Third Palace Master has died, we have to flee!”

“Both guardians are dead as well! We can’t defeat them, these people are too strong!”

The death of Lord Nether was a huge blow to these demons. In just a brief moment, all the demons who had yet to die quickly disbanded; they all fled for their lives, leaving Mount Nether in panic. They were afraid that if they slowed down even just a bit, they would be killed by these ferocious humans.

"Attack! Kill all of them!"

When the humans saw the demons starting to retreat, it was as if they had been injected with some stimulants, and they immediately began hunting them down. Their main targets were the demon lords (combat soul) of the Demon King Palace. The more they killed, the weaker their enemy would become.

The intense battle continued for another dozen minutes before the chaotic battlefield became quiet. Throughout the entire Mount Nether, there was no longer a single living demon. Those who could run were all gone, and those who couldn’t had all been killed. Demon corpses piled up like several small hills, and the pungent smell of blood filled the air, causing those who smelled it to feel like vomiting. The humans were all covered in blood; some of it their own, some of it from demons. Every single one of them had joyful smiles on their faces. None of them had thought this would happen. Not only had they survived what they thought

would be certain death for them, they had also killed many demons! Even Lord Nether and two of the guardians were dead! The result of this was would definitely strengthen the morale of all humans in the Southern Continent!

Chapter 475 - Profound River Palace's Palace Chief

The bloody scene could not stop the excitement these humans were feeling, especially that of those who had previously been captured. It was as if each of them had just been given a new life. The only expression that could be found on their faces was that of enthusiasm and joy. The battle was now over, and everyone were resting their eyes on this white-clothed youngster who was hovering in the sky. Aside from looking at him with worship and respect, a strong sense of gratitude was also present.

None of these geniuses knew who this young white-clothed man was, but this man was their savior. More importantly, Jiang Chen had killed Lord Nether, defeating the army of demons, and strengthened the spirit of all humans.

While everyone's eyes laid on Jiang Chen, no one noticed the young man in black clothes who stood at the back of the crowd. He bowed toward Jiang Chen, then gracefully took his leave. Only Jiang Chen saw the action of this young man. He furrowed his brows, but didn't really take it to heart.

Meanwhile, a faint golden glow was being emitted from Big Yellow's body. He had obtained a lot of benefits from this battle, as he had eaten quite a lot of demon souls and turned them into the energy he needed.

Of course, the man who obtained the most benefits was Jiang Chen. The value of a Demon King's demon soul was immense to him. If Jiang Chen absorbed this demon soul, not only would he

obtain the poison of the Venomous Nether Toad, his cultivation base would improve significantly. With Jiang Chen's current status, perhaps a First Grade Demon King's combat soul could bring him another 2,000 Dragon Marks.

Wu Ningzhu arrived in front of Jiang Chen. She was staring at him with deep affection. Who wouldn't love a man like this?

"Little Chen, many demons escaped just now. The news about Lord Nether's death will soon spread throughout the entire Southern Continent, and it will surely reach the Demon King Palace as well. In my opinion, we should rush back to the Profound River Palace now and prepare ourselves for the final battle against the Demon King Palace."

Wu Ningzhu said

"Alright, we'll do as Elder Sister Ning said."

Jiang Chen nodded his head in agreement. Wu Ningzhu was wise and experienced, and she was capable of making good decisions at critical moments. Judging from the current situation, a final all-out war against the Demon King Palace was inevitable. This was a major war between humans and demons of the Southern Continent, and Jiang Chen was here to offer his help. Furthermore, he was drooling for the demon souls of the other two Palace Masters.

Wu Ningzhu turned to the human geniuses, and with a loud voice she said, "This is Jiang Chen, the strongest warrior of the Eastern

Continent. He is here to help the Profound River Palace in the fight against the Demon King Palace. You all come from different territories and clans, and since you're free now, you can choose to return to where you came from, or follow us to fight the Demon King Palace!"

"Fight! Let us destroy the Demon King Palace! All of us nearly died because of them! From now on, my life belongs to young master Jiang Chen and Holy Maiden! Whatever you ask me to do, I will do no matter what!"

"Me too! I'm very grateful to young master Jiang Chen for saving my life! There is nothing I can offer except my strength! I will slaughter those demons with all my strength, and defend the dignity of us humans!"

"We're not leaving, we'll follow you to fight against the Demon King Palace! One way or another, we'll provide our strength for this war!"

"Demons are destroying our homes, and it's really fortunate for us humans of the Southern Continent to obtain young master Jiang's help! As a human, we have no reason to not fight in this war!"

All the geniuses were filled with righteous indignation. A deep appreciation toward Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu could be noticed from their words; an appreciation that came from the bottom of their hearts. As there was no way they could repay the kindness of

saving their lives, and with the war against the Demon King Palace approaching, they had no reason to not kill those foul enemies.

“Alright, if that’s what you want. Let us proceed to the Profound River Palace!”

Wu Ningzhu started flying in the direction of the Profound River Palace, Jiang Chen and the others following closely behind, as well as the other geniuses. As they were slower than Jiang Chen and the other mighty warriors, they quickly lagged behind. However, as some of them were disciples of the Profound River Palace who knew where it was located, they could still return without losing their way.

“Little Chen, with your help, I’m sure we can destroy the Demon King Palace. I really want to thank you.”

Along the way, Wu Ningzhu said to Jiang Chen with a sweet smile on her face. She felt that she had made the right decision when she decided to follow the Nangong Family to the Eastern Continent, and her decision to invite Jiang Chen to help her was an even greater idea. She believed that when the Palace Chief saw Jiang Chen, he would be very happy as well.

“Elder Sister Ning, do you need to be so courteous with me?”

Jiang Chen responded with a smile as well.

“You’re right. I won’t be so courteous with you in the future.”

In front of everyone, Wu Ningzhu looked at Jiang Chen with her beautiful eyes, causing him to let out two coughs and avoid her gaze. When he thought of Wu Ningzhu's vow that she had told him about, Jiang Chen's heart trembled, and he scolded himself inwardly for wanting to remove her veil.

"Wait, where is that guy in black clothes?"

Han Yan suddenly said. Only now did the group remember that they had all seen a young man in black clothes ferociously fighting in the battle just now. His strength was similar to Wu Ningzhu's, and he was already half a step into the Combat King realm, and was easily able to kill a guardian of the Demon King Palace. After the battle ended, that young man had disappeared.

"He has left."

Jiang Chen said.

"I've never seen that guy before. He's most likely not from the Southern Continent, but was accidentally dragged into the conflict here."

Nangong Yunfan said.

"That's right. That guy is not any weaker than the Holy Maiden. A man like this can't go unrecognized, and if he was from the Southern Continent, I'm sure we'd recognize him."

Tu Yi said.

“It isn’t important who he is. What matters is that he isn’t our enemy.”

Wu Ningzhu said.

After the demons of Mount Nether escaped, the news about the war swept across the Southern Continent like a raging storm. At the moment, the entire Southern Continent was in an uproar, and discussions regarding these news filled every single place. When the humans heard the news, they were instantly struck with wild joy. The Demon King Palace’s Third Palace Master had died; there were no news better than this.

“Excellent! This is truly some great news! The human geniuses have survived; they have all been rescued! Not only that, the demons have suffered a devastating loss as well! We really need to thank the Holy Maiden and the young mighty warrior!”

“Someone told me that the man who killed Lord Nether is the same guy who attracted Heavenly Tribulation in the Dancing Sun City. He disappeared after that event in the Dancing Sun City, but unexpectedly, he has come back, and he even kill a Demon King! What an abnormal monster!”

“Indeed, that young man is truly a monster. With just a Combat Soul cultivation, he was able to kill a Demon King. With the help of this mighty warrior, the Profound River Palace now has enough

strength to fight against the Demon King Palace. I believe that we, the humans are going to win this war!”

“Someone said that the Profound River Palace only has two Combat Kings, but if this young man joins in, they’ll have one more Combat King! Originally, the Demon King Palace had three Demon Kings, but after Lord Nether was killed, they were left with only two, causing their high-end combat force to be weaker than the of the Profound River Palace! So, in the upcoming battle, I’m sure they’ll be defeated! Haha, this is great...”

Across all the different regions of the Southern Continent, those who heard the news were immediately struck with great joy, and no one could suppress the excitement they felt. Ever since the war against the demons had erupted, all human cities were under constant attack from the demons, bringing huge losses to the humans. If the Demon King Palace was destroyed, humans would become the ultimate rulers of the Southern Continent, and this was something all the humans were eagerly looking forward to.

The Profound River Palace was located in the most sacred place in the Southern Continent; Profound River Mountain. It was a huge mountain range that stretched across thousands of miles; a boundless area filled with green hills and blue waters, and waterfalls of all sizes could be seen everywhere. Palace of classical style stood in great numbers, and the land was draped in a veil of mist, giving it a paradise like touch. It was truly perfectly place for cultivation.

The news of what happened on Mount Nether had spread at an

incredible speed. Before Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu arrived, the people of the Profound River Palace had learned about everything. Yesterday, when Xu Danian brought back Wu Ningzhu's message, the Palace Chief and Great Elder had been struck with great anxiousness. They were well aware of how frightening Lord Nether was, and it was not an easy task to attack Mount Nether. Even if the Great Elder went there personally, he would find it very difficult to rescue those geniuses.

But right now, in the Profound River Palace's main meeting hall, many people from the upper echelon were sitting on both sides, and each of them wore surprised and excited expressions.

An old man wearing a Daoist robe was sitting at the front of the meeting hall. He looked to be in his fifties, and he had a long, black beard, as well as a pair of bright eyes. He was the Profound River Palace's Palace Chief – Daoist Profound River. He was a frightening Second Grade Combat King, an existence on the same level as the Old Great Emperor. Sitting next to Daoist Profound River was an old man with white hair of similar age. He too had a powerful cultivation base, and spatial power could be sensed rippling around his body, a sign that he was also a Combat King. He was the Great Elder of the Profound River Palace. Although he was only a First Grade Combat King, in the Southern Continent, who would dare underestimate him?

“So, I suppose you've all heard the news. Lord Nether was killed by a man named Jiang Chen.”

Daoist Profound River said. A smile finally emerged on his face.

“Palace Chief, this is truly great news! That Jiang Chen is the man who killed four guardians of the Demon King Palace and saved the Holy Maiden, making a huge contribution to us! Also, not only did this man attract Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, he also broke through to the Late Combat Soul realm in a short amount of time. However, this isn’t the end, he actually killed Lord Nether with his Late Combat Soul strength, a truly frightening man! Now, including Jiang Chen, we have three Combat Kings, while the Demon King Palace only has two! We are clearly in an advantageous position now!”

“That’s right. Once the Holy Maiden brings Jiang Chen back, we’ll have to show him our gratitude. We inevitably need him to help us in our final battle against the Demon King Palace.”

“In my opinion, we should be proactive! We should rush straight to the Demon King Palace and annihilate them!”

Everyone sitting in this hall was at least a Late Combat Soul warrior, and each of them possessed incredible strength. Right now, they all felt a lot of gratitude toward Jiang Chen. Because of him, the Profound River Palace’s biggest problem had been solved.

“I have the same thoughts. Sooner or later, a final battle between us and the Demon King Palace will erupt, so we might as well end this war as quickly as possible, so that we can save the people of the Southern Continent from this agony. However, as for how we’re going to do it, let’s wait for Ning’er and Jiang Chen before we discuss further.”

Daoist Profound River said. With his status and from the words he just spoke, he was clearly treating Jiang Chen as the most prestigious guest of the Profound River Palace, because he wanted to discuss with Jiang Chen before decided on how they were going to deal with the Demon King Palace.

Chapter 476 - Attacking The Demon King Palace

Although Jiang Chen hadn't shown himself in front of the public, his fame had spread across the entire Southern Continent. Most people didn't know his name, and the only reason why the Profound River Palace knew it was because Xu Danian had heard his name from Wu Ningzhu yesterday.

The entire Profound River Palace was really grateful for what Jiang Chen did. No matter what, Jiang Chen had helped them greatly. Without Jiang Chen, they had no idea how they would have to deal with Lord Nether, and the Demon King Palace's evil plot would most likely have been a big success. It would have been a truly devastating blow to the Profound River Palace.

All three Demon Kings of the Demon King Palace had given the Profound River Palace a tremendous pressure. However, with the death of Lord Nether, this pressure was instantly lifted. Not only that, the Profound River Palace had started to discuss the possibility of a proactive attack; they were going to strike back against the Demon King Palace.

At the same time, it was a whole other scene in the Demon King Palace.

The Demon King Palace was located in an ancient forest within a remote mountain. It was a vast and gloomy mountain range, and powerful demonic energy filled the air. No sunlight could penetrate this thick demonic energy. This place was the heart of the Demon King Palace.

Right now, the Palace Master, Lord Zhanlang, and the Second Palace Master, Lord Baoju were both completely enraged. The two remaining guardians and a few dozen Late Combat Soul demons stood behind them, holding their breath out of fear.

“This is outrageous! That bastard! Where did that young man come from?! And how could he kill third brother?! I’ve never even heard of him before!”

Lord Zhanlang said, completely furious. He had a tall and robust body, and a golden armor could be covering his body, completely formed from his innate ability. He also had a pair of sharp wolf eyes that shone in a green color, causing him to look very frightening.

“Damn it, we had a perfect plan! If everything had carried out smoothly, we would have been able to wipe out the Profound River Palace today and rule the entire Southern Continent, making all humans our slaves! Who could have thought that this young man would suddenly emerge and kill our third brother?!”

Lord Baoju was also enraged. He had a tall and robust body that did not seem any weaker than Lord Zhanlang’s body. Lord Baoju’s original form is a Flaming Stallion, the king of all horses; an extremely rare demon.

“Palace Master, according to those demons who managed to escape, the reason why that young man could kill Third Palace Master is because he couldn’t be hurt by his poison. The Third

Palace Master's poison had no effect on him.”

One of the guardians said.

“Even if that is the reason, we can't underestimate this guy either. He is the young man who attracted Heavenly Tribulation when breaking through to the Combat Soul realm, a true peerless monster! And, with his current Late Combat Soul cultivation, he is able to kill the Third Palace Master. This tells us how formidable his strength is, so we can't judge him with normal standards.”

Another guardian said. His words boosted the morale of some, while also reducing their own courage. If he had spoken during normal times, both Demon Kings would definitely be pissed off. However, not only did they not get angry, they only furrowed their brows. Both of them were well aware of how frightening a Demon King was, and a Combat Soul warrior shouldn't be a match for them regardless of how strong he is. Even if that young man couldn't be hurt by any poison, it should still have been impossible for him to kill a Demon King. However, the impossible was just what he did. Thus, none of them could underestimate an abnormal monster like this.

“Elder brother, our advantageous position has been lost. Originally, the Profound River Palace only had two Combat Kings; one Second Grade and one First Grade, which matched you and me. However, with the death of third brother, as well as the appearance of that abnormal young man in the Profound River Palace, their overall strength is now enough to suppress us.”

Lord Baoju said in a worried manner.

“No worries. As demons, our bodies are much stronger than that of humans at the same level. I’m able to suppress that Daoist Profound River, and that Great Elder shouldn’t be a match for you either. As for that young man, I don’t believe a young Combat Soul warrior can be so heaven defying! I’ll kill him personally and avenge third brother!”

Lord Zhanlang’s eyes shone with an insidious look as he spoke in an extremely ice-cold manner.

“The Southern Continent is now in complete chaos, and the final battle between us and the Profound River Palace is inevitable. What should we do next?”

Lord Baoju looked at Lord Zhanlang.

“The humans just had a great victory, raising their morale greatly. And, with the help of that mysterious youngster, I’m sure the Profound River Palace’s confidence has been greatly boosted. Soon, they will launch an attack against our Demon King Palace. So, we’ll just wait right here; wait for them to arrive. Then, we’ll make sure they’ll never return!”

An ice-cold killing intent emerged from Lord Zhanlang’s body, causing the hearts of everyone present to tremble.

Although Lord Nether had been killed by Jiang Chen, the overall strength of the Demon King Palace still couldn’t be underestimated. A Second Grade Demon King, a First Grade

Demon King, dozens of Late Combat Soul demons, as well tens of thousands of demons; a power like this could set the entire Southern Continent on fire!

Therefore, judging from the outlook, even with Jiang Chen's help, it wouldn't be easy for the Profound River Palace to completely defeat the Demon King Palace. There would definitely be a bloody war, and the battlefield would be filled with streams of blood.

On the other side, when Jiang Chen, Wu Ningzhu and the few others arrived at the Profound River Palace, they were greeted by Daoist Profound River, the Great Elder, and the others from the upper echelons. It was the highest standard of the Profound River Palace."

"Nephew Jiang Chen, if my memory serves me correct, the Palace Chief has never personally welcomed anyone. He's really giving you a lot of face by welcoming you with such high standards."

Nangong Yunfan said with a smile. Daoist Profound River was a Second Grade Combat King, a man who stood at the pinnacle of the Southern Continent. No men in the Southern Continent could receive a personal welcome from him, and Jiang Chen was no doubt the first.

When both groups met, without any official introductions, all the people of the Profound River Palace looked at Jiang Chen's

face. None of the people here were idiots, and they all had good senses. Amongst all the people here, only one man stood side by side with Wu Ningzhu; a handsome white-clothed young man. No matter how you looked at him, his bearing or aura, he carried a domineering attitude that was unmatched. Thus, without giving it a second thought, everyone knew that this young man was Jiang Chen.

“Haha, Brother Jiang Chen, welcome to the Profound River Palace!”

Daoist Profound River generously said as he cupped his fist and greeted Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen quickly returned his greeting, "Palace Chief, thank you for having me here."

“Brother Jiang Chen, you truly have extraordinary talent! With your help, I’m certain we’ll be able to defeat the Demon King Palace. We, the Profound River Palace represent the humans of the Southern Continent to express our gratitude to Brother Jiang Chen.”

Daoist Profound River said.

“You’re welcome, Palace Chief. Elder Sister Ning traveled so far to the Eastern Continent and helped me out. Hence, it’s only natural for me to return her favor.”

Jiang Chen smiled and said.

Hearing his words, it wasn't until now that these people realized Jiang Chen was from the Eastern Continent. However, after giving it a second thought, they felt that it made sense. If Jiang Chen was from the Southern Continent, with his extraordinary talent, they would surely have heard of him.

Right after that, Daoist Profound River and the Great Elder turned their glances toward Wu Ningzhu, and they couldn't help but look at her with looks of praise. It seemed like the reason why Jiang Chen was here to offer his help was Wu Ningzhu. Indirectly, Wu Ningzhu had made a huge contribution to the people of the Southern Continent.

“Palace Chief, Great Elder, these are our friends from the Eastern Continent who came here to help. Since Lord Nether is now dead, and the moral of the demons is at the bottom, we should discuss our next move.”

Wu Ningzhu said.

“I have talked about this with the Great Elder, and we're prepared to follow up on the victory and launch a massive attack against the Demon King Palace, fighting Lord Zhanlang to the death. May I know what Brother Jiang Chen thinks about this?”

Daoist Profound River asked Jiang Chen.

“That’s what we should do. We have nothing to worry about when it comes to the Demon King Palace. Let’s take this opportunity where the demons’ morale is at the lowest to launch an all-out attack against them; it’s time to unleash a deadly blow to the Demon King Palace and kill both Demon Kings, and ultimately bring peace back to the Southern Continent.”

Jiang Chen said. If the Profound River Palace didn’t go for a proactive attack at this moment, they would have to be stupid.

“Alright, since Brother Jiang Chen has also agreed with this; let the war against the Demon King Palace begin! Everyone in the Profound River Palace is ready for battle, we can set out at any time.”

Daoist Profound River said. Although this was the first time he had met Jiang Chen, Jiang Chen’s temperament and domineering attitude had convinced him. He truly liked this young man.

Shortly after, the Profound River Palace’s army set out toward the Demon King Palace. Before Jiang Chen had arrived, the Profound River Palace had fully prepared for this. All their Combat Soul warriors were part of the army, and they were about to stand against the Demon King Palace.

The number of Combat Soul warriors on the Profound River Palace’s side far outnumbered what the Martial Saint Dynasty has brought. This was because the Profound River Palace represented all humans in the Southern Continent, and there were also a huge amount of mighty warriors who had volunteered to fight, and with the addition of those Combat Soul warriors rescued by Jiang Chen,

the army contained more than a thousand Combat Soul warriors. This was an enormous force, enough to make one's hair stand on end just by thinking about it.

With incredible speed, a gigantic golden warship belonging to the Profound River Palace flashed through the sky like a shooting star. More than a thousand Combat Soul warriors stood on top of the warship. It was an enormous army, so people would be alerted wherever it passed through.

“Look, that's the Profound River Palace's warship; they are heading toward the Demon King Palace!”

“Haha, the Profound River Palace is finally going to attack the Demon King Palace, this is great! Once they've defeated the Demon King Palace, the demons will be completely doomed!”

“Lord Nether is dead, and the demons' morale is at the bottom! With the help of that human genius, I'm sure an all-out attack against the Profound River Palace will definitely bring the Demon King Palace down, establishing a dominant position for us humans!”

All humans became excited. The Profound River Palace had launched an attack, and victory was in sight. Finally, the chaotic situation in the Southern Continent was going to end.

The Demon King Palace had prepared as well. However, the two

Demon Kings had not expected the Profound River Palace to act so quickly; it was so fast that they couldn't do anything but react according to the situation.

The golden warship forcefully blasted out from the other side of space. It descended to the sky above the Demon King Palace mountain range, dispersing the thick demonic energy that blanketed the place and let the warm sunlight shine onto this mountain range for the first time in a very long time.

Roar~

Sensing the powerful auras arriving, furious roars immediately erupted from all over the mountain range. All the demons became restless, and wild winds started crazily blowing. Powerful energies began pushing down from the sky; a blood-filled war was about to erupt!

Chapter 477 – Flaming Stallion

“Palace Master, the Profound River Palace’s warship is here!”

Within the Demon King Palace’s imperial palace, a demon suddenly shouted out.

“They are truly fast. All demons, listen to my command! Follow me and meet our enemies! I want to see how the Profound River Palace plans on attacking us, the Demon King Palace!”

With his demonic energy soaring into the sky, Lord Zhanlang’s voice filled the entire Demon King Palace mountain range like a furious clap of thunder. In an instant, demonic energies emerged from all over the place, and numerous strong demons flew out come the mountain range, causing the entire place to be packed with frightening demons. Some of these demons had even transformed into the original forms, and many of them were more than 30 meters tall.

There were at least ten thousand demons on the enemy’s side, and all of them were elite. Even the amount of Combat Soul demons was greater than that of the Profound River Palace. Countless demons filled the entire sky, stretching out more than a few hundred Li. It was a scene of an incredibly gigantic scale.

Roars echoed throughout the skies, causing the sky to vibrate. If any ordinary man was here, just these roars alone would be enough to kill him.

It was easy to imagine that once a war of this scale erupted, blood would definitely flow like rivers, and the Demon King Palace would become an embodiment of hell. The situation would be much bloodier than it was on Mount Nether.

The final moment had arrived. The deafening sound of the battle drums erupted from the Profound River Palace's golden warship. It was incredibly loud, enough to compare with the demons' roars. Finally, the enormous battleship stopped, and hovered near the Demon King Palace. It turned into a trail of light and disappeared, causing the Profound River Palace's lineup to be revealed. The four people who led this army was Daoist Profound River, Great Elder, Jiang Chen and Wu Ningzhu.

A look of excitement leaked out from Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's eyes. A battlefield of this scale was not something they had ever dreamt about. Just the sound of the battle drums and the demons' roars caused their blood to boil.

For them, being able to participate in a war of such gigantic scale was incredibly exciting. Big Yellow was no longer able to control his emotions, and he was constantly flying back and forth. Seeing this, Han Yan furrowed his brows. He was truly afraid that Big Yellow would suddenly fart. If that happened before the war began, it would be a huge problem.

Fortunately, Big Yellow's level of self-control was still high.

A brave man should always participate in a war and smear the heavens with blood. Han Yan and Nangong Wentian had never regretted following Jiang Chen. They knew that by following Jiang

Chen, their lives would never be boring, and they would never have to walk the path of cultivation by themselves. If they hadn't decided to follow Jiang Chen, how could they have been presented with the chance to participate in such a big war?

This was a war between the ones at the pinnacle of the humans and demons; it was battle of life or death. No one could show any mercy to the opponent of difference species, and the humans had to defend their position and dignity in the Southern Continent.

Lord Zhanlang and Lord Baoju stood at the front of the demon army and looked over at the Profound River Palace's army.

“Daoist Profound River, I never thought you'd have such great courage! You actually dare launch an attack against the Demon King Palace? I really don't know where you've found your confidence.”

Lord Zhanlang's eyes rest on Daoist Profound River and said with an ice-cold tone.

“Hmph! Lord Zhanlang, the Demon King Palace's days are over! Lord Nether has died, and you will follow his footsteps! When the demons decided to fight against the humans; they were destined to be annihilated!”

Daoist Profound River coldly harrumphed. He now had a great amount of confidence, and had no fear of Lord Zhanlang, who was an all-time enemy of his.

When Lord Nether was mentioned, the two Demon Kings were immediately enraged. Lord Baoju nearly instantly shouted out, "Who killed my third brother?! Show yourself!"

Big Yellow's attention was immediately attracted when Lord Baoju spoke. He couldn't help but stare at Lord Baoju with a mysterious glow seen shining through his eyes. Big Yellow spat out his tongue and licked his lips, as if he had just smelled delicious bloodline.

"He is a Flaming Stallion!! Damn it, this is my lucky day! Little Chen, help me kill this Lord Baoju! Let this master dog drink all his blood and eat his demon soul!"

Big Yellow said. He never tried to cover his voice, allowing Lord Baoju to hear him loud and clear. In an instant, two sharp lights flickered in Lord Baoju's eyes. A dog just said he wanted to eat his demon soul and drink his blood, this was ridiculous!

"Fine."

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He too had noticed Lord Baoju's original form. Although the demon soul of a First Grade Combat King would bring him tremendous benefits, these benefits just couldn't be compared to what Big Yellow would get. Big Yellow was a Dragon Horse, also a part of the horse species. He was a pinnacle existence, like a king among the species. A Flaming Stallion was a rare demon beast, and if Big Yellow could obtain its demon soul and bloodline, the benefits would be tremendous. With Big Yellow's current cultivation, it would be possible for him to just break through to the Demon King realm straightaway.

The transformation of a Dragon horse's bloodline was really fast, and no one could ever imagine that. Also, as Big Yellow was an extraordinary existence even among this rare species, even Jiang Chen couldn't predict when this dog could break through to the next realm.

"Young man, you're the one who killed my third brother."

Lord Baoju looked at Jiang Chen.

"I have no idea who your third brother is, but I did kill a venomous toad."

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. With a flip of his palm, the Venomous Nether Toad's demon soul showed up and hovered above his palm. An extremely pure energy was leaking out from it, attracting the souls of everyone who stared at it.

"Bastard!"

Lord Zhanlang was furious. He and Lord Baoju could easily recognize the demon soul hovering above Jiang Chen's palm; it definitely belonged to Lord Nether, and that could never be faked.

"Damn it, give me back my third brother's demon soul!"

Lord Baoju shouted out loudly.

Jiang Chen wasn't moved by the fury of the two Demon Kings. Instead, he actually opened up his mouth and devoured the demon soul.

This scene startled everyone, including Daoist Profound River and the Great Elder. It was really astonishing to see someone eat the demon soul of a First Grade Demon King like that. Humans and demons were two distinct species, there was a huge difference between their sources. If a human wanted to absorb a demon soul, he would have to carefully get rid of all impurities contained within, and then slowly absorb the pure energy stored inside. That's why everyone were so startled upon seeing Jiang Chen swallow the demon soul.

However, after Jiang Chen ate the demon soul, not only did he not show any signs of discomfort. Instead, his energy started rapidly rising. Since the Dragon Transformation skill had gone through two transformations, its speed of circulation had become much greater. In just a few breaths time, the demon soul of a First Grade Combat King had been completely absorbed. As Jiang Chen had expected, this demon soul had given him another 2,000 Dragon Marks, so he now had a total of 18,000 Dragon Marks. As long as he could form another 2,000 Dragon Marks, he would be able to break through to the Combat King realm.

Therefore, Jiang Chen suddenly gazed at Lord Zhanlang. The energy contained within the demon soul of a First Grade Combat King couldn't be compared to that of a Second Grade Demon King. Once Jiang Chen obtained Lord Zhanlang's combat soul, he would have a chance to break through to the Combat King realm.

However, breaking through to the Combat King realm from the Combat Soul realm was a huge leap across a gigantic gap. At that stage, it would be very difficult to form new Dragon Marks. If Jiang Chen obtained Lord Zhanlang's demon soul, even if he couldn't break through to the Combat King realm, he should be able to reach the peak of the Late Combat Soul realm. At that point of time, he would have no problem fighting a Third Grade Combat King.

"Damn it, I'm going to rip you into million pieces!"

Lord Zhanlang was enraged by Jiang Chen's action. He furiously roared out, "All my fellow demons, listen to my command; kill all these humans!"

Furious roars instantly shook the skies, and energy waves spread across the entire place like violent tsunamis. The entire mountain range was filled with intense killing intent. Countless demons were rushing toward the humans like a gigantic ocean wave.

"Attack!"

Wielding a dazzling sword in his hand, Daoist Profound River forcefully swung it toward the sky, instantly leaving a deep crack in the air. Right after that, the warriors of the Profound River Palace also furiously roared out. In an instant, they met with the demons, and thus, the intense war began.

Rumble...

The entire place instantly turned into a ruthless battlefield. Towering energy waves covered the entire sky, and spatial cracks caused by powerful attacks could be found everywhere. It was a battlefield that stretched out for more than a thousand miles.

The demons came in greater numbers, however, most of them were unable to make any impact, and were simply there to serve as cannon fodder. Although the Profound River Palace came with less warriors, they were all Combat Soul warriors; the elites of the human race. Some were also powerful geniuses similar to Wu Ningzhu, Yan Chenyu, or Han Yan.

Daoist Profound River was the first to engage with the enemy. In the blink of an eye, he and Lord Zhanlang had established a new battlefield. The two all-time enemies were immediately engaged in a fierce fight.

The Great Elder also didn't wait, and he immediately engaged in a tough battle with Lord Baoju. Now, everyone was engaged in their own battle, and only Jiang Chen was left without any opponent.

Jiang Chen helplessly smiled when faced with this situation. Initially, he planned to immediately attack and kill both Lord Zhanlang and Lord Baoju, and bring this war to a quick end. However, he didn't expect Daoist Profound River and the Great Elder to be so hot tempered. Before he could even do anything, they had already rushed to the enemies. In the end, he was left with no opponent to fight against; all alone.

Since this was the case, Jiang Chen simply relaxed. He could take this opportunity to check out Lord Zhanlang's strength. Lord Zhanlang was an extremely powerful existence even among all demons. A human of the same rank was hardly its match. Perhaps Daoist Profound River was going to be suppressed by it.

With Jiang Chen's previous cultivation base, killing Lord Zhanlang would be much more difficult than killed the Old Great Emperor. However, after absorbing Lord Nether's combat soul, Jiang Chen's strength had reached new heights. Thus, killing Lord Zhanlang would be but a piece of cake to him.

Neigh!

On the other side, Lord Baoju let out a ground-shaking cry. He had actually transformed back into his original form! It was a Golden Warhorse that was more than 30 meters tall, and he looked really magnificent. Just a casual movement from Lord Baoju could easily cause gigantic air to erupt from around its body.

The energy of Lord Baoju was too powerful. A sharp horn suddenly appeared on top of its head, and a bright beam was instantly shot out from it. The Great Elder was knocked far away from where he stood.

Puh...

The Great Elder opened his mouth and spat out a mouthful of blood. Although he was a First Grade Combat King, when compared to an existence like Lord Baoju, the difference between

them was instantly seen. Lord Baoju was a demon of a powerful species, and he had a really powerful body, making it hard for those at the same level as itself to be a match for it.

“Haha, old fool, you’re no match for me! I’ll let you witness how mighty I am!”

Lord Baoju burst into laughter as he once more charged toward the Great Elder.

Chapter 478 – Killing Another Demon King

The Great Elder turned pale with fright. He never expected Lord Baoju to be so powerful. His demonic energy soared into the sky, and his body was seemingly invulnerable, as well as his innate abilities, although the Great Elder himself was a First Grade Combat King, he was absolutely not a match for this formidable foe. When Lord Baoju brutally launched another attack, the Great Elder hastily took out his King Weapon. However, he was still pale with fright.

Conceivably, Lord Baoju's next attack would definitely injure the Great Elder even more. Of course, as a Combat King, it was extremely difficult to actually kill the Great Elder. However, if they kept fighting like this, he would sooner or later be finished.

"It's time for me to move."

Standing in the distance, Jiang Chen casually exercised his body. Then, with a sway of his body and a weird way of moving, he instantly dashed toward Lord Baoju. Within a split second, he arrived in front of Lord Baoju, the Great Elder floating right behind him.

Seeing that Jiang Chen had made his move, the Great Elder finally sighed out in relief. Although this young man was only a Late Combat Soul warrior, he had killed Lord Nether, who was even more difficult to deal with than Lord Baoju. Also, according to what Xu Danian told him, Jiang Chen had also killed a Second Grade Combat King in the Eastern Continent.

With tremendous force, Jiang Chen punched out toward Lord Baoju. His fist was fully covered with dragon scales, and it shone in a golden glow as collided with the attack unleashed by Lord Baoju.

When the dragon scales appeared on his fist, it was a sign that he was attacking with the True Dragon Palm. All of the 18,000 Dragon Marks in his body were vibrating, giving Jiang Chen enough for to easily rip a hole in space.

Although Lord Baoju was indeed very formidable, there was no way he could be compared with Jiang Chen. With just one punch, his bulky body was sent flying by Jiang Chen.

Neigh!

Lord Baoju let out a sad and miserable cry. A huge amount of blood burst out from his mouth, and one of his front legs had been broken by Jiang Chen's punch. Blood was dripping down from his leg, and even his bone was exposed.

Lord Baoju's body was extremely powerful, especially his hoof. In fact, it could be used as an indestructible weapon. However, now, a human had actually destroyed it with his fist. No one would believe it if they hadn't witnessed it themselves.

"So strong!"

The Great Elder was shocked by what he just witnessed, even crying out in shock. His eyes went wide in disbelief. He had

personally experienced Lord Baoju's mighty strength, but Jiang Chen had just severely injured him with but a single punch. The Great Elder was wondering just how much strength the body of this young man contained, as even a First Grade Demon King was no match for him. Could this young man truly be capable of killing a Second Grade Combat King?

However, it wasn't the Great Elder who was the most shocked, but Lord Baoju. Fury started seeping out from the eyes of the injured Lord Baoju. His eyes widened as he stared at this young man who had killed his third brother, a storm raging within his mind.

"Lord Baoju, I thought you threatened to kill me just now?"

Jiang Chen said in a loud voice. With a sway of his body, he once again leapt toward Lord Baoju. He stretched his arm forward and unleashed a frightening blood-red dragon claw. The True Dragon Palm came crashing down from the sky and crashed into Lord Baoju's body.

Lord Baoju tried to defend as best as he could, but there was no way he could withstand this powerful attack. Thus, half of his body was badly mutilated by Jiang Chen. The battle between these two mighty existences was completely not on equal grounds, and Lord Baoju could only be slaughtered.

"Damn it, don't waste it!"

Big Yellow was charging back and forth within the enemy army,

but when he saw Lord Baoju nearly getting ripped apart by Jiang Chen, he immediately turned into a beam and rushed over. With incredible speed, he devoured all the blood that had burst out from Lord Baoju's body.

"Haha, this is delicious..."

Big Yellow joyfully laughed out as he devoured the blood that was flowing out from Lord Baoju's body.

"Second brother!"

On the other side, a furious roar was heard from Lord Zhanlang. He quickly ditched Daoist Profound River and rushed toward Jiang Chen. Meanwhile, Daoist Profound River had long been prepared for this moment, and he would give Lord Zhanlang any chance to escape. He jumped out and blocked Lord Zhanlang, saying, "Lord Zhanlang, your opponent is me!"

A dazzling smile emerged onto Daoist Profound River's face. He had finally witnessed Jiang Chen's true strength. A young man who could easily kill Lord Baoju; it looked like the Profound River Palace would come out victorious today. With the help of Jiang Chen, a frightening existence, the Demon King Palace suddenly became as fragile as a piece of glass.

"Get lost!"

Lord Zhanlang was furious. Without hesitating, he transformed

into his original form, revealing an extremely majestic golden Combat Wolf that shone brightly. He opened his mouth and spat out a flaming beam toward Daoist Profound River.

Realizing that Lord Zhanlang was now furious, Daoist Profound River dared not neglect. In an instant, he took out a long spear and used it against the flaming beam.

On the other side, Lord Baoju kept letting out miserable cries. He had been badly injured, and under Jiang Chen's formidable attacks, he was now like an arrow at the end of its flight. Even Big Yellow could easily beat him as he was now.

With bright eyes, Big Yellow flew circles around Lord Baoju. Finally, using his head, he forcefully rammed into Lord Baoju's head.

Bam!

Big Yellow had an extremely solid head, and it could even be compared with a mighty weapon. Anyone who had been knocked down by him would wholeheartedly agree. As Lord Baoju had lost all ability to defend himself, even if he had the body of a Demon King, there was no way his head could be a match for Big Yellow's frightening head.

With this slam, Lord Baoju's head was instantly ripped open. With great speed, after Lord Baoju's head was split apart, Big Yellow opened his mouth wide and pulled the demon soul out.

Big Yellow was even more fierce and frightening than Jiang Chen was. Not only did he devour Lord Baoju's demon soul with one bite, he also carried away Lord Baoju's gigantic body and left the place.

"You guys continue; daddy here is going to enjoy his meal."

After saying that, Big Yellow turned into a golden beam and disappeared from the battlefield. This dog had obtained tremendous benefits today; unimaginable ones, and he had to find a place to properly digest what he had gotten.

The effect Lord Baoju had for Big Yellow was incredible. Even Jiang Chen was unable to imagine what kind of transformation Big Yellow would experience after fully absorbing Lord Baoju's demon soul and blood essence. Perhaps he'd be able to just break straight through to the Demon King realm.

Boom!

Right at this moment, Daoist Profound River was knocked away a few hundred meters by Lord Zhanlang's attack. An unsightly expression emerged on his face. Indeed, a human could hardly obtain any advantages when fight against a demon of the same level, unless it was someone as abnormal as Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen turned his gaze to Lord Zhanlang, his body brimming with fighting intent. He couldn't get Lord Baoju's demon soul, so there was no way he would let go of Lord Zhanlang's combat soul as well.

Using his Spatial Shift skill, Jiang Chen turned into a trail of light and reappeared in front of Lord Zhanlang.

Fury instantly emerged from Lord Zhanlang's eyes, "Damn human, you've killed my second brother and third brother! You have to pay with your life!"

Lord Zhanlang was enraged. Lord Baoju and Lord Nether had both been killed by this young man, so he was unable to suppress raging fury in his heart. He had to kill this young man in order to vent his resentment. Not only that, after he killed this young man, he also wanted to destroy the entire Profound River Palace and send all the humans who appeared here today to hell.

A layer of golden armor emerged onto Lord Zhanlang's body, and numerous golden beams shot into all directions. With just the slightest movement, he was able to rip space apart. Without hesitating, he initiated the attack and forcefully clashed toward Jiang Chen.

"Azure Dragon's Five Steps!"

Jiang Chen suddenly roared out and countered with Azure Dragon's Five Steps. He used this skill to kill the Old Great Emperor. Although the Old Great Emperor couldn't compare with Lord Zhanlang in terms of strength, but as Jiang Chen had formed another 2,000 Dragon Marks, this gap between them had been compensated for.

Therefore, there was not much different between fighting Lord Zhanlang now or the Old Great Emperor then.

Boom!

Jiang Chen was too fast. With the first step, his body stepped onto Lord Zhanlang's body, colliding with him face to face.

The contained within this step was not something any ordinary men could imagine. A huge hole was instantly formed in space as Lord Zhanlang's attack was shattered by Jiang Chen's foot. All the golden beams were destroyed, and cracks could be seen on Lord Zhanlang's golden armor. Lord Zhanlang let out a furious roar as his gigantic body was uncontrollably forced back.

"He is so strong!"

Daoist Profound River was shocked by what he saw, and felt as if he could hardly breathe. Before personally witnessing how Jiang Chen fought, he could never have imagined how frightening Jiang Chen would be. Not only had he killed Lord Baoju with ease, he could even force back the Second Grade Demon King, Lord Zhanlang! And, he was only a Late Combat Soul warrior! The existence of this young man was truly a defiance against the heavens!

Jiang Chen's actions had attracted the attention of many people. Lord Baoju was dead, and Lord Zhanlang was being forced back by him. This brought great excitement to all the humans.

On the opposite side, the demons' morale had hit rock bottom. Another Demon King had been killed, and the most formidable Palace Master was no match for this young man. No one knew how this young man could be so frightening, and that caused them to lose all hope for victory. Thus, their fighting intent diminished significantly.

Hmph!

Ignoring Lord Zhanlang's shock, Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. Once he had the advantage, he would never stop. In an instant, he took the second step.

It was an incredibly terrifying True Dragon Skill. Every step he took would pull down the sky and sink the earth.

After Jiang Chen took the second step, he simply disappeared. In the follow second, he reappeared above Lord Zhanlang's huge body.

Boom!

Without missing, the step forcefully trampled upon Lord Zhanlang's body, forcing Lord Zhanlang to let out a miserable cry that echoed throughout the entire mountain. To everyone's surprise, Lord Zhanlang's golden armor shattered into pieces, and countless stream of blood emerged from his body like fountains.

Lord Zhanlang was shaking violently. He was badly mutilated, as

if all his skin had been peeled off.

Chapter 479 - The Dust Has Settled

Lord Zhanlang's piercing scream filled the air, and every single human and demon could hear it loud and clear as his blood rained down from the sky. At this moment, regardless of human or demon; everyone had stopped moving. They stared at this scene with wide eyes, and the once chaotic battlefield instantly became quiet.

High in the sky, Lord Zhanlang's blood was dripping down from his badly mutilated body. On the other side, Jiang Chen remained floating in the sky, his eyes glowing brightly like a pair of torches. Underneath the eyes of everyone, he moved once more.

His feet trembled, and the third step was taken. With his current strength, three steps were his limits. However, this third step was more than enough for him to kill Lord Zhanlang.

Boom!

Just like how he had killed the Old Great Emperor, Jiang Chen stomped his foot onto Lord Zhanlang's head. In an instant, its gigantic wolf head exploded into a huge clump of blood mist. A golden demon soul blasted out from the broken skull, and was grabbed tightly by Jiang Chen. Using the True Thunderous Flame, he destroyed Lord Zhanlang's remaining consciousness in the demon soul, and placed it into his storage ring.

Lord Zhanlang was dead, he had been killed by Jiang Chen's incredible step! Since his head had completely shattered, his

gigantic body fell down from the sky like a mountain, and fell right onto the mountain range, creating a deep crater.

An uproar immediately rose. Everyone were shocked, and no one were able to remain calm. Killing a First Grade Demon King was completely different from killing a Second Grade Demon King.

Daoist Profound River was left speechless by the tremendous shock, and could barely breathe. As he was also a Second Grade Combat King, he was well aware of his frightening Lord Zhanlang was. However, the skill used by Jiang Chen used now was simply incredible. Daoist Profound River had no doubt that if Jiang Chen used that attack against him, he might only last until the second step.

The Great Elder and the people of the Profound River Palace were all panting for breath. All of them were staring at the white-clothed youngster, their shining with a passionate light.

He was too strong, too freaking incredible! Jiang Chen's existence had completely turned their common sense upside down, including the demons of the Demon King Palace. No one had ever thought a Combat Soul warrior could be so strong.

No wonder he could attract Heavenly Tribulation while breaking through to the Combat Soul realm. Perhaps only a peerless monster like this could possess such heaven-defying strength.

Although the war had just begun, it had already come to an end. It was meaningless to continue fighting. If those demons didn't

give up fighting, the only consequence awaiting them was death.

Daoist Profound River's eyes swept across the entire place. He looked at the frightened demons, and with a loud voice he said, "From today onwards, no major demon powers are allowed to exist in the Southern Continent. I'll spare your lives today. No, get the hell out of here."

Daoist Profound River spared the life of all the remaining demons. The Saint Origin realm was a place shared by all living beings. Thus, humans and demons both had to coexist, and this was the principle of survival. In this calamity, the humans had obtained the final victory; shaping the humans' position, making them the sole rulers of the Southern Continent. This was more than enough. Killing every single demon was not necessary, it was an act that went against the Heavenly Dao.

No demons dared object to this, and they just scurried away in all directions. Now, the Demon King Palace had vanished from this land. All three Demon Kings had been killed, and the remaining demons were no longer a threat.

The people of the Profound River Palace stormed into the Demon King Palace and took away all their precious treasures, then they set fire to everything in the mountain range, burning all to ashes. Now, everything here had become history.

The war had completely ended, and it was in a fast manner. The humans hadn't suffered any great losses in this final battle. No one would forget the courageous young man in white who had fought like a God of War. This young man who had suddenly made his

debut, just he alone had killed all of the Demon King Palace's Demon Kings. So, rather than claiming that the Demon King Palace had been destroyed by the Profound River Palace, it was actually more accurate to say it had been destroyed by Jiang Chen alone.

Together with the Great Elder and over a thousand mighty warriors of the Profound River Palace, Daoist Profound River arrived in front of Jiang Chen. Representing the humans of the Southern Continent, they all bowed deeply toward Jiang Chen.

“Brother Jiang Chen, the humans of the Southern Continent will never forget the kindness you have shown us.”

Daoist Profound Rive said with utmost sincerity and honesty, while all the others showed a deeply grateful expression. They all knew what kind of contribution Jiang Chen had made. Without him, they had no idea how many of them would have died in this war, and it would have been impossible for them to kill Lord Baoju and Lord Zhanlang.

“Palace Chief, please don't mention it. As a human, I naturally have to contribute.”

Jiang Chen cupped his fist and said. He did mean what he said. Since he had met with this event, there was no way for him to just look away and pretend as if nothing was happening. Also, he had also benefited a lot from this war, as he had gotten one First Grade Demon King demon soul and one Second Grade demon soul. Both brought him tremendous benefits. Jiang Chen would soon go to the Divine Continent, and if he could break through to the Combat

King realm before that, it would no doubt improve his strength greatly. Thus, he wouldn't be too weak when he was at the Divine Continent.

Seeing these people treating Jiang Chen as their hero, the happiest person would definitely be Wu Ningzhu and Yan Chenyu. For Yan Chenyu, her Chen Gege was the best person in her mind. As for Wu Ningzhu, she had her own reasons to be happy. Jiang Chen's mighty performance had proven her excellent judgment. At the same time, she felt happy that it was Jiang Chen who removed her veil, and not someone else.

"Since the war has ended and the victory belongs to us humans, Brother Jiang Chen, you have to be our guest at the Profound River Palace! Let me perform the duties of a host."

Daoist Profound River was in a really good mood, and he invited Jiang Chen to be his honorable guest.

"Alright. All of you can return first, I'll return later."

After saying that, Jiang Chen turned into a trail of light and flew away.

"Where is Brother Jiang Chen going?"

The Great Elder curiously asked.

"He is looking for a dog."

Nangong Wentian said with a laugh.

The crowd suddenly remembered that there was a mighty big yellow dog who carried the body of Lord Baoju away. If memory served them correct, that big yellow dog had even swallowed Lord Baoju's demon soul on the spot.

.

Indeed, Jiang Chen had left them because he wanted to find Big Yellow. This dog had swallowed Lord Baoju's demon soul, and had drank all of his blood and blood essence. He would surely need some time to digest it all. According to this dog's habits, perhaps he would simply find a place and enter a deep slumber, and that was really dangerous. So, of course Jiang Chen was worried about him.

About two thousand miles away, Jiang Chen noticed some golden lights coming from a quiet valley. As he was flying at a high altitude, those golden lights seemed dimmed. However, Jiang Chen could still sense Big Yellow's aura from those golden lights.

Without hesitating, Jiang Chen descended and landed in the valley. Indeed, he saw Big Yellow lying on a huge rock, sleeping like a baby. However, Big Yellow a very intelligent existence, and he didn't forget to place an invisible formation around his body before he went to sleep, so his safety was ensured.

Big Yellow's body was covered with golden lights, forming a huge golden cocoon around his body. Jiang Chen could clearly sense Big Yellow's aura continuously rising, and was much stronger than

before. His cultivation had reached the peak Mid Combat Soul realm, and he was just a single step away from the Late Combat Soul realm.

“This guy really got a lot of benefits.”

Jiang Chen smiled. It hadn't been long since Big Yellow swallowed Lord Baoju's demon soul, and he was now breaking through to the Late Combat Soul realm. It was easy to imagine how much Big Yellow had benefited from Lord Baoju's demon soul and blood essence.

Jiang Chen predicted that if Big Yellow could stimulate the transformation of his bloodline with the Flaming Stallion's blood essence, it was highly possible for him to break through to the Demon King realm.

"This place is not suitable for cultivating."

Jiang Chen waved his hand and unleashed a few defense mechanisms, breaking the invisible formation laid down by Big Yellow. After that, he unleashed a gentle light and wrapped it around Big Yellow, then he brought him toward the Nangong Family.

Jiang Chen didn't go to the Profound River Palace, but chose the Nangong Family that he was more familiar with instead. By doing this, he was actually doing a good deed for the Nangong Family. Although the Nangong Family was considered one of the top powers in the Southern Continent, there was still a huge gap

between them and the Profound River Palace. Furthermore, there were more than one superpower similar to the Nangong Family in the Southern Continent.

As Jiang Chen's fame was currently incredibly good, and all humans of the Southern Continent owed him a great debt of gratitude; his status was now supreme. So, when Jiang Chen didn't go to the Profound River Palace, and instead went to the Nangong Family, it was like he had told everyone he had a good relationship with them. With that, the Nangong Family's status would be improved significantly, and the Profound River Palace would pay more attention to them. This could also be considered some sort of compensation for taking away the broken part of the Heavenly Saint Sword.

Another reason was because of Big Yellow. According to Jiang Chen initial plans, once everything here was settled, he would rush back to the Eastern Continent and spend some time with his father. Then, he would continue his journey towards the Divine Continent.

However, things wouldn't always go according to his plans. Jiang Chen never expected Big Yellow to enter a deep sleep at this moment. Jiang Chen knew that when Big Yellow was sleeping, he was actually in the process of cultivation, attempting to break through to a higher level. Under this situation, he had to find a good environment for Big Yellow, a place where the natural Yuan energy wouldn't experience any violent fluctuations. If not, it would have negative impact on Big Yellow.

Returning was different from how they arrived here, as there

wasn't any Teleportation Formations, and they had to fly all the way back. It was a long journey that took a lot of time, and if he carried Big Yellow along the way, the fluctuations in the natural Yuan energy would definitely bring a negative impact to Big Yellow. Therefore, Jiang Chen would rather spend some time here and wait for Big Yellow to make his breakthrough before returning to the Eastern Continent.

In any case, the matters in the Eastern Continent had been fully resolved. With Wu Jiu taking care of everything there, he had nothing to worry about. Compared to rushing back, Big Yellow's breakthrough was much more important. If he could really break through to the Demon King realm, it would no doubt be something worthy of celebrating.

Chapter 480 - Big Yellow's Transformation

Jiang Chen's arrival overwhelmed the entire Nangong Family. Nangong Yunfan and the others of the Nangong Family upper echelons had also just returned to the family, but none of them dared show any neglect. They all came out to visit Jiang Chen. Today's Jiang Chen was no longer the same as the Jiang Chen who visited them a month ago; he was now the hero of the Southern Continent, a mighty warrior who was capable of killing Demon Kings!

For the Nangong Family, Jiang Chen's visit brought them a lot of glory.

"Nephew Jiang, welcome!"

A bright smile bloomed onto Nangong Yunfan's face. Jiang Chen didn't go to the Profound River Palace, but instead chose to visit the Nangong Family. It showed how highly he thought of the Nangong Family. Although one of the biggest reasons why he came here was his relationship with Nangong Wentian, no matter what, this was something beneficial that had no drawbacks.

"Uncle, Big Yellow needs to enter secluded cultivation. Can I get a place for him?"

Jiang Chen had taken Big Yellow with him, and had wrapped the gentlest force around Big Yellow so that he could sleep peacefully, without ever being able to notice that he was being moved around.

Nangong Yunfan had long ago noticed the sleeping Big Yellow. Initially, he thought that Big Yellow had been injured, but now he realized that Big Yellow was actually cultivating. Using sleep as a cultivation method, this truly put everyone else to shame.

“No problem! Nephew Jiang Chen, just leave Big Yellow to me.”

Nangong Yunfan said. Jiang Chen waved his hand and pushed Big Yellow to Nangong Yunfan. He believe that Nangong Yunfan would definitely give Big Yellow the best place to cultivate in the Nangong Family.

In Nangong Wentian’s courtyard, Jiang Chen, Nangong Wentian, Han Yan and Yan Chenyu, all four of them were sitting around a table, laughing and talking. A relaxed smile could be seen on their faces. It had been a long time since they were so relaxed.

The Eastern Continent and Southern Continent; all matters there had been completely settled, and all enemies had been annihilated. Jiang Chen was an invincible existence in both continents, and no one were a match for him.

“Little Chen, you’re invincible now! This is truly something worth celebrating!”

Han Yan said with a smile.

"Invincible."

Jiang Chen shook his head with a smile and said, "Being invincible here is considered nothing. My aspirations are far beyond this, and I'm guessing you all have the aspirations. After all, the Eastern Continent and Southern Continent are too small. A Second Grade Combat King is strong enough to conquer everything. However, do you guys know that a Second Grade Combat King is nothing in the Divine Continent? Not only that, even a Ninth Grade Combat King can't claim to be a big shit. In some of the superpowers, even Combat Emperors aren't considered much. There are also some families and other powers who inherited things from the ancient era; their resources are rich and powerful, and there are real Saints among them."

After listening to what Jiang Chen told them, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were struck with mixed emotions. The two men looked at each other and saw the same passionate look in each other's eyes. The Divine Continent; the heart of the Saint Origin realm, it was the place that bore the dreams of countless mighty warriors. Now, it was a place that truly attracted their eyes.

In that land, they could meet powerful Combat Kings, the predominant Combat Emperors, and even Saints who could dominate the entire world. However, both of them were still only Combat Soul warriors, and those realms seemed very far away from them.

At the moment, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian both became silent. They knew that in order for them to become mighty warriors, they would have to go to the Divine Continent. If not, no matter how talented they were, they could at most only become Combat Kings by staying here, and it would be impossible for them to obtain stronger cultivation bases. It was all because of the

difference between the regions, as well as the fluctuations of the Worldly Laws, as they greatly restrained the growth of a warrior. Thus, it was impossible for this land to produce mighty warriors like those in the Divine Continent.

“Looks like we’ll have to work harder. With our current strength, if we really travel to the Divine Continent, we’ll most likely just be some smallfries. Only when we’ve broken through to the Late Combat Soul realm, or perhaps even the Combat King realm can we travel to the Divine Continent and continue our adventure.”

Han Yan said in a serious manner. After listening to Jiang Chen’s introduction to the Divine Continent, he and Nangong Wentian realized their weakness. In fact, these two men were both elites of their generation, and they possessed extraordinary talents that no common men had; they were geniuses amongst geniuses! However, when comparing themselves to Jiang Chen, the gap immediately became clear.

“Brother Yan, you have the Ancient Divine Devil bloodline, and just like Little Yu, it’s an innate Divine Body constitution. A constitution like this will only grow stronger and stronger with time, and you actually have limitless potential. Following the continuous transformation of your bloodline, it will be incredibly easy for you to advance on your path of cultivation, so you don’t have to worry. It is very possible for you to break through to the Late Combat Soul realm, or even the First Grade Combat King realm in a very short amount of time.”

Jiang Chen told Han Yan. After that, he turned to Nangong

Wentian and said, “Brother Nan is cultivating the Ten Thousand Everlasting Elephants skill. It is an ancient skill that allows him to form the Ancient Barbarian Elephant. Once the skill becomes stronger, Brother Nan will have a limitless future as well. Therefore, with your talents, increasing your strength is actually quite simple. At least, compared to ordinary men, your path of cultivation is a hundred times easier.”

Jiang Chen’s vast experience in cultivation gave him good senses, allowing him to accurately determine the innate talent of other people. Han Yan and Yan Chenyu both had a Divine Body, and Nangong Wentian was cultivating an extraordinary skill. Thus, the innate talent of these three people could actually be compared to his in his previous life.

However, if one were to compare the three of them to the current Jiang Chen, the gap would still be huge. The mightiness of the Dragon Transformation skill was far, far beyond what Jiang Chen had first expected. His body could contain any bloodline underneath the heavens, making him extremely powerful when compared to others, even those with Divine Bodies. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had a feeling that the Dragon Transformation skill was not just a skill; he could tell that when he became able to transform parts of his body into parts of a dragon.

Not only that, after the Dragon Transformation skill had transformed twice, Jiang Chen had obtained two formidable skills as well as the True Dragon Flame. Also, when he was in Inferno Hello, he could actually control the Blood Talisman with his skill. All of this was proof of how unusual the Dragon Transformation skill was.

Jiang Chen still remembered the Blood Talisman in Inferno Hell. Initially, he planned on visiting that place once more, but since it only opened up once a year, Jiang Chen couldn't make it this time. Furthermore, Jiang Chen had a feeling that even with his current strength, he wouldn't truly be able to take the Blood Talisman. Therefore, he decided to visit the Divine Continent first, and when he had a mighty cultivation base in the future, he would return to Inferno Hell and look for that Blood Talisman, and find out about the relationship between it and the Dragon Transformation skill.

"Chen Gege, when are we going back to Eastern Continent?"

Yan Chenyu changed the topic of their conversation.

"We need to wait for Big Yellow. He has obtained a lot of benefits after absorbing Lord Baoju's demon soul and blood. We got to give him some time to digest it all."

Jiang Chen said with a smile.

"Chen Gege, I want to visit the Island of Ice."

Yan Chenyu suddenly said.

"Island of Ice? Little Yu, why do you want to go there?"

Jiang Chen asked. He did feel that something about Yan Chenyu hadn't been right these past few days, especially when things got quiet, as if something was on her mind. However, as Jiang Chen

was busy with all the battles, he hadn't had time to ask her about it. And now, Yan Chenyu suddenly said she wanted to visit the Island of Ice, so Jiang Chen felt that something wasn't right.

“Chen Gege, do you still remember the Black Ice Talisman you gave me? After I absorbed it, it has always stayed in my body without showing any signs of activity. However, during the past few days, it suddenly became restless, and began sending forth a call to me. I can sense a mysterious force from the talisman, and that force is pointing me towards the Island of Ice.”

Yan Chenyu explained, not hiding anything from Jiang Chen.

“The Black Ice Talisman is sending you a message? Little Yu, listen to me, this could be a really good thing for you! I went to the Glacier World before, and the entire dimension was created by this Black Ice Talisman. It is a mysterious talisman, and even I can't tell exactly what it is. The Ice Demon King told me that only the true inheritor of the Ice God can possess the Black Ice Talisman, and I think you might actually be that person. Once Big Yellow awakens, we'll rush back to the Eastern Continent, then I'll accompany you to the Island of Ice.”

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Since the Black Ice Talisman had recognized Yan Chenyu as its owner, it would never harm her. The Island of Ice had a mysterious history, and so did this Black Ice Talisman. Perhaps Yan Chenyu could obtain huge benefits from both the Black Ice Talisman and the Island of Ice.

“Chen Gege, I'll return to the Eastern Continent alone. You can come back once Big Yellow awakens. I want to spend some time

with my dad.”

Yan Chenyu said.

“Alright. Be careful on your way back.

Jiang Chen gently placed his palm on Yan Chenyu’s forehead and said. This little girl knew that they would soon be going to the Divine Continent, but she did not know when they would be able to return, so she wanted to spend some more time with her family. This made Jiang Chen think of his father, Jiang Zhenhai. Once he returned to the Eastern Continent, he would spend some time with Jiang Zhenhai as well, before traveling to the Divine Continent.

“Alright.”

Yan Chenyu smiled, then she flew into the sky and disappeared from the scene. With her strength, ordinary Late Combat Soul warriors were no match for her, so it was basically impossible for her to meet with any accidents along the way. Thus, Jiang Chen didn’t worry about letting her return alone.

In fact, Jiang Chen could go back to the Eastern Continent with Yan Chenyu, and let Big Yellow return by himself once he wakes up. However, as Jiang Chen knew that Big Yellow was in a most critical moment right now, he couldn’t afford to let anything bad happen to him. Thus, he decided to stay back here and take care of him.

The day after Big Yellow went to 'sleep', Daoist Profound River, the Great Elder, and Wu Ningzhu arrived at the Nangong Family. This was the first time that the Palace Chief had come to the Nangong Family, causing the entire Nangong Family to be busy. Although they knew Daoist Profound River was here for Jiang Chen, it was still of good influence to the Nangong Family.

Out of Jiang Chen's expectations, Big Yellow actually slept for an entire month. One day, an extremely thick golden beam shot into the sky. Within that bright beam, an illusionary figure of a Dragon Horse could be seen.

Chapter 481 – 19,000 Dragon Marks

It was a majestic illusionary image of a Dragon Horse. Its body was about 3 meters tall, and it was fully covered with golden scales, and it had four hooves that shone in a dazzling golden light. There was a sharp dragon horn on top of its head, and it was covered with Dragon Marks.

This was a true Divine Beast! The first one to appear in this realm for a very long time.

Roar~

A loud roar sounded out from the illusionary Dragon Horse. It was so loud that both Heaven and Earth shook. The loud noise immediately alerted everyone in the Nangong Family, including Daoist Profound River and the Great Elder who had yet to leave. They couldn't help but look at the enormous golden beam in the sky with awe.

“Heavens, what kind of Divine Creature is that?! Is that the legendary Dragon Horse? It looks so majestic!”

“Looks, isn't the source of that beam Big Yellow? Don't tell me the original form of that dog isn't a dog, but something divine?”

“This energy is really powerful, and it's still rising! Looks like he's going to break through to the Demon King realm! I never thought I'd have the chance to witness the birth of a Demon King, this is truly an honor!”

Everyone were shaken by this incredible event. None of these people had ever seen such a majestic creature before, and some had never even heard about it.

“After spending an entire month, this damn dog is finally going to break through to the Demon King realm! He better succeed, if not, I will definitely smash his head in for wasting my time for an entire month!”

A bright smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. As expected, Big Yellow had finally broken through to the First Grade Demon King realm. However, after Big Yellow reached the First Grade Demon King realm, even if Jiang Chen wanted to smash his head, it would be incredibly difficult. After a Dragon Horse became a Demon King, it would possess incredible strength, which would allow him to easily defeat a Second Grade Demon King.

Of course, Jiang Chen still had a trick up his sleeve, as he had yet to absorb Lord Zhanlang’s demon soul. Once he returned to the Eastern Continent, he would absorb it and become much stronger.

Big Yellow’s energy kept rising as he sent forth golden wave after wave.

“Damn it, this dog is indeed a mystical Dragon Horse! However, there is one thing that puzzles me... why does he look like a dog?”

Han Yan gloomily said. Actually, it wasn't just him, Jiang Chen also couldn't understand this. Even if a Dragon Horse wanted to lower his own status, he just shouldn't choose the image of a dog...

“Big Yellow has absorbed Lord Baoju's demon soul and blood essence, helping him greatly while breaking through to the Demon King realm. Now, Brother Yan and I have been ditched. Looks like I'll have to put more effort into cultivation.”

Nangong Wentian let out a long sigh. Now that Big Yellow had reached the Demon King realm, he suddenly felt a tremendous pressure.

With a solemn expression, Han Yan nodded his head in agreement. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had now progressed far beyond them, and if they didn't put in more effort, the gap between them would only become bigger and bigger.

Big Yellow's energy finally stopped at the First Grade Demon King realm, luckily. If he had reached the Second Grade Demon King realm in one go, even Jiang Chen would feel extremely depressed.

Not long after that, with his mouth wide open and tongue hanging out, Big Yellow came to Jiang Chen and Han Yan while wagging his tail. The first thing he said was, “Buddy, let's fight one on one, see who is stronger!”

Damn it!

Jiang Chen nearly coughed out blood. After wasting an entire month waiting for this bastard, the first thing this damn dog did after breaking through was challenge him. This made Jiang Chen feel sad; he suddenly felt that this was a loveless world.

“Let’s do it buddy! This master dog will be very careful, and I won’t make you feel any pain!”

Big Yellow pride fully said. After becoming a First Grade Demon King, his confidence had skyrocketed. He now felt as if he was the strongest existence underneath the heavens, and that only Jiang Chen who was also number one underneath the heavens could fight him.

"Damn you, looks like your skin has become itchy again!"

Clenching his teeth tightly, Jiang Chen rolled up his sleeves and flew into the sky. Without saying anything else, he immediately threw a punch toward Big Yellow. He knew that this dog had thick skin and strong muscles, and especially his head; nothing seemed to be harder than it. Thus, he didn’t show any mercy when attacking.

Wakaka...

Seeing this, Big Yellow joyfully laughed out as he rammed his head into Jiang Chen’s fist.

Boom!

A loud explosive sound echoed throughout the entire sky, and the space was ripped apart by this tremendous force.

Bam, bam, bam...

“Fuck, this damn dog’s head is still so tough!”

“Damn it! Buddy, don’t hit this master dog’s handsome face!”

"Ouch! How dare you bite my ass!"

Under the eyes of countless people, the human and dog duo fought in the sky above the Nangong Family. The fight lasted for half an hour, and no clear winner could be determined. Of course, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow only fought each other with fleshly strength. Jiang Chen never unleashed any combat skills, and Big Yellow didn’t use any of his innate abilities. They were after all having a friendly match, and it was impossible for them two of them to engage in a real battle. Furthermore, if they fought for real, with their strength, the entire Nangong Family would instantly be turned upside down.

On the same day, Jiang Chen didn't want to delay any longer and prepared to leave for the Eastern Continent.

Outside of the Nangong Family, Jiang Chen, Han Yan, Nangong

Wentian and Big Yellow were hovering in the sky. Nangong Wentian had informed his family that he would follow Jiang Chen to the Divine Continent. With their talent, they would definitely have a bright future in the Divine Continent.

Nangong Yunfan had no objections regarding his son's decision. As a father, of course he felt happy that his son was aiming for something bigger. He also trusted Jiang Chen.

"Dad, we're leaving now."

Nangong Wentian bowed toward Nangong Yunfan, then he left together with Jiang Chen.

After flying for a short distance, a figure suddenly chased up from another direction. She was Wu Ningzhu.

"Elder Sister Ning, I thought you had returned to the Dancing Sun City?"

Jiang Chen smiled upon seeing Wu Ningzhu. The two men and dog quickly distance themselves and gave space for these two people, while Nangong Wentian started nagging about Jiang Chen's good fortune.

"I've told my dad I'm going to the Divine Continent with you."

Wu Ningzhu said

"Alright."

Without giving it any thoughts, Jiang Chen agreed. He knew what Wu Ningzhu's goals were, so he had no reason to stop her. One way or another, Wu Ningzhu would travel to the Divine Continent, and not only that, Jiang Chen would also help her complete her goal.

Only Jiang Chen knew how powerful the family Wu Ningzhu was going to face was. It was the frightening Gu Family, and its mightiness was not something Wu Ningzhu could imagine. If Wu Ningzhu wanted to accomplish her goal by herself, perhaps that would be more difficult than climbing the heavens.

Wu Ningzhu was startled by the quick reply, then a joyful expression emerged. She said, "Little Chen, are you going to help me?"

Wu Ningzhu eagerly looked at Jiang Chen's face, a strong desire apparent in her eyes. She needed a reason to follow this man.

"Yes, I'll help you."

Jiang Chen nodded his head. He hadn't told Wu Ningzhu anything about the Gu Family, as he didn't want to put too much pressure on her. After all, Wu Ningzhu was only a Combat Soul warrior.

The three men and a dog group became four humans and a dog. Along their way, Jiang Chen told them many things about the Divine Continent. Of course, he only told them about the rough territory of the Divine Continent, and didn't touch on any people. If not, it would be really hard for him to explain why he knew those people. Also, those people he knew a hundred years ago, perhaps the Divine Continent was no longer the same as he once knew. Those Great Saints he knew might already have ascended to the Realm of Immortals.

With their current speed, it didn't require them half a month to travel to the Eastern Continent, the time was shortened by half. Along their way, Jiang Chen absorbed Lord Zhanlang's demon soul. As expected, it was extremely difficult for him to break through to the Combat King realm, and it was more difficult to form new Dragon Marks, as each new Dragon Mark require more energy than the previous.

Jiang Chen now had a total of 19,000 Dragon Marks in his body, and he was really close to the Combat King realm. According to Jiang Chen's estimation, it would only take him another Second Grade Demon King's demon soul to break through to the Combat King realm. For him, what he needed was energy, as there were no bottlenecks he needed to break through. In order to break through to the Combat King realm, one would need to comprehend Spatial Laws, but as Jiang Chen was already familiar with that, there was no need to learn it again.

Sensing that Jiang Chen's aura had become stronger, Big Yellow couldn't help but murmur, "What an abnormal monster."

"What? Big Yellow, do you want to fight with me again?"

Jiang Chen said with a challenging tone.

"Get lost, this master dog is not interested!"

Big Yellow was no idiot, he knew he couldn't find any advantages if he fought Jiang Chen now.

A few days later, Jiang Chen and the group returned to the Black Sect. The situation in the Eastern Continent was now peaceful, and Wu Jiu had become the new Emperor of the Martial Dynasty.

The overall strength of the Black Sect wasn't that powerful, but it was an existence that no one in the Eastern Continent dared to offend. Wu Jiu had planned on positioning the Black Sect as the number one sect of the Eastern Continent, making it the symbol of all sects in the continent.

When Han Yan and Nangong Wentian returned, they both immediately went to cultivation. As for Jiang Chen, the day after he returned, he brought Yan Chenyu to the Island of Ice.

Chapter 482 - Ice Sculpture Of The Fairy Maiden

Jiang Chen and Yan Chenyu left the Black Sect together with Big Yellow. Han Yan and Nangong Wentian were still cultivating, and so was Wu Ningzhu. They all wanted to increase their strength before going to the Divine Continent. They all knew what kind of place the Divine Continent was, and the Eastern and Southern Continents could not compare with it. Though they were geniuses, mighty warriors here, at that place, it wouldn't be the same.

Above the mountain range outside of the Black Sect, two humans and a dog were seen hovering in the sky.

“I'll use the bronze plate to locate the Island of Ice's current position.”

Jiang Chen said. The bronze plate was a truly precious treasure for Jiang Chen, and he would have to use it to reach the Divine Continent later on. The distance between the Eastern Continent and Divine Continent was too great, the distance between the Southern and Eastern Continents paled in comparison. Even if a Combat King was to repeatedly used Spatial Jump, it would take at least one month to arrive. As Jiang Chen couldn't yet use Spatial Force, it would take him at least three months to travel to the Divine Continent.

Jiang Chen was able to kill Combat Kings with his frightening strength. However, if it came to a long distance pursuit, even if he combined the Nine Phantom Wolves and the Spatial Shift skill, he still couldn't compare with the speed of a Combat King could use

Spatial Jump.

However, since there was an ancient Teleportation Formation on the Island of Ice, he could just use that to travel to the Divine Continent.

"Chen Gege, we don't need that."

Yan Chenyu showed Jiang Chen a mischievous smile.

After that, under the surprised eyes of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, Yan Chenyu's finger suddenly started shining. Then, a transparent talisman that resembled a crystal appeared.

Yan Chenyu casually tossed it forwards, then it transformed into a doorway.

"The Black Ice Talisman can lead us straight to the Island of Ice, regardless of the distance."

Yan Chenyu said.

Staring blankly at the doorway in front of them, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow couldn't help but feel mixed emotions. Especially Jiang Chen. He lowered his head and looked at the bronze plate. He had a feeling that compared to the Black Ice Talisman, the level between these two items was really huge.

"This thing is much more amazing than your broken bronze plate!"

Big Yellow joyfully said.

"Indeed, it is amazing."

Jiang Chen nodded his head in agreement. The bronze plate could only let him vaguely sense the location of the Island of Ice, and he needed to travel to it before he could open up the entrance to the Island of Ice. Yan Chenyu's Black Ice Talisman was more powerful. No matter where they were, it could instantly bring them to the island.

"I only learned of this function recently. Let's go."

After saying that, Yan Chenyu entered the illusionary doorway. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow followed after, then, the trio disappeared into the doorway, and it instantly vanished. The Black Ice Talisman turned into a light beam and returned to Yan Chenyu's body.

Swoosh~

With a few flickers of light and dark, the scene in front of them changed. The trio appeared in a boundless world of glaciers. As Yan Chenyu possessed the Nine Yin Meridians, which meant she had a Nine Yin Body, the colder the place, the better it was for her cultivation. Meanwhile, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow immediately

felt a shiver striking their bodies upon entering the world of glaciers.

However, these two fellows were both powerful, their blood and qi even more so, and their bodies were filled with pure Yang energy. Thus, they had no fear of the ice-cold weather in here. With a slight shoo, they quickly adapted to the extreme temperature.

"Where is this place? Why are there so many glaciers?"

Big Yellow ran his eyes around the place and was shocked by what he saw. He never came to this place when he previously was at the Island of Ice.

"This is the place where I found the Black Ice Talisman and subdued the Ice Demon King."

Jiang Chen explained to Big Yellow. Back then, it was the call of the Heavenly Saint Sword that brought him here. Not only had he found a broken piece of the Heavenly Saint Sword, he had also obtained the Black Ice Talisman and subdued the Ice Demon King. He never thought he'd visit this place again. The bronze plate brought him straight to the ancient black altar, and Yan Chenyu's Black Ice Talisman brought them straight to this glacier world.

"This place is so beautiful!"

Yan Chenyu's eyes lit up, as if she had just seen the most

beautiful place underneath the heavens. She threw her glance over to the boundless world of glaciers and stared at the tall ice mountain, her mind filled with joy and relaxation.

Roar~

Suddenly, deep roars echoed throughout the world of glaciers. After that, more and more roars could be heard, and powerful Ice Demons started appearing from all directions, approaching them. These Ice Demons had found intruders, so they immediately rushed over to them.

"Damn it, how come there are so many Ice Demons here?"

Big Yellow couldn't help but roll his eyes. All Ice Demons had ugly faces, and their appearance looked exactly the same as the Ice Demon King, so Big Yellow could instantly recognize them.

"All these Ice Demons are immortal. Little Yu, let the Ice Demon King out."

Jiang Chen told Yan Chenyu.

Yan Chenyu nodded her head. She waved her hand, causing the Ice Demon King to appear following a flash of bright light. When it realized it had returned to its home, it joyfully roared out.

Roar!

With the roar of the Ice Demon King, all the Ice Demons became excited. Their kind had just returned, causing them to roar even louder.

“Ice Demon, dismiss all these Ice Demons, and don’t make any more noise. You can’t afford to disturb the cultivation of the Ice God’s inheritor.”

Jiang Chen said to the Ice Demon King in a cold manner.

Jiang Chen’s words caused the Ice Demon King to tremble. Without hesitating further, it once again let out a loud roar. When the Ice Demons received its command, they immediately began retreating, and soon disappeared without a trace.

“Little Yu, try and use the Black Ice Talisman, see if you can sense anything here.”

Jiang Chen reminded Yan Chenyu.

"En."

Yan Chenyu nodded her head, then gently closed her eyes. Aside from sensing the Black Ice Talisman’s becoming even more restless, she could clearly feel a guiding force coming from the talisman, causing her to turn her glance toward a different direction.

Wearing a pure white dress that fluttered in the wind, Yan Chenyu gracefully began flying toward the depths of the glacier world like an fairy. Jiang Chen, Big Yellow and the Ice Demon King followed behind closely, not making a single noise, scared that it would distract Yan Chenyu.

Soon, Yan Chenyu came to a freezing pond. It was the same pond where Jiang Chen had found the Black Ice Talisman, but it was different from previously. The pond was now completely frozen; a huge chunk of ice.

“It was previously a pond completely filled with freezing water, but since I took away the Black Ice Talisman, it is now completely frozen.”

Jiang Chen explained. Obviously, it was because Jiang Chen had taken away the Black Ice Talisman that the pond had become completely frozen. Aside from that, there was no other reason for why it would become like this.

Yan Chenyu didn't say anything. She took a step forward and simply started hovering above the frozen pond in a sitting position. The talisman emerged from her body and hovered above her head.

Buzz...

After that, the Black Ice Talisman began shooting out cold beams. The scene resembled a heavy downpour, and it fully covered Yan Chenyu.

It was an extremely magnificent scene. An fairy showering in the heavy downpour, sitting with legs folded and eyes closed; her flawless appearance made her look extremely beautiful, enough to suffocate one just by looking at her.

Yan Chenyu possessed a unique type of beauty; a king that sent forth an undefinable attraction.

"What is Little Yu doing now?"

Big Yellow whispered.

"I have no idea. The Black Ice Talisman is a mystical object, and I have no understanding about it at all. Also, I learned about her Nine Yin Meridians from an ancient book, and if this Black Ice Talisman really has something to do with the Ice God, then I think Little Yu is most likely the true inheritor of the Ice God mentioned by the Ice Demon King."

Jiang Chen said.

"I think Little Yu will obtain a lot of benefits here."

Big Yellow guessed.

"That's for sure. Let's just wait and see, if she needs any help, we'll be able to move at once."

Jiang Chen kept his eyes on Yan Chenyu. Whether or not Yan Chenyu could obtain any benefits, he would have to guarantee her safety.

During the next three days, Yan Chenyu just kept sitting quietly on the frozen more. More and more ice-cold rain emerged around her body, and on the fourth days, some changes finally occurred above the frozen pond.

Buzz...

Ice-cold beams started emerging from the pond. They first entered the Black Ice Talisman, and through it, they soared into the sky above. However, they didn't disappear after that, but instead began merging together.

When more and more ice-cold beams gathered together, they slowly took the shape of some glaciers.

Three days later, the countless ice-cold beams had actually formed into an illusionary statue. It was a statue made completely from ice, and it was at least 300 meters tall. It resembled a tall mountain.

Buzzing sounds lingered in their ears as more and more ice-cold beams appeared and covered Yan Chenyu. She was now no longer in sight. However, the statue's appearance was getting more clear now, and it resembled Yan Chenyu's exact look!

“It looks like Little Yu! Little Yu has turned into an ice statue!”

Big Yellow said in shock.

Plop!

The Ice Demon King instantly kneeled down and started making some sounds. Although Jiang Chen and Big Yellow had no idea what it was trying to say, they could clearly feel the excitement contained within its voice. The 30 meter tall Ice Demon King was trembling violently as it repeatedly kowtowed toward the ice statue.

Another two days later, the ice statue had taken its final shape. It was a fairy maiden sitting with her legs folded and eyes tightly shut. A near 300 meter tall ice statues that looked incredibly majestic!

The ice statue had completely covered the entire frozen pond. The Black Ice Talisman and Yan Chenyu had disappeared from their sights, as if they had completely merged with the ice statue. Thus situation caused Jiang Chen to worry. Though he was once the greatest Saint underneath the heavens, he had never encountered anything like this before.

"What is going on?"

Big Yellow was puzzled by the situation, while the Ice Demon

King was still kneeling in front of the ice statue, kowtowing.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows, completely clueless regarding this situation.

Swoosh!

Right at this moment, a bright beam suddenly emerged from the ice statue. It was a dazzling light, and it soon turned into Yan Chenyu. Although she looked the same as previously, Jiang Chen sensed there was something different about her.

Chapter 483 - Before Leaving

Yan Chenyu had come out from the ice statue, but Jiang Chen could clearly sense that her aura was still residing within the ice statues, as if she had never come out from it. This was a truly bizarre feeling.

"Little Yu, what is going on?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"Chen Gege."

Yan Chenyu responded. She arrived in front of Jiang Chen, then stretched out her jade-like palm and placed it on top of Jiang Chen's palm. He then shut his palm, grabbing hold of her. Jiang Chen felt nervous, as if Yan Chenyu would leave him at any time if he didn't grab her tightly.

Sensing Jiang Chen's nervousness, Yan Chenyu felt a warmth in her heart. With a smile on her face, she said, "Chen Gege, don't panic, Little Yu is fine."

"Chen Gege, Little Yu is afraid I can't go to the Divine Continent with you. I have the most suitable place to cultivate myself."

Yan Chenyu said.

"You've decided to stay here?"

A sudden realization struck Jiang Chen. He raised his head and stared at the ice statue of the fairy maiden.

"Yes. The Black Ice Talisman has completely merged with me, and I'm going to receive the Ice God's inheritance. So, I'll be staying here. I need to become stronger so that I won't be a burden to Chen Gege."

Yan Chenyu then said with a serious expression, "Little Yu understands. Chen Gege is an unrivalled hero, the greatest man in this world, and you still have a very long road ahead of you. Little Yu is Chen Gege's woman, and I don't want to become a useless burden. Little Yu wants to become someone of use to Chen Gege, not someone who always needs you to protect me. The Ice God is just a name; it's a supreme existence, and I'm going to accept its inheritance. Chen Gege is going to the Divine Continent in search for a better place to cultivate, and the same goes for Little Yu. This is the best place for Little Yu to cultivation. I'll pour in all my effort to cultivate her, and one day, I will go to the Divine Continent and find you all."

Yan Chenyu kept staring at Jiang Chen's face with her beautiful eyes, as if she wanted to carve this face deep into her heart. Everything she had today was given by this man; this man whom she loved. She didn't want to separate from him, but she had no alternative. It was just like she said; she didn't want to become a burden, but someone useful; someone who could assist Jiang Chen in the future.

Hearing what she said, Jiang Chen couldn't help but let out a long sigh. He was well aware of how much Yan Chenyu loved him. However, receiving the Ice God's inheritance was something really beneficial for her, and Jiang Chen had no reason to stop it. If this rare opportunity was missed, perhaps it would be forever gone.

It was as Yan Chenyu had said; this place was a perfect place for her to cultivate. The benefits of cultivating here were much greater than it would be in the Divine Continent for her. Therefore, no matter how unbearable it was, Jiang Chen had to agree with her decision, let alone the fact that Yan Chenyu had made this decision so firmly.

“Sigh... Life without Little Yu will be boring.”

Big Yellow shook his head and sighed.

“Puppy dog, don't be sad. This is just temporary, I'll come back soon.”

Yan Chenyu patted Big Yellow's head. She was the only person who could call Big Yellow puppy dog and pat his head without making him pissed.

“Little Yu, god lucky! If you really become an Ice God; that would be awesome!”

Big Yellow started laughing. He was no idiot, he could easily tell how important this opportunity was for Yan Chenyu.

“If this is what you want, Little Yu, you should stay here. Since you have obtained the Ice God’s inheritance, you have become the master of this place, and this place is completely safe for you. I’ll be able to leave with a peace of mind.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Chen Gege, although Little Yu won’t be by your side, Elder Sister Wu will still be with you. I feel at ease with her taking care of you. Elder Sister Wu is very beautiful, and she loves you from the bottom of her heart; Little Yu can tell this. However, when you’re at the Divine Continent, I won’t allow you to mess around with other girls! If not, Little Yu will be very mad!”

Yan Chenyu curled up her lips, then waved her tiny fists at Jiang Chen while warning him.

Jiang Chen immediately began sweating upon hearing that. He really wanted to say that there was nothing between him and Wu Ningzhu, but when he remember Wu Ningzhu’s vow, he chose to keep his mouth shut. It looked like he was destined to have two wives in this life.

“Alright, Chen Gege, Little Yu is going to continue cultivation. Once you’ve returned, don’t just leave; spend some time with father-in-law. Also, tell my father about what happened with me, and ask him not to worry about me.”

After she finished speaking, Yan Chenyu turned around and

walked back toward the ice statue, then turned into a beam and disappeared. Raising their heads, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow stared at the enormous ice statue, unable to move their eyes away from it for a very long time. They never predicted that after coming to the Island of Ice with Yan Chenyu, they would have to leave her.

After a long period of time, Jiang Chen finally retracted his eyes from the statue, then said with an indifferent voice, “The path of cultivation is not an easy one. Everyone has their choices, and this is what Little Yu has chosen for herself; this is her destiny.”

"That's right, we should feel happy for her."

Big Yellow said in a serious manner. He rarely behaved like this.

“Ice Demon, stay here and protect your master; never neglect your duty in any way.”

Jiang Chen turned to the Ice Demon King and said.

The Ice Demon King hastily bowed deeply toward Jiang Chen, expressing its determination.

After that, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow left the Island of Ice. The duo left with a heavy heart. Jiang Chen had always wanted to return to the Divine Continent, and the time was finally here. However, he had to depart with many of those precious to him before that. Yan Chenyu was just the first, as he still had his family here.

Jiang Chen quietly returned to the Black Sect without alerting anyone. Within the Black Sect, there was a very special and noble place; a courtyard, and it had been personally constructed by Daoist Black for Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun at the best location.

The two men lived together. Aside from daily cultivation, they spent the rest of their time drinking and playing chess; living a casual and relaxed life.

After Jiang Chen returned, he used the Great Soul Derivation skill and sensed the auras of Han Yan and Nangong Wentian. He found out that both men were now at the peak of the Mid Combat Soul realm, and just a single step away from the Late Combat Soul realm.

Judging from their current status, it would at most take them another month to reach the Late Combat Soul realm, and that would be the time for them to leave the Eastern Continent and travel to the Divine Continent.

During this last month, Jiang Chen had decided not to go anywhere. He wanted to stay back and spend time with Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun, enjoying the last moment of family bonding.

Within the courtyard, Jiang Chen, Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun were sitting around a stone table, drinking wine underneath the moon. The wine they were drinking was all that

remained from Guo Shan's fine wine.

“Brother, you've really given birth to a good daughter! With Little Yu now receiving the inheritance of the Ice God, I'm sure here future achievements will be limitless, congratulations!”

Jiang Zhenhai raised his cup toward Yan Zhanyun and said, a big smile visible on his face.

“Without Chen'er, there would be no Little Yu, and the Yan family would have vanished by today. Therefore, it is you, brother Jiang who has a good son!”

Yan Zhanyun said with a laugh. He and Jiang Zhenhai were both very joyful. They had just been some tiny existences in the Red City region, they had never dreamt that they would one day sit together at the pinnacle of the Eastern Continent, cheerfully drinking and talking; it all seemed like a dream for them.

"Let's not keep mentioning your daughter or my son, we're a family!"

Jiang Zhenhai said.

“Dad, this is Nine Solar Holy Water prepared for you and father-in-law, they can bring great benefits to your constitutions and talent. With it, you'll be able to break through to the Combat Soul realm in a very short amount of time.”

Jiang Chen took out a jade pot filled with Nine Solar Holy Water that he had purposely prepared for both of them. Jiang Chen didn't wish for his father to become a mighty warrior who shook the heavens, but he tried his best to improve his father's cultivation. The path of cultivation was a long journey, and warriors did eventually die. Only by having a stronger cultivation base could one have a longer lifespan. Jiang Chen's lifespan would no doubt be very long in the future, and he didn't want to see his father walking toward death because of a short lifespan. For all warriors, the only method to prolong their lifespan was to keep improving their cultivation base.

Nine Solar Holy Water was able to improve the talent of both these men, especially Jiang Zhenhai. Using it together with the Profound Origin skill, he would have limitless achievements in the future.

“Chen'er, you've leaving us, right?”

Jiang Zhenhai put away the Nine Solar Holy Water and asked with a smile. He had heard rumors recently.

“Yes, dad. I have made all the preparations, and I will leave for the Divine Continent in one month from now.”

Jiang Chen said. This was a fact that no one could change. He had to go to the Divine Continent, as he had much needed to do there.

"You have my support. I'm proud of you."

Jiang Zhenhai patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder. Even though he felt it was unbearable to part with his son, he understood that with his son's current abilities, staying in the Eastern Continent was meaningless. All men naturally wanted to get ahead, and a genius like Jiang Chen was destined for greatness. Sooner or later, he would soar through the heavens.

"Chen'er, we have no idea what the world out there is like, but I'm sure it's full of risks. You have to be extra careful when you are in the Divine Continent."

Yan Zhanyun reminded.

"Father-in-law, don't worry, I know what to do."

Jiang Chen nodded his head. The care these two men showed him warmed his heart, something he had never experienced in his previous life.

One month of time was short, and it nearly flashed by in the blink of an eye. During this month, Jiang Chen had never left the courtyard. He spent every day drinking and playing chess with Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun, truly enjoying a peaceful and relaxed life for one month. Jiang Chen truly cherished these days. It would be impossible for him to have such days after traveling to the Divine Continent.

One day, Han Yan and Nangong Wentian both broke through to the Late Combat Soul realm, and Wu Ningzhu concluded her secluded cultivation as well. Utilizing her noble bloodline

inherited from the ancient era, she broke through the bottleneck and became a First Grade Combat King. She was the youngest Combat King of both the Eastern Continent and the Southern Continent; a true genius.

Chapter 484 – Spatial Tunnel's Fracture

Early in the morning, outside of the Black Sect, a large group of people had gathered at the scene, and were divided into two sides. On one side were four humans and a dog, while the other side had the strongest warriors of the Eastern Continent.

These five were Jiang Chen, Wu Ningzhu, Han Yan, Nangong Wentian, and Big Yellow. Today was the day of their departure, and the group was about to travel to the heart of the Saint Origin Realm, the Divine Continent! No one knew when they would return.

On the opposite side was Wu Jiu and Wu Lang, who stood side by side with Jiang Zhenhai and Yan Zhanyun. Behind them were the upper echelons of the Black Sect and Martial Dynasty. All of these people were staring at Jiang Chen with passionate eyes.

The strongest men of the Eastern Continent had gathered here; all belonging to the upper echelon were present. It was an honor for them to bid their farewells to Jiang Chen.

"Brother, be careful when you reach the Divine Continent."

Wu Jiu took a step forward and patted Jiang Chen on the shoulder. He had known for a very long time that Jiang Chen was a dragon hiding in deep water. In no way could the Eastern Continent hold him back. A man like this could only fly higher in the vast sky.

“Brother Jiu, I’ll leave everything here to you. I hope you can look after the Jiang Family and Black Sect.”

Jiang Chen said in a serious manner. He didn’t want anything bad to happen to the Jiang Family. Although no one in the Eastern Continent had the guts to touch the Jiang Family now, he still wanted to remind Wu Jiu.

“Brother, rest assured. I promise with my life that in the entire Eastern Continent, your father’s status will be the highest. Even when he comes to the Martial Dynasty will he receive the highest degree of welcome.”

Wu Jiu promised. This was a promise made by a Combat King, an Emperor! Underneath the heavens, only Jiang Chen could make Wu Jiu promise him something.

At this moment, Guo Shan also walked out from the crowd. With a smile on his face, he said, “Brother, I feel like I’m dreaming right now. I hope that when we next time meet, your name will have been heard by the entire Saint Origin realm.”

A bright smile covered Guo Shan’s face. He was indeed very happy. Remembering the first time he had met with Jiang Chen, it felt just like a dream. He never thought that the little outer circle disciple would grow so quickly, and change the entire power structure of the Eastern Continent in such a short amount of time.

Thinking back, from when Jiang Chen defeated Nanbei Chao, annihilated the Shanguan Clan and Myriad Sword Sect, and

lastly, the Martial Saint Dynasty; the time had passed by quickly. And, ever since Jiang Chen first arrived in the Qi Province, the Eastern Continent had been in a constant turmoil.

He was simply a chaotic devil. It wasn't difficult to imagine that once Jiang Chen arrived at the Divine Continent, a tremendous storm would rise. A man like him, no matter where he went, his name would be heard by many.

“Brother, you better brew a lot of wine! When I come back, I want to drink plenty!”

Jiang Chen said with a smile on his face.

“Don't worry. Although my cultivation and alchemy skills are nowhere near you leave, you can't beat me when it comes to brewing wine! Of course, your older brother I don't have the ability to brew it with more Energy Spring Water.”

Guo Shan said. He suddenly remembered the time when Jiang Chen drank Energy Spring Water like it was wine. That made him frustrated.

“Big Bro Jiang, after you leave, it'll be a long time before we can meet again.”

Yu Zihan said with a sigh.

“Zihan, put more effort into your cultivation. I'll be waiting for

you in the Divine Continent.”

Jiang Chen patted Yu Zihan on the shoulder. Yu Zihan was now an Early Combat Soul realm, and it would be hard for him to find a match in the younger generation. However, when compared to Jiang Chen and the others, he was still far behind.

"Don't worry! Sooner or later, I will travel to Divine Continent as well!"

Yu Zihan said with a serious question. Jiang Chen had let him know that there was a vast world out there, and he had prepared himself. Once Jiang Chen left, he would pour all his effort into cultivation, fighting to improve his cultivation as quickly as possible.

After all the talking had come to an end, the sun had already risen. The last man to say farewell was Jiang Zhenhai.

Jiang Chen bowed deeply toward Jiang Zhenhai, "Dad, take care."

“Well, go on. Don't worry too much about this place once you're away.”

After he said that, Jiang Zhenhai turned around, causing his back to face Jiang Chen. The people in front of Jiang Zhenhai could clearly see tears in his eyes, causing them to feel emotional as well. Jiang Chen was everything in this old man's heart, and having to

depart like this naturally didn't feel good for the old man.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything. He slightly lifted his robe, then he slowly kneeled down and kowtowed three times. After that, he flew into the sky and left, not turning his head back.

There would always be sad moments in one's life, and departure was amongst those. Jiang Chen didn't want to be too sad, so he determinedly left.

Wu Ningzhu and the others quickly followed after him. They knew Jiang Chen's heart was heavy at the moment, so no one said anything.

Without talking along the way, the group quickly flew to the depths of the ocean. Jiang Chen once again took out the bronze plate.

"Once we get to the Divine Continent, this thing will no longer be useful."

Jiang Chen stared at the bronze plate in his hand. Although it was the key to the Island of Ice, he had to find the exact location of the island first. Hence, when he arrived at the Divine Continent, this bronze plate would basically be useless.

Jiang Chen threw the bronze plate into the sky. Then, an illusionary doorway appeared in front of the group. Without hesitating, the group walked straight into it.

After a bright flash of light, the group reappeared on top of the black altar and stood right beside the gigantic Teleportation Formation.

"We're leaving soon, are you guys ready?"

Jiang Chen turned to Wu Ningzhu and the others and asked.

"We've been ready for a long time."

Han Yan resolutely nodded his head. A look of excitement leaked out from both Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's eyes, as they could hardly suppress the excitement they were currently feeling.

Wu Ningzhu was even more excited than these two men, as her dream and vow was related to the Divine Continent, and she had waited for this day for ten years.

Bug Yellow's big tail was wagging back and forth, and his eyes shone brightly. It wasn't difficult to tell how excited this dog was. Perhaps he couldn't wait to wreak havoc in the Divine Continent.

In fact, the most excited person was Jiang Chen. He was finally going to return to the world that once belonged to him. When thinking about everything that happened in the past, he too was unable to suppress his excitement.

With the bronze plate in hand, he pushed it into the slot located on the Teleportation Formation.

In an instant, the gigantic Teleportation Formation started revolving, sending forth numerous dazzling lights. There were a few illuminating dots above the formation, and the one the furthest back from them, and also the biggest dot, was their destination; the Divine Continent.

“Do you see that? That is the Divine Continent; our destination.”

Jiang Chen pointed his finger at the fist-sized dot. Just from the size of this dot one could easily tell how gigantic the Divine Continent was. It was at least a hundred times bigger than the Eastern Continent, definitely enough to make one’s scalp go numb.

“Divine Continent; I, Wu Ningzhu am coming. Mom, how are you now? Ning’er has to see you no matter what.”

Wu Ningzhu was looking forward to that moment as she tried suppressing her inner excitement.

"Let's go."

Jiang Chen touched the biggest dot. Then, in an instant, a spatial tunnel was revealed to them. The group felt a powerful suction force, and were pulled into the spatial tunnel.

Variegated spatial turbulences like shooting stars flashed by in

front of the group, dazzling them.

“So this is what the other side of our dimension looks like.”

Nangong Wentian eyes ran around curiously.

Meanwhile, Han Yan stretched out his arm and tried touching the spatial barrier.

Bam!

The spatial tunnel's barrier made an explosive noise, and a hole appeared where Han Yan had touched, causing spatial tornados to shoot into where they were. Everyone's bodies swayed violently, and they nearly fell down.

“The altar's Teleportation Formation is quite old, and the Divine Continent is located far away, so the spatial tunnel isn't stable. We have to restrain our auras and energy, and simply not move around. If not, once the spatial tunnel cracks, we'll be thrown into the constantly moving spatial turbulence and die.”

Jiang Chen quickly reminded.

Hearing what he said, cold sweat immediately burst out from both Han Yan and Nangong Wentian's forehead. This was truly frightening! If they were dragged into the spatial turbulence, even if they could survive, it would be impossible for them to find an exit, and they would be trapped in here forever.

“Little Chen, according to our speed, how long will it take us to reach the Divine Continent?”

Wu Ningzhu asked.

"Approximately one day."

Jiang Chen said.

"It takes that long?"

Han Yan was startled for a moment.

“What do you think? If not for this Teleportation Formation, it would take us at least three months of flying, at best.”

Jiang Chen said.

One day quickly passed. They had yet to reach the end of the spatial tunnel. However, a bright dot suddenly appeared in front of them, and the spatial tunnel began violently shaking.

Jiang Chen's expression instantly became gloomy. That bright dot wasn't the end of the spatial tunnel, but a fracture.

“What's going on?”

Han Yan was shocked by what he saw.

“Everyone, be careful. The spatial tunnel will become unstable as we approach it. It’s a fracture in the tunnel.”

Jiang Chen said.

The group didn’t dare move their bodies. When they neared the fracture, violent waves of air blew out, making it impossible for the group to keep still.

Swoosh.

When the group was passing the fracture, a tremendous suction force suddenly burst out from it and fell onto Nangong Wentian’s body.

Ahh!

Nangong Wentian cried out in shock. He couldn’t control his body, and was nearly sucked into it.

"Not good!"

Without any hesitation, Jiang Chen quickly grabbed onto Nangong Wentian’s arm. Big Yellow also pushed his head against Nangong Wentian’s waist. One man and one dog were working

together to forcefully pull him back into the tunnel.

However, luck wasn't with Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, as both of them were pulled into the fracture at the same time and disappeared without a trace.

Chapter 485 - The Barbarian Earth Bull

Bam! Bam!

It was a clear and boundless sky. Suddenly, two explosive sounds echoed throughout the air, and following that, two figures were shot out from a different spatial dimension like two cannonballs. One was throw to the ground, while the other right onto a tree, causing the tree to turn to explode.

Cough...

The sound of someone coughing rung through the air as Jiang Chen climbed out from the deep crater. Big Yellow kicked away a tree log on his body while cursing under his breath. After the duo raised their heads to look at their surroundings, not only did they not feel depressed toward their unsightly states, but they were instead excited.

“Haha... so it wasn’t a tunnel fracture, but an exit!”

Jiang Chen heartily laughed out. Initially, he thought it was a tunnel fracture, and that he had been dragged into spatial turbulence. But, unexpectedly, it was actually an exit! Thinking back to that moment, he still felt somewhat scared.

“Damn it, this master dog almost shit because of that!”

Big Yellow spat out and said, also feeling lucky that he hadn’t

been dragged into spatial turbulence. If not, he would've been trapped in there forever.

“Let's find out where this place is.”

Big Yellow's eyes scanned the surrounding, but he could only see that they were surrounded by tall mountains, dried vines and weeds. There were also some gigantic trees that stood dozens of meters tall. They were obviously in the middle of a big mountain range. The Saint Origin realm contained boundless lands, so a mountain range like this could be found everywhere.

The mountain range didn't look much different from those in the Eastern Continent, the only difference was the natural Yuan energy they felt. It was at least ten times thicker compared to the Eastern Continent. For those in the Eastern Continent, an ordinary mountain range like this would definitely be a sacred place for cultivation.

“The natural Yuan energy here is at least ten times denser than in the Eastern Continent. If my guess is correct, we're at the boundary of the Divine Continent. In order for us to arrive at the real Divine Continent, we still have a long way to go. With our speed, it should at most take us another two or three days.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Just two or three days. It's much better than being dragged into spatial turbulence!”

Big Yellow said with a smile. They had traveled through the spatial tunnel for one day, and had almost reached the Divine Continent. Although he and Jiang Chen were thrown out of the spatial tunnel before arriving at their supposed destination, they currently weren't far away from the Divine Continent.

"Damn it, our group was split."

Big Yellow gloomily said. Imaginably, perhaps Han Yan and the other two would immediately arrive at the Divine Continent, while the two of them would have to set off again from this mountain range, and fly to the Divine Continent.

"Don't worry. With their strength, they should be able to protect themselves in the Divine Continent, as Elder Sister Ning is a Combat King now. We should make haste, we'll find a way to group up with them once we arrive at the Divine Continent."

After saying that, Jiang Chen locked down on the Divine Continent's direction, then started progressing together with Big Yellow.

When the duo arrived at a forest, an ice-cold beam suddenly emerged from a random direction. It was coming toward them with incredible speed and an ice-cold killing intent. It clearly wanted to kill Big Yellow.

Big Yellow's mood had been gloomy ever since they were thrown out from the spatial tunnel, and now someone wanted to try and attack them. He couldn't control his emotions any longer; using

his dog head, he simply rammed into the ice-cold beam, shattering with a loud explosive sound.

"Jiejie"

This dog seems pretty strong!

An evil laughter was heard. Like ghosts, two figures suddenly appeared in front of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow, preventing them from moving further. These two figures both had a tall and bulky body, and a pair of goat horns.

“Just two Goat Demons, Late Combat Soul Goat Demons.”

Big Yellow rolled his eyes. The Divine Continent was undeniably a place the Eastern Continent could not compare with in any way. They had simply bumped into two Late Combat Soul demons at such a remote place. If these two demons were in the Eastern Continent, they would easily be able to stand at the pinnacle.

“Elder brother, this youngster has a very vigorous Yang energy! If I can eat him, I’ll obtain tremendous benefits!”

One of the Goat Demons spat out its tongue and locked its lips as it started straight at Jiang Chen’s face.

"Hehe, this dog is not bad either."

Another Goat Demon grinned at Big Yellow.

“Two little goats, before this master dog truly gets pissed off, you better kneel down and kowtow! If this master dog is satisfied, perhaps I’ll spare your lives.”

Big Yellow said in an arrogant manner.

His words instantly caused the Goat Demons to burst out into laughter. Both of them were very confident in their own strength, and if they attacked together, it would be hard for them to find anyone who could beat them under the Combat King realm.

Hmph!

Big Yellow coldly harrumphed as a powerful aura suddenly erupted from his body, suppressing those two Goat Demons like a raging ocean wave.

Sensing this formidable aura, the faces of the two Goat Demons instantly changed. Both of them simultaneously cried out in shock, “Demon King!”

Sweat immediately broke out all over their bodies, as if they were just two tiny mice in front of a ferocious cat. Without hesitating, they immediately kneeled down.

"Please spare our lives, Demon King! We have eyes but failed to see Mount Tai!"

The two Goat Demons repeatedly kowtowed and felt a strong desire to slap their own faces. They had actually sought trouble with a Demon King! They never expected that a random dog they found was actually a Demon King! They could only blame their bad luck.

"Let me ask you, how far is this place from the Divine Continent?"

Jiang Chen asked.

The two Goat Demons quickly turned to Jiang Chen. Although this young man wasn't a Combat King, he was followed by a true Demon King. Hence, they dared not neglect him. Instead, Jiang Chen's quest made them feel relieved, because as long as they could provide a good answer and behave well, they lives might be spared. If not, after provoking a Demon King, neither of them would be spared.

"Young master, we're at the border of the Divine Continent. If you're going to the Divine Continent, it will just take you two or three days to get there. However, with Lord Demon King here, it'll be much faster if you just use Spatial Jump."

One of the Goat Demons said.

Jiang Chen nodded his head. It was as he had estimated.

“You two, chop off one of your arms, then get the hell out of here.”

Jiang Chen waved his arm and said. He had no interest in killing two goats.

"What?"

The Goat Demons cried out in shock, then turned their glances to Big Yellow. They were obviously only scared of Big Yellow, who was a Demon King, and not really afraid of this young human.

"What are you looking at? Do you want me to bite off your heads?"

Big Yellow glared back at them.

The two Goat Demons were struck with great terror. Without hesitating, they chopped off one of their arms and scurried away. These two demons had really bad luck today. Not only were they unable to find anything during their hunt, they had even lost one of their arms. Luckily, they were still able to keep their lives, though.

“It’s so easy to find two Combat Soul demons in this mountain range. Perhaps there are some amazing natural resources here. It would be nice if we find some during our path.”

Jiang Chen said. Then, the duo continued their journey.

After Jiang Chen and Big Yellow left, the two Goat Demons returned to the same place and picked up their arms.

“Elder brother, we’re truly unfortunate today to have offended a Demon King.”

The youngest goat said.

“Hmph! We have to get revenge for this! Let’s go seek help from Master Barbarian Earth Bull; let him kill that human and dog! If we can drink that dog’s blood, we might be able to compensate for the loss of our arms!”

The oldest goat said.

After flying for about an hour, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow found some natural resources. However, they weren’t extraordinary or rare; they were not worth Jiang Chen’s effort.

Suddenly, the ground started shaking. Strong wind blew into their faces, and a formidable aura could suddenly be felt.

"It's a Demon King."

Sensing this aura, not only was Jiang Chen not afraid, he excited instead. In fact, he had been looking forward to meeting a Demon King, as absorbing a Demon King’s demon soul would bring him

great help in his pursuit of the Combat King realm.

Boom!

All of a sudden, a bright light flashed before them, and a figure as tall as a tower was revealed, blocking Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's path. This guy had a bull's head and a human body, and it only had a single horn on top of its head, which shone in an earth-yellow color.

"Barbarian Earth Bull."

With one look, Jiang Chen recognized the original form of this bull demon, causing the excitement on his face to grow even stronger. He never expected to encounter a beast that possessed a very powerful innate ability.

After the Barbarian Earth Bull revealed itself, another two figures appeared beside it. They were the two Goat Demons who had lost their arms. This needed no explanation, they had obviously found someone to help them get revenge.

"Master Barbarian Bull, here they are!"

One of the Goat Demons angrily pointed his remaining arm at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

"Alright, I'll get revenge for you."

After saying that, the Barbarian Earth Bull simply threw a punch toward Big Yellow. Although both of them were First Grade Demon Kings, he was very confident in himself. Furthermore, in its mind, only the dog could pose some threat to it. As for the human, it could simply ignore him.

“You’re seeking death!”

Big Yellow was immediately enraged. As he had just broken through to the Demon King realm, his confidence was extremely high. Further, he possessed the supreme Dragon Horse bloodline, so how could he take this bull demon seriously? Thus, he countered the punch with his powerful head.

Bam!

Big Yellow’s head collided with the bull’s hoof, producing an explosive sounds and a large amount of sparks. The Barbarian Earth Bull felt as if its fist had punch solid rock, as the backlash caused its arm to feel numb, and forced him to take a couple of steps back before finally stabilizing its body. On the other side, Big Yellow was portraying a look of satisfaction, as nothing had happened to him at all.

"This dog is really strong!"

Shock filled the Barbarian Earth Bull’s eyes. It never thought that a dog could be this powerful.

“Be careful, the Barbarian Earth Bull has an innate ability that can restrain its enemy, causing the enemy to feel a tremendous pressure.”

Jiang Chen reminded. After that, with a sway of his body, he moved further back and folded his arms, portraying the image of a bystander.

Chapter 486 - Earth Jail

A faint smile was apparent on Jiang Chen's face. He had no intentions of joining this fight. Although the Barbarian Earth Bull was a formidable opponent, it was no match for Big Yellow. Jiang Chen had complete confidence in this.

The blood flowing in Big Yellow's body was that of a Divine Beast, and it was far more supreme than that of any ordinary demon. Now that Big Yellow was a First Grade Demon King, he was capable of killing Second Grade Demon Kings.

Holding his prideful head up high, Big Yellow stared at the Barbarian Earth Bull with a look of despise. He never took this opponent seriously. For him, it was merely the first target he wanted to kill after breaking through to the Demon King realm.

The look of despise and ridicule in Big Yellow's eyes had no doubt provoked the Barbarian Earth Bull. The bull let out a furious roar, then its palm suddenly transformed into a huge golden hoof that shone with multiple layers of mysterious lights. When Big Yellow thought that this Barbarian Earth Bull was going to attack him with that big hoof, it actually slammed it into the ground in a forceful manner.

Boom!

A huge crater was produced by this powerful slam. The ground started quaking, and cracks started stretching all across the place.

Big Yellow was startled. He was prepared to counter the Barbarian Earth Bull's hoof with his head, but unexpectedly, not only had it not attacked him, it had chosen to hit the ground instead. Wasn't this simply just wasting energy?

But in the following moment, Big Yellow realized he had made a big mistake.

All of a sudden, a tremendous force burst out from the ground underneath him and turned into a restrictive force that covered Big Yellow's body, forming an invisible jail trapping him within.

Ah!

Big Yellow cried out in shock. He was taken by surprise as his body was being dragged towards the ground. He could feel an enormous force pulling his body toward the ground. Not only that, he could also feel a tremendous pressure coming from all directions; the pressure of Earth! He wave like a being tightly trapped in jail, unable to move even a little bit.

Earth Jail, the innate ability of the Barbarian Earth Bull, also called Earthbound. When it was used, it could borrow Earth's Power, and could easily catch the enemy by surprise. Big Yellow was an obvious example to this. Even with his incredible reflexes, he had been unable to sense the force coming from the earth. It had all happened so suddenly, and this force was tremendous. Thus, he pressed against the ground and trapped within.

It was a frightening ability. If an ordinary man had been in Big

Yellow's position, perhaps his body would have instantly been crushed by the pressure. And, even if he did survive, he would still have to face death when the Barbarian Earth Bull came rushing in with its powerful hooves.

Of course, Big Yellow was no ordinary existence. If not for the fact that he had no knowledge regarding the Barbarian Earth Bull, he never would have given it an opportunity to attack him.

“You actually dare look down on me?! You're just seeking death!”

The Barbarian Earth Bull burst into laughed. Then, it turned into a bright beam and charged toward Big Yellow. Its iron hoof was pointed at Big Yellow's head, and it looked like it had the intention of crushing Big Yellow's head.

Roar~

Big Yellow was furious, really furious. He was an existence who possessed the Dragon Horse bloodline, a noble and prestigious existence. However, a damn bull had just thrown him to the ground. This made him feel as if he had lost a lot of face.

A golden object slowly appeared on Big Yellow's forehead. It was actually a horn covered with Dragon Marks! It was a short horn only the size of a human thumb, and it was clearly far from fully grown.

Lightning sparks could be seen flickering out from the dragon

horn, and a frightening aura began emitting from it. Jiang Chen felt surprised upon seeing it. He knew that this had to be the innate ability Big Yellow awakened upon breaking through to the Demon King realm, but as it had yet to mature, its power wasn't really that great.

A bright beam shot out from Big Yellow's dragon horn. Like a razor-sharp sword, it instantly caused a crack to appear on the Earth Jail. Then, the Earth Jail was broken, and the restrictive force immediately disappeared.

Big Yellow jumped up from the ground and charged toward the Barbarian Earth Bull, pointing his dragon horn at its iron hoof.

Puchi!

When the two of them collided, a loud explosive sound was heard, and following that came a 'puchi' sound, as the Barbarian Earth Bull's iron hoof had been penetrated by the dragon horn, causing its blood to burst out from its wound. Big Yellow's head was extremely powerful, and with the addition of the dragon horn, it almost became indestructible.

According to Jiang Chen's estimation, the more Big Yellow grew, the more mature this innate ability would become. Once it reached a more mature stage, he wouldn't need to use it to launch a physical attack, but could instead use it to shoot out a frightening power, immediately sending his enemy to hell.

The Barbarian Earth Bull let out a shrill and miserable cry as its

bulky body was sent flying backwards. It wasn't flying by itself, but was flying because Big Yellow had knocked it back.

“Fuck you! How dare you trap this master dog?! This master dog will let you know what true misery is!”

Big Yellow furiously jumped onto the Barbarian Earth Bull's body. At this moment, the Barbarian Earth Bull was motionlessly lying on the ground, allowing Big Yellow to torture it without being able to do anything.

Crack!

Big Yellow's teeth were incredibly strong, and he could use them to eat those hard demon souls as if they were candy, let alone others. Thus, the Barbarian Earth Bull's horn was bitten off by Big Yellow.

Aooo!

With this, the Barbarian Earth Bull's screams became even louder, and nearly shook the entire mountain range. The horn was its root, and once it was bitten off, the Barbarian Earth Bull was like a balloon with all its air squeezed out.

"No, this is impossible!"

The Barbarian Earth Bull kept yelling out in disbelief. It couldn't understand at all how this dog could be so powerful. The Earth Jail

had never failed it before, and even when facing an existence that was one grade higher than itself, it could still cause severe damage to the opponent with this sneaky trick. But today, this dog had actually broken its Earth Jail in such an easy manner.

The Goat Demons who stood at the side were terrified. This Barbarian Earth Bull was the absolute king of this mountain range, and it had dominated this place for a long period of time. They thought this Barbarian Earth Bull would definitely be able to help them get revenge, but they never thought that this dog was actually so frightening, to the point where even the Barbarian Earth Bull was no match for it. Their seemingly clever decision turned out to be the worst decision. If the Barbarian Earth Bull was killed, the two of them would definitely be next. And this time, they would lose more than one arm.

Big Yellow stepped onto the Barbarian Earth Bull's head, pressing it against the ground.

"Spare my life! Spare my life!"

The Barbarian Earth Bull was begging for its life.

"Spare your life? Puh! If this master dog was captured by you, would you spare this master dog? So, you thought you had a powerful hoof? I'll allow you to taste the power of mine!"

Big Yellow was extremely fierce and brutal, and he would never spare this Barbarian Earth Bull who had caused him to lose face. With tremendous force, he forcefully stamped down on the

Barbarian Earth Bull's head, causing it to explode like a balloon. Then, a demon soul emerged.

When Big Yellow opened his mouth up wide and prepared to swallow the demon soul, someone moved faster than him. A big palm grabbed onto the demon soul tightly before Big Yellow could do anything.

“Buddy, that's daddy's war trophy! Give it back to daddy!”

Big Yellow viciously bared his teeth at Jiang Chen. Only Jiang Chen would dare rob his belongings.

“Hehe, it's a big waste for you to use it. Why don't you give it to me?”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. He really wanted this Barbarian Earth Bull's innate ability, as the Earth Jail was an excellent ability for sneak attacks. Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, so he could absorb any bloodline underneath the heavens, as well as the innate ability of any demon, including this Earth Jail.

Big Yellow was furious to the point of blowing smoke out from his nose. However, he couldn't do anything to Jiang Chen. This guy had after all robbed his treasures many times, and Big Yellow had already gotten used to it.

“You two bastards who don't know the true meaning of death!

We just spared your lives, but not only did you not thank us, you actually plotted to get me killed?!”

Big Yellow opened his eyes widely and glared at the two Goat Demons. It looked like he was going to vent his depression of having his treasure robbed by Jiang Chen on these two unlucky fellows.

Plop! Plop!

Once again, the two Goat Demons kneeled down and kowtowed repeatedly, “Master Demon King, please spare our lives! We will never do it again!”

This time, the Goat Demons were truly telling the truth. If they were given another chance, they would never cause any trouble for this dog again, as it was simply an act of seeking death.

“Only now do you feel regret. However, it is too late!”

Big Yellow suddenly leapt forward. With two bites, the two Goat Demons no longer had any heads. He had swallowed them whole together with their demon souls. After that, he no longer felt as gloomy as before.

"Amazing!"

Jiang Chen gave Big Yellow a thumbs up. Big Yellow was indeed frightening. If an ordinary First Grade Demon King was here, they

would definitely suffer from the Barbarian Earth Bull's sneaky Earth Jail attack. Only an abnormal being like Big Yellow could break the Earth Jail like that, and turn defeat into victory.

“Of course, don't you know who this Master Dog is? Damn it, that bull's ability is truly strong, even I was put down to the ground by it.”

Although Big Yellow's expression was still very arrogant, he had to admit that the Barbarian Earth Bull's ability was frightening. It was an innate ability that utilized Earth's Power, and it was simply a skill designed for sneak attacks.

“This is truly an unexpected gain. Let's leave this place and find a quiet place. I need to absorb the Barbarian Earth Bull's demon soul, and make the Earth Jail innate ability mine.”

Jiang Chen said.

"You're a damn abnormal monster!"

Big Yellow speechlessly glared at Jiang Chen. He had for a long time known that Jiang Chen was cultivating an amazing skill that allowed him to absorb any bloodline and innate ability. But still, he couldn't help but feel depressed, because an ability like that could no longer be described as abnormal.

As an intense battle had just taken place here, the loud sounds of battle had traveled to places far away, so it wouldn't take long

before other demons were attracted to this place. Jiang Chen was afraid of those demons, but since he wanted to absorb the Barbarian Earth Bull's demon soul, he really needed a quiet place. After all, absorbing this demon soul would be different from absorbing others, as his main objective was to absorb the innate ability within, and not the energy.

In order to fully absorb an innate ability, even though the Dragon Transformation skill was an incredible skill, it would still need some time so that it could perfectly merge the innate ability into Jiang Chen's bloodline, allowing him to freely use it.

Chapter 487 – Dogs Also Have To Pay?

Within a quiet and secluded mountain valley, Jiang Chen sat on top of a big rock with his legs crossed, and he had entered a perfect state of cultivation. Not far away, Big Yellow was walking back and forth, murmuring to himself along the way. Obviously, he wasn't happy to have to act as Jiang Chen's guardian once again.

“Damn kid, not only did he rob my war trophy, he also made this master dog stand guard!”

Big Yellow kept complaining about Jiang Chen. However, although he spoke like that, he still stood guard in a responsible and diligent manner.

About twenty minutes later, Jiang Chen woke up from his state of cultivation. His aura had once again become stronger. Not only had he successfully absorbed the Earth Jail innate ability from the Barbarian Earth Bull's demon soul, he had also formed another 400 Dragon Marks. With that, he now had a total of 19,400 Dragon Marks in his body, and only needed 600 more to reach the Combat King realm.

Although it was just 600 Dragon Marks, which seemed little, it wasn't easy to achieve. Dragon Marks became more difficult to form as he progressed further on the path of cultivation, especially when at the edge of breaking through; the energy required to form each new Dragon Mark was so much more than the previous one.

However, Jiang Chen didn't really mind this. With his current

strength, he was able to kill Second Grade Combat Kings with ease. He could even fight a Third Grade Combat King without much problems. And, once he broke through to the Combat King realm, Jiang Chen was confident he could kill Third Grade Combat Kings and fight Fourth Grade Combat Kings. This was the incredible strength brought to him by the Dragon Transformation skill.

"How is it?"

Big Yellow rushed over to Jiang Chen's front and asked.

"I feel great!"

Jiang Chen stuck out his tongue and licked his lips. After obtaining the Earth Jail innate ability, he had no doubt acquired another powerful hidden trick.

"Can you use the Earth Jail innate ability?"

Big Yellow continued asking.

"Of course!"

After saying that, Jiang Chen suddenly stomped the ground. In an instant, a force shot out from beneath the ground and fell onto Big Yellow's body. With a miserable cry, Big Yellow staggered and was nearly thrown onto the ground once again. If not for Jiang Chen retracting the force before that happened, Big Yellow would certainly have to relive the previous tragedy.

"Damn you, don't you ever do that to me again!"

Big Yellow bared his teeth at Jiang Chen. However, at the same time, a look of excitement flickered within his eyes. He could clearly feel that Jiang Chen's Earth Jail was much more powerful than the Barbarian Earth Bull's Earth Jail.

Big Yellow had to admit that Jiang Chen was an abnormal monster. Not only was he able to absorb the bloodline of other demons, he could actually use them with even more power than the original owner of the innate ability. What's even more depressing was that Jiang Chen only needed twenty minutes to fully absorb an innate ability and turn it into his own. This situation could not be described with the word frightening.

"Using this Earth Jail for a sneak attack is beneficial in every way, but an ability like this does have its weakness."

Jiang Chen explained, "As this ability utilizes the Earth's Power, it also means that it only works when the enemy is on the ground. If we're fighting in the air, this ability is completely useless."

Every single ability had their own pros and cons, including the Earth Jail. Its weakness was also pretty obvious, especially when at the Combat King realm. Battles at this level would usually occur in the air, because if they fought on the ground, the destruction would simply be too tremendous.

A weakness like this also meant that the Earth Jail could only be

used for launching sneak attacks; while the enemy wasn't prepared at all. However, no matter what, it was a pretty good hidden skill.

Jiang Chen had obtained quite an amazing benefit from the Barbarian Earth Bull. The duo continued their journey and flew toward the Divine Continent. With their incredible speed, it only took them one day to leave the mountain range and arrive at the border of the Divine Continent.

"Finally, I'm back again."

While hovering in the air, Jiang Chen spread his arms and closed his eyes. He took a deep breath, inhaling the air of this place. It had been one hundred years, and he had been longing to return to this place.

"What, back again?"

Big Yellow was startled as he turned to Jiang Chen and asked.

"Cough... nothing. Don't you think that the Divine Continent's natural Yuan energy is very dense?"

Jiang Chen lightly coughed a few times. He knew he had said something he shouldn't have said, and quickly changed the topic.

"Indeed, the natural Yuan energy here is really dense. Although we're only at the border, I can feel that it is at least fifteen times denser here than in the Eastern Continent."

Big Yellow nodded his head and let out a sigh filled with mixed emotions. They were only at the most remote border of the Divine Continent right now, and if they arrived at the heart of the Divine Continent, the natural Yuan energy would be at least one hundred times denser than in the Eastern Continent.

“I think there’s a human city no far away from us. Let’s go there and look for some news, see if we can meet with Brother Yan and the others.”

After saying that, Jiang Chen started flying forwards.

“Buddy, you look like you’re very familiar with the Divine Continent.”

Big Yellow said in a curious manner.

“I found a map of the Divine Continent once, that’s why I have some understanding about its regions. However, that’s all I know.”

Jiang Chen casually shrugged his shoulders.

"A map of the Divine Continent? So, where are we now?"

Big Yellow asked.

“We’re at the border of the Divine Continent, and I’m guessing

we're in the Profound Region.”

One hundred years ago, after cutting open the entrance to the Realm of Immortals, causing the Principles of the Immortal Realm to leak into this world, it had brought a tremendous impact to the powers of the Divine Continent, and all the people he knew had experience a great transformation as well. However, the regions should still be the same.

“Quickly, explain to this master dog how the regions of the Divine Continent are divided!”

Big Yellow impatiently asked. They had finally arrived at the boundless lands of the Divine Continent, and he felt really excited.

“There are eight major forbidden areas in the Divine Continent, and each are located in different regions. The Divine Continent is divided into eight major regions according to these eight forbidden areas. The Profound Region is the weakest territory amongst all eight, but although it is the weakest, it's still ten times bigger than the Eastern Continent. In the Profound Region, there are a total of eighteen provinces, each province bigger than any of those in the Eastern Continent. A small place like the Qi Province can't be compared with those in this land. Also, within ever single province here, there are numerous powers of all sizes.”

Jiang Chen briefly explained how the regions of the Divine Continent was divided to Big Yellow.

Although Big Yellow had been prepared for this, he still felt

shocked upon hearing Jiang Chen's explanation. The Divine Continent was extremely big, and it was no wonder that it was the heart of the entire Saint Origin realm. Eight major regions, and the Profound Region was just the weakest among them all. However, although it was the weakest, it was still ten times bigger than the Eastern Continent. Let alone the 18 provinces within, there were also countless aquatic territories, mountain ranges, and all kinds of races. This was indeed a magnificent world.

Compared to the Divine Continent, the Eastern Continent was just a tiny area.

“So I'm guessing we're in one of the Profound Region's provinces? Which province is this?”

Big Yellow continued asking.

“I have no idea about this. Let's find a place where we can meet with other people. We'll know the answer after asking around.”

Jiang Chen smiled. In his previous life, this Profound Region was just a small place for him, and he rarely came to this remote area. Although he could tell that this place was within the Profound Region, he had no idea what province they were currently at.

Soon after, a vague image of a city emerged in Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's sight. Although it was still far away, they could already sense the magnificence of the city.

“It’s just a city at the most remote region, but it’s so huge! This is amazing!”

Big Yellow said, full of emotions.

"Let's go and take a look at the city."

Jiang Chen impatiently sped up.

Around noon, the sun was pouring its heat on top of the people’s heads. Crowds of people were traveling around the city. Some were trade caravans, some were rogue cultivators. Looking ahead, Combat Soul warriors could be seen everywhere, and Divine Core warriors were as many as the hairs on an ox.

A Combat Soul warrior was a supreme existence who stood on top of the Eastern Continent, and no matter where one went, one would receive unprecedented welcome and respect. However, in this place, they were just like ordinary townsfolk, as if there was nothing special about them.

A towering and grand city entrance was in sight. It didn’t have a door, and a huge golden plate seen hanging on top of the entrance. Two exquisite words were craved onto this plate, [Hongyue City]

Hongyue had the meaning of a city prosperous for ten thousand years and heard by many. Even Jiang Chen was amazed by the excellent name of the city.

A few guards were stationed on both sides of the entrance, calling people to pay the entrance fee.

"Hurry up! One Earth Restoration Pill per entry!"

The leading guard called out with a loud voice.

"Damn it, the Hongyue City Lord is so unkind! He has increased the entry fee to one Earth Restoration Pill!"

"Don't complain about it. We have to carry out our business in this city, so we have no choice but to pay. It's only one Earth Restoration Pill, we can still afford it."

"It would be nice if we could find a place to stay in the city. With that, we would no longer have to pay the entrance fee."

"Stop dreaming! The cost of staying in Hongyue City is too expensive! There is no way we can afford to stay here!"

.....

Many people were whispering amongst themselves, as they felt that the entrance fee was too expensive. However, as a trade hub, many power had to come to Hongyue City to carry out their business. Thus, they had no choice but to pay the hefty price.

"Hehe, I'm sure the City Lord is filthy rich after from obtaining

his wealth like this. Why don't we sneak into this City Lord's mansion and steal something? Kaka..."

Big Yellow started laughing in a vicious manner as his eyes lit up. Before he had even stepped into the city, had already started planning his evil plot against the City Lord Mansion. Jiang Chen helplessly shook his head. Bringing this dog with him was like bringing a heap of trouble. If he had to find the being most capable of causing trouble, Big Yellow would definitely be the number one candidate.

However, Big Yellow's words were actually quite tempting for Jiang Chen. By collecting one Earth Restoration Pill from every single person who entered the city, a tremendous wealth would accumulate over the years.

Although Jiang Chen had brought a huge amount of Mortal and Earth Restoration Pills from the Martial Saint Dynasty when he left, and he wasn't lacking in resources, the Dragon Transformation skill would consume a huge amount of resources with every step of progress taken. Hence, he would never say no to more Earth Restoration Pills. And, it would be even better if he could have some Heaven Restoration Pills.

"You two, two Earth Restoration Pills."

The guard shouted at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

"A dog has to pay as well?"

Jiang Chen rolled his eyes.

Chapter 488 - This Dog Is Not To Be Trifled With!

Jiang Chen was not a stingy man, and he could easily afford to pay one Earth Restoration Pill. However, he just couldn't stand the guard asking an entrance fee for a dog.

Seeing that a young man had the audacity to doubt his words, the guard was immediately angered, In Hongyue City, no one had ever challenged the entrance fee set by the City Lord Mansion. This young man was simply seeking death.

However, before the guard could say anything, Big Yellow immediately protested. He furiously barked out, then yelled at Jiang Chen, "What's wrong with a dog?! Why can't a dog pay the entrance fee?! Pay him quickly! Also, pay him twice the amount; show him the prestigious status of this master dog!"

Jiang Chen nearly vomited blood upon hearing what Big Yellow said. All the people around instantly turned their glances over, and some were even pointing their fingers at Big Yellow, thinking that this dog was an idiot.

"Is there something wrong with this dog's brain? His master wanted to save one Earth Restoration Pills for him, but not only did he refuse, he actually wants to pay double? What an idiot."

"Ah, I truly pity this young man for being the master of that dog, not knowing that his pet is, in fact, a fool. However, his preference is pretty weird as well, he actually took a dog as his pet."

.....

“Damn dog, is there something wrong with your brain?”

Jiang Chen forcefully pressed his palm against Big Yellow’s head.

“Get lost! You’re the one with something wrong in your brain! Quickly, pay the guard! Remember, pay double for this master dog! If not, I won’t be going anywhere!”

Big Yellow simply laid on the ground and acted like a scoundrel. It seemed like he would only get up after Jiang Chen paid two Earth Restoration Pills for him. This scene made the crowd shake their heads.

However, the guard actually had a smile on his face. He found this big yellow dog to be really pleasing to his eyes. He was more than happy when someone wanted to pay more than the entrance fee, as he would be able to keep the extra for himself. Thus, he really wished he could meet more people like Big Yellow, who was such an idiot.

"Hurry up! Don't delay us!"

Someone at the back kept urging impatiently.

“Young man, quickly pay the entrance fee, don’t waste other

people's time here.”

The guard stretched his arm toward Jiang Chen.

“Here's five. Three for me, two for that dog.”

Jiang Chen casually waved his hand, tossing five Earth Restoration Pills to the guard. After that, he placed his arms behind his back and walked through the entrance. The guard grabbed all the Earth Restoration Pills with a dazzling smile on his face.

Many people at the back were struck dumb by what they just saw. It looked like that dog wasn't the only idiot, even his master was a fool. Like master like pet. Although they could enter the city by just paying two Earth Restoration Pills, he had insisted on paying five. He seemed like a rich spoiled brat to the crowd.

With a smile on his face, the guard placed three of the Earth Restoration Pills into his own storage ring. However, at this moment, Jiang Chen who had just left suddenly returned.

“May I ask something? Which province of the Profound Region does Hongyue City belong to?”

Jiang Chen asked.

"Liang Province."

The guard replied to Jiang Chen's question with a big smile. These guards always treated someone rich like this differently, let alone this guy who had just given him extra income.

The duo walked down the street of Hongyue City. It was a wide street, and the ground was made from smooth, light green rocks. It was so wide that ten chariots could travel side by side without it feeling tight.

All sorts of shops could be found along the street. Some were selling pills, some were selling demon souls, and some were selling combat weapon. But of course, the quality of these items was just common, and was not good enough to enter the sights of Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

Aside from these items that were traded among cultivators, there were many selling food as well. Although cultivators could absorb natural Yuan energy and cleanse their bodies, thus not needing to eat any food, they still enjoyed eating. In many places, delicious delicacies would easily become popular and sought by many.

For someone like Big Yellow, the attraction of food was tremendous. One could easily tell this from the saliva he left along his way.

Suddenly, Big Yellow disappeared from where he was. Jiang Chen turned around and could instantly see that Big Yellow had already arrived in front of a food stall. The owner of the stall was calling out with a loud voice, "Roasted lamb! Demon Wuji Lamb!

Exclusive recipe! A delicacy you must try!”

The owner suddenly saw a big yellow dog appearing in front of his stall, and the eyes of the dog were staring at the freshly roasted lamb, while his saliva was nearly dripping onto the surface of the stall.

"Shoo, shoo.... Where did this dog come from? Do you believe daddy won't roast you into a dog delicacy?"

The owner glared at Big Yellow furiously.

Big Yellow wasn't bothered by the owner. With incredible speed, he dashed in front of the roasted lamb, opened his mouth, and bit onto it. When the owner finally realized it, Big Yellow and the roasted lamb had both disappeared.

"Bastard! Damn dog!"

The owner was enraged. An energy wave erupted from his body as he retrieved his combat weapon. It looked like he was about to chase after Big Yellow and rip him into pieces. However, a young man came up to his stall and casually tossed to Earth Restoration Pills to him and said, "I'm sorry, I'll pay for that roasted lamb."

After saying that, the young man chased after the dog while murmuring, "Damn dog, can't you just save me some trouble?"

When Jiang Chen finally caught up with Big Yellow, the roasted

lamb had been completely devoured by Big Yellow. Without showing any courtesy, Jiang Chen instantly pinched Big Yellow's ear, "Why can't you just behave a little bit? Damn it, we've just arrived, and we need to stay low... would you die from doing that?"

"Ruff! Buddy, let go of this master dog's ear!"

Big Yellow bared his teeth at Jiang Chen.

"Damn dog, you have to promise daddy not to rob those street foods! This is really shameful!"

Jiang Chen kept pinching Big Yellow's ear. If Big Yellow wanted to rob someone's treasure, not only would Jiang Chen not stop him, he would even give him a helping hand. However, this fellow actually went ahead and robbed food. This was truly shameful, and if they were chased by someone because of this, it would be even more shameful.

"No way! The food here is really delicious, and it's all demon beast meat! It's very chewy and tasty, daddy has to eat it!"

Big Yellow protested.

"I'll bring you to the best restaurant in Hongyue City later, alright?"

Jiang Chen said.

"Promise?"

Big Yellow's eyes lit up.

"Of course!"

Under normal circumstances, the busiest place would be a restaurant, where people from all walks of life could be found. It would be the perfect place to gather information. Since they had just arrived at Hongyue City, they really needed more information about this place.

Also, Jiang Chen felt that he too needed to eat something to cure his hunger. Taking this opportunity to have a big feast should bring him to a good mood.

"Excellent, you're a guy with a good heart!"

Big Yellow nodded his head and praised Jiang Chen.

On their way, Big Yellow still behaved in a mischievous manner.

"Hey! Beautiful woman! How are you?"

"Hey, you're such a good-looking girl, are you interested in being this master dog's love? This master dog can take you as my disciple and teach you a mighty skill!"

“Hey, you with the rat eyes! What are you looking at?! If you keep looking at me, I will dig your eyes out and crush them! Have you never seen such a handsome, mighty dog before?!”

“Beautiful girl, are you interested in talking about your life with this master dog?”

.....

Big Yellow kept showing his arrogant and prideful character along the way, teasing all the girls that passed by him, and attracting a lot of hatred. If glares could kill, perhaps Big Yellow would only be left with a piece of skin by now.

Fuck!

Jiang Chen really wished he could leave a huge footmark on Big Yellow's face. Before the pedestrians could truly erupt with anger, Jiang Chen pulled Big Yellow by the ear, turned into a trail of light and disappeared from the street.

Bringing this dog along was truly the same as purposely seeking trouble.

With incredible speed, Jiang Chen quickly arrived at the heart of Hongyue City. In front of him was the busiest street of the city. Right at the center of the street stood a three floor tall golden building. Under the reflection of the sunlight, it shone with a

noble and luxurious color.

The outer surface of the building was fully made from pure gold. Although gold wasn't valuable to cultivators, using pure gold to build a building was still considered wasteful.

The name of the building matched its appearance, 'The Golden Tower'. Just the name alone was enough to give the tower a luxurious aura. However, what made it truly stand out was a few smaller words written underneath its name, 'The Best Restaurant in Hongyue City'.

"The best restaurant in Hongyue City, I'm sure it's a high-class restaurant. Let's go, we'll eat here."

Big Yellow spat out his tongue and licked his lips. He had an extremely sensitive nose, so perhaps he had already smelled the fragrance coming from the restaurant, as his big tail was already wagging.

"Let's go, we'll have a big feast today."

Jiang Chen smiled. As he was filthy rich, let alone dining in this restaurant, he could easily buy the entire restaurant.

"Welcome! Be our guest!"

A young man dressed like a servant came out. When Jiang Chen looked at this servant, he could see that the servant was a Divine

Core warrior. A Divine Core servant, this was the Divine Continent, not a place the Eastern Continent could ever compare with.

Before Jiang Chen could say anything, Big Yellow had already stretched his neck forward and began pushing his way in. However, the servant stopped him, “Hey hey hey, the Golden Tower is a prestigious place, a dog is not allowed in here.”

"What did you just say?!"

Big Yellow immediately jumped up. This dog would never allow anyone to look down on him.

“I said, dogs are not allowed in here!”

The servant’s attitude was firm. He turned to Jiang Chen and said, “Young master, please follow the rules, this is a high-class venue.”

“You can choose to throw him out. However, let me give you a friendly reminder; this dog is not to be trifled with!”

After looking at the servant with a pitying look, Jiang Chen strode into the Golden Tower. After he passed through the entrance, he immediately heard a loud sound behind him. He saw that the servant was knocked into the restaurant from outside, and was followed by a muscular big yellow dog. Big Yellow leapt onto the servant’s body and bared his teeth at him, “I dare you to repeat

what you said just now!”

“No, no... Master dog, please, come in!”

The servant’s body was trembling with great fear, and he quickly nodded his head. As a servant of the Golden Tower, his judgment and senses were good. By now, no matter how ignorant he was, he finally realized that this dog was not to be trifled with. Looking at how this dog behaved, if he still said no, this dog would definitely bite his head off.

Chapter 489 - I Am A Young City Lord Too

There were many customers sitting inside the Golden Tower, and all of them were well-dressed. Those who dined in this place were usually men with prestigious statuses. At this moment, all of these people were staring at the big yellow dog who had suddenly intruded this place.

Ignoring the looks of surprise coming from the crowd, Big Yellow moved away from the servant and followed Jiang Chen. At the same time, the servant climbed up from the ground, still suffering from shock.

"What's going on?"

A middle aged man came forth. He was in his forties, and he had a formidable cultivation base. He was a Late Combat Soul warrior.

Jiang Chen paid no attention to this middle-aged man. He ran his eyes around the place, then found himself a table beside a window and sat down. Big Yellow hurried over and sat down opposite of Jiang Chen, his saliva dripping all over the place.

"Servant, serve me all the best wind and delicacies you have in this restaurant."

Jiang Chen said.

"What?"

Someone cried out in shock as all the customers turned their eyes to Jiang Chen. The duo had once again become the center of attention.

“Is he joking? Can these two really eat all the food?”

“This is the Golden Tower, the most expensive place in Hongyue City. He said he wants all of the best wine and food? How much would that cost? This is truly wasteful!”

“I’m sure this kid is a young master from some rich family, he is filthy rich!”

Many people were shaking their heads as they inwardly labeled Jiang Chen as a spoiled son of some rich family. As a matter of fact, energy type pills were the most crucial for any cultivator, and it wasn’t a good idea to spend huge amounts of those in exchange for food and wine, as Mortal and Earth Restoration Pills were necessary for cultivation.

The servant stood behind the restaurant manager without daring to speak a word. When the manager looked at Jiang Chen up and down, he was surprised to find out that he couldn’t sense Jiang Chen’s actual cultivation, and judging from Jiang Chen’s imposing appearance, he dared not show any neglect.

“Please wait a moment, young master.”

The restaurant manager said with a smile on his face. No business was too small for a business man. Furthermore, the Golden Tower was backed by a powerful force, and no one dared to eat without paying in this place.

“Have you guys heard? The 13th tycoon of the Asura Palace has died in the Chaotic Ocean. I heard he was killed by the Seven Chaotic Pirates.”

“Yea, I heard. Such a pity. All 13 tycoons of the Asura Palace are elites amongst geniuses. At a very young age, the 13th tycoon Liang Qing had already broken through to the First Grade Combat King realm, while the rest of the tycoons have even more powerful cultivations. Liang Qing was on a training journey in the Chaotic Ocean, but he was killed by the famous pirates there. I’m sure the Asura Palace will be furious upon hearing this.”

“That’s for sure. The Asura Palace is one of the strongest powers of the Liang Province, and their 13 Tycoons are all very famous. Something like this has never happened before. Nowadays, the pirates of the Chaotic Ocean are getting more rampant, and they actually have the guts to kill the 13th tycoon. They’re simply crazy!”

“I’ve heard that many of the younger generation geniuses of the Asura Palace are fighting to replace the 13th tycoon’s position. Also, the upper echelon of the Asura Palace also announced a mission. Anyone who is able to bring back the head of the pirate who killed Liang Qing will be the new 13th tycoon.”

“This is a great opportunity for those geniuses. The tycoons of the Asura Palace all have prestigious statuses. Not only are their positions supreme, they are also given the best resources from the Asura Palace. A privilege like that can make anyone envious. However, the Chaotic Ocean is famous for its chaotic environment, so it won’t be easy to kill those pirates and avenge Liang Qing.”

Many people were discussing the recent events in this restaurant. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow both heard every word the customers spoke. This Asura Palace was clearly one of the major powers in the Liang Province, and it was most likely similar to the Qi Province’s Black Sect back then in terms of strength across the continent. Of course, there was no way the Black Sect could compare with the Asura Palace. Even the Martial Saint Dynasty was weak in comparison.

From the discussions taking place, it wasn’t difficult to tell that these 13 tycoons carried a big weight in the Asura Palace. They were the elites amongst the geniuses. The fact that one of them had been killed in the Chaotic Ocean was big news to the people in this place.

“Buddy, do you know about this Asura Palace? And where is this Chaotic Ocean?”

Big Yellow curiously asked. He treated Jiang Chen as someone who knew every answer.

“I’ve never heard of this Asura Palace. The Chaotic Ocean is an

aquatic region that's rich with islands and resources. The people of the Liang Province journey to that place with hopes of finding something good, and that's the reason why it's such a chaotic place. Many pirates roam about freely, that's why it was named the Chaotic Ocean."

Having once been the greatest Saint underneath the heavens, the Asura Palace was just a small power in his eyes. Perhaps it was a new power that had emerged within the last century. That's why Jiang Chen had never heard of it before. As for the Chaotic Ocean, Jiang Chen had heard about it, but he had never been there yet.

"Why don't we pay this Chaotic Ocean a visit?"

Big Yellow was greatly interested in this place. He was a guy who could never settle for peace, and his biggest hobby was to add trouble to already chaotic scenes.

"We're in no rush, let's finish our meals first."

Jiang Chen smiled. In fact, he was interested in this Chaotic Ocean as well. He was 600 Dragon Marks away from breaking through to the Combat King realm, and if he paid a visit to the Chaotic Ocean, it should be enough for him to break through to the Combat King realm.

"Servant, where is this master dog's food? Hurry up, I'm starving!"

Big Yellow started yelling with his loud voice.

“Eat your farts! Everyone, get the hell out of this place!”

Right after Big Yellow finished his call, an extremely arrogant voice sounded out from outside the Golden Tower. After that, about a dozen men came walking into the restaurant. The few men who led the group were wearing the same clothes as the guards, and they all wore arrogant expressions.

After the group came in, the guards split up and positioned themselves in two lines, giving way to two men and a girl. These three were all dressed luxuriously, and their appearance was young and imposing. However, they all possessed powerful auras of Late Combat Soul warriors. The girl had a beautiful face and a pair of big breasts, but she gave off a debased feeling.

The arrival of these three immediately attracted the eyes of all. When the crowd looked at the young man standing in the middle, fear immediately emerged on their faces.

“He is young master Chang Qing, son of Hongyue City Lord, and inner circle disciple of the Asura Palace. Being a Late Combat Soul warrior at such a young age, he’s a truly talented man.”

“The other two are also inner circle disciples of the Asura Palace. Looks like we won’t be able to finish our meals this time.”

Someone recognized the identity of this newcomer and began whispering amongst themselves.

The restaurant manager and servant quickly came forth and bowed deeply toward Chang Qing, saying, "It's the Golden Tower's honor to have young master Chang Qing here."

"Save your breath. Our young master has booked this whole place, and now, all of you can get the hell out from here!"

One of the guards shouted loudly at the customers who were eating. He was chasing everyone away for his young master.

"Chang Qing, this is not very nice."

An awkward expression emerged on the manager's face. The Golden Tower was after all running a business, and chasing away all their customers would leave a huge negative impact on their reputation. Furthermore, as a distinguished guest of the Golden Tower, Chang Qing actually had his own private room on the upper floor, and that was the best treatment he could get here. But now, his decision to chase away all the customers brought an unsightly expression to the manager's face.

"Manager, my senior disciple Tan Lang is going to hunt for the pirates in the Chaotic Ocean soon, fight for the tycoon position. Today, he is here for a visit, and I'm going to use your Golden Tower as a venue to welcome him. For the Golden Tower, this is a great honor. Don't you think so?"

Chang Qing was waving the folding fan in his hand as he spoke.

“What?! Tan Lang of the Asura Palace?!”

The manager’s expression instantly changed upon hearing the name Tan Lang. This Tan Lang was a genius who recently made his debut. He had left the Asura Palace for a period of time and only returned recently. After he returned, he had quickly become a young Combat King, and the Asura Palace also had a very high opinion of him. He was also one of the most popular candidates for the tycoon position. A genius like this, not only the Golden Tower, even the Hongyue City Lord wouldn’t dare offend him easily.

Tan Lang’s reputation was obviously well known. When the customers who were still dining heard that he was coming, they immediately left everything behind, cupped their fist toward Chang Qing, and left.

Those customers were certain of one thing; with the situation like this, even if Tan Lang wasn’t here for his meal, there was no way they could sit here comfortably any longer. This Chang Qing was a famous spoilt son, and no one dared to offend him. Furthermore, he was accompanied by two disciples of the Asura Palace. In the Liang Province, the Asura Palace was like their king, and if someone challenged their authority, the entire Hongyue City could easily be turned into ashes.

Chang Qing was very satisfied with the situation, it made him feel as if he was given face in front of his fellow disciples. However, when he saw two fellows sitting comfortably next to a window, his expression immediately became cold.

The two who had yet to leave were obviously Jiang Chen and Big Yellow. Big Yellow was angry now, and began scratching the table with his hooves. He had nearly drowned in his own saliva, and even now, he had yet to eat a single thing. Thus, it was just a joke to ask him to leave this place.

“You two, quickly get the hell outta here!”

The guard furiously pointed his finger at Jiang Chen and Big Yellow.

“What are you yelling for?! Who do you think you are?! How dare you talk to this master dog like that?!”

Big Yellow would never take a small-fry like this seriously.

His words caused the guard to erupt with anger. As the guard of the City Lord Mansion, his nose would be pointed toward the sky no matter where he went, and everyone who met him would have to bow. However, a dog had just talked to him in such an arrogant manner. He was simply seeking death!

"Manager, when are you going to serve us our food?"

Without looking at Chang Qing and the others, Jiang Chen asked the manager.

The manager couldn't help but wipe some cold sweat from his forehead. He had no idea where this young man came from, and he had no clue why he was so ignorant, unable to see that all the other customers had left the place.

The manager didn't want his restaurant to be ruined. Before the guard could react, he hastily arrived in front of Jiang Chen. With a smile on his face, he said, "Young master, that man is the young City Lord. He has booked the entire place today, and I hope young master can pardon us."

"Is that so? I'm a young City Lord as well."

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone. His words were in fact true. He was the young City Lord of the Fragrant Sky City.

Chapter 490 – Benefactor

Jiang Chen's words and disdainful expression had completely provoked Chang Qing and the other two disciples of the Asura Palace. Those guards were the first that could no longer stand his behavior.

“Damn fool, you can't even keep your eyes open and look around?! How dare you be disrespectful to my young master?! You're seeking death!”

The leading guard stretched out his arm and grabbed toward Jiang Chen.

Boom!

Argh!!

Followed by a painful shriek, the guard was sent flying straight out from the Golden Tower. The sudden event brought shock to everyone. Although the leading guard wasn't really that powerful, he was a man who followed the young City Lord around, so he wasn't weak either. In fact, he was a Mid Combat Soul warrior.

A Mid Combat Soul warrior had been sent flying just like that, and amazingly, that young man in white was sitting still without even having moved. The manager, Chang Qing, and the other two disciples of the Asura Palace were all Late Combat Soul warriors. They weren't standing far away from Jiang Chen, but even so, none of them could see how Jiang Chen did it, and they were

completely clueless about where the force that knocked the guard away came from.

"Damn it!"

Chang Qing gritted his teeth tightly and put away his folding fan. He was about to charge toward Jiang Chen. Tan Lang was coming today, and Chang Qing wanted to welcome him at this Golden Tower. However, someone had actually not given him face, and to make things worse, he had done so in front of Chang Qing's senior disciples. Faced with this situation, even though he knew that the guy in front of him was really strong, Chang Qing just couldn't back away from the challenge.

Although Chang Qing was being impulsive, the other two disciples of the Asura Palace were rather calm. They pulled on Chang Qing's arm from both sides and signaled him not to be impulsive.

"You better not spoil my mood."

Not even raising his head, Jiang Chen said with an indifferent voice.

"Let's go."

The male disciple of the Asura Palace dragged Chang Qing's arm and walked toward the entrance. The group came in high spirits, but were forced to leave in a rather dejected spirit. This was a

disgrace to the Asura Palace's face, and even a disgrace to the City Lord's face.

However, the disciples of the Asura Palace were no idiots. If they knew that their opponent was really strong and still acted without any fear; attacking him recklessly, then they would be the true idiots. At that point of time, not only would they lose their face, perhaps they would also lose their lives.

"Manager, can you serve us our dishes now?"

Jiang Chen gazed at the manager with a smile on his face, causing him to shudder. Only now did he awakened from his shock. Without hesitating, he immediately replied, "Yes, it will be served right away!"

Outside the Golden Tower, Chang Qing and the other two disciples came to the guard who was lying flat on the ground. They sent forth their divine sense to inspect the guard's injuries.

"What an incredible approach! Knocking away a Mid Combat Soul warrior without even lifting a finger, and make him faint without hurting him."

The female disciple said in surprise.

"Looks like that man is only here for a meal. He doesn't have any foul intentions, and thus didn't hurt anyone."

The other male disciple said. He too was amazed by Jiang Chen's approach, "Injuring a Mid Combat Soul warrior isn't difficult, but to make him unconscious without even hurting him, that's something really difficult to do. Looks like we've underestimated that guy, he's most likely a Combat King."

"I don't think so. Since when has the Liang Province had such a young Combat King? That guy doesn't even look like he's twenty years old. Also, if he really is a Combat King from the Liang Province, it would be impossible for none of us to know about him. And he doesn't look like a Devil Cultivator."

The female disciple furrowed her brows.

"I don't think he's a Devil Cultivator either, as we know all of the geniuses from the Heavenly Devil Palace."

The male disciple shook his head.

"Hmph! I don't care who he is! Since he is brave enough to offend the Asura Palace, he is just courting death! Senior disciple Tan Lang will soon be here, we'll let him settle that guy."

Chang Qing coldly harrumphed. After losing face in front of senior disciples today, he was enraged.

"That's right. Senior disciple Tan Lang is a true Combat King! Since that guy doesn't give the Asura Palace any face, no matter what his background is, we'll have to punish him!"

A cold smile emerged on the female disciple's face.

After that, the group left the Golden Tower. Chang Qing ordered two guards to stay behind and watch Jiang Chen and Big Yellow's movements closely.

In fact, Chang Qing's order was completely unnecessary, as it was just a joke to make two guards watch Jiang Chen. If Jiang Chen really wanted to leave, even with both eyes wide open, those two guards would never be able to stop him.

Of course, Jiang Chen wasn't bothered by what was happening on the outside. When the table filled with delicious delicacies was served, he and Big Yellow began enjoying them heartily.

"Buddy, do you think that the young City Lord will come back?"

Big Yellow Dog asked.

"Of course he will, and that Tan Lang will be here as well. Let's just wait and see."

Jiang Chen responded with a smile.

"Buddy, I thought you said you wanted to stay low profile? But, I like this! Kaka!"

Big Yellow let out a mischievous laugh. He knew what Jiang Chen was thinking about. Jiang Chen was interested in the Chaotic Ocean, and he wanted to see what kind of abilities the geniuses of the Asura Palace possessed.

Outside the City Lord Mansion, there was an exquisite pavilion. Chang Qing and the other two disciples of the Asura Palace were sitting inside the pavilion, waiting. Suddenly, a figure emerged from a different spatial dimension. It was a man wearing black clothes. He was in his mid-twenties, and he looked very handsome. He was emitting Spatial Force from all over his body, signifying that he was a Combat King.

When Chang Qing and the other two disciples saw the man, they immediately stood up and bowed toward the young man in black, “Senior disciple Tan!”

“En. I’m just passing by Hongyue City today. After taking a day of rest, I’ll continued toward the Chaotic Ocean. You three can follow me and gain some experience.”

Tan Lang said.

His words instantly brought excitement to trio’s faces. For inner circle disciples like them, it was a dream to have a Combat King as their backing. They were well aware of Tan Lang’s true strength, as he was a near invincible existence amongst those of the same level, and was the most promising candidate for the 13th tycoon status. If they were to follow him, a bright future would be guaranteed.

“Senior disciple Tan, before you arrived, we went to the Golden Tower in order to prepare to throw a feast to welcome your arrival. However, we met with an unreasonable young man. Not only did he not give any face to the Asura Palace, he also injured my guard.”

Chang Qing explained what back in the Golden Tower to Tan Lang.

"Oh?"

Tan Lang was surprised to hear that someone actually dared to challenge the Asura Palace's authority.

“That guy looks to be about 17-18 years old, but his strength is incredible. We don't think we're capable of fighting him, that's why we waited for senior disciple Tan to arrive, so that you can teach him a lesson and let him know the consequences of insulting the Asura Palace.”

The female disciple said with a cold voice.

Tan Lang furrowed his brows slightly, then he told the trio, “Let's go, I'll follow you to see who this brave man is.”

After saying that, Tan Lang leapt into the sky and flew toward the Golden Tower. This was obviously not the first time he had come to the Golden Tower. Chang Qing and the other two disciples looked at each other, and they could all see the same excitement in

each other's eyes. Without hesitating, they immediately followed after Tan Lang.

The Golden Tower had no other customers now, only Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were having a big feast by themselves. The manager and servant were watching from the side, their facial muscles violently twitching. This man and dog duo had incredibly big stomachs. From the beginning until now, they had eaten seven tables filled with food, and they were currently eating the eighth table full of dishes. No one knew when they were going to stop.

Right at this moment, a few strong auras appeared outside the Golden Tower. In the following moment, four figures appeared inside the Golden Tower. When Chang Qing saw Jiang Chen and Big Yellow still eating, a sneer emerged on his face.

"Senior disciple Tan, this is the guy!"

Chang Qing furiously pointed his finger at Jiang Chen.

At the same moment, Tan Lang saw Jiang Chen. However, when he saw Jiang Chen's face, and especially the big yellow dog sitting opposite of him, he was struck dumb and glued to the ground, his face filled with shock. However, the shock quickly transformed into wild joy.

Jiang Chen who was fighting a difficult battle against his foot had long ago sensed a Combat King standing next to him. He was waiting for the newcomer to attack, but to his surprise, the newcomer had actually glued himself to the ground, and was

showing no intentions of attacking.

Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. He couldn't help but turn to the guy. When his eyes landed on the young black-clothed man, he too was shocked, because he knew this newcomer.

“Senior disciple Tan, he is that bastard I mentioned! Please teach him a lesson, let him know that the Asura Palace is not a place he can afford to offend!”

Chang Qing said, spirit high and vigorous, portraying an extremely arrogant attitude. He was like a fox assuming the majesty of the tiger; trying to bully someone under the protection of a powerful person.

Chang Qing's words woke Tan Lang up from his shock. He didn't teach Jiang Chen a lesson like Chang Qing had said, but instead turned around, stretched his arm forward and delivered a powerful slap to Chang Qing's face.

Clasp!

It was a loud and clear slap that instantly caused Chang Qing's face to swell up. Chang Qing was stunned by the slap, and not only him, the other two disciples were startled by what happened as well. They had no clue why Tan Lang didn't attack that young man and dog, but instead turned his aggression toward those on his own side.

But soon, the truth was revealed to them.

They saw Tan Lang walk toward Jiang Chen, then stand up straight and bow deeply, “Benefactor.”

The word ‘benefactor’ instantly stunned Chang Qing and the other two disciples. They were completely blank in regards to the scene unfolding in front of them. However, they knew Tan Lang was a very prideful man, and a man who could make him bow so deeply must be a man with an extraordinary background. At least, this man was not someone they could afford to offend.

"I never expected it to be you."

Jiang Chen smiled. This Tan Lang was none other than that young man in black who appeared at Mount Nether in the Southern Continent. Back then, when the battle had ended, that young man had left. He obviously had no intentions of getting involved in the Southern Continent’s conflicts. At that point, Jiang Chen had guessed that this man wasn’t someone from the Southern Continent, but instead might be someone from the Divine Continent. Jiang Chen had never expected to meet Tan Lang after just arriving at the Divine Continent.

Actually, it wasn’t surprising for Tan Lang to appear in the Divine Continent. After the war in the Southern Continent was concluded, Jiang Chen had spent a few months before setting off toward the Divine Continent. Apparently, Tan Lang had broken through to the Combat King realm after Jiang Chen saved him, and with the speed of a Combat King, as well as some other possible hidden tricks, it was not surprising for him to return to

the Divine Continent so quickly.

Chapter 491 - The Chaotic Ocean

“My name is Tan Lang. I didn’t have enough time to thank benefactor for saving my life that day. It’s truly a surprise for me to meet you here, this is excellent!”

Tan Lang was truly happy. For no reason at all, he had been dragged into the Southern Continent’s conflict, and he truly felt as if his luck was at rock bottom. No matter how much of a genius he was, there was no way he could be a match for Lord Nether. If Jiang Chen hadn’t freed him from that cage, he would be a corpse buried in the Southern Continent by now.

“Kid, since you’re from the Divine Continent, why did you go to the Southern Continent? And why were you captured by the Demon King Palace?”

While eating an unknown demon’s thigh, Big Yellow asked Tan Lang with an ambiguous voice.

“I went out to gain some experience, but I accidentally entered a spatial wormhole and was dragged into spatial turbulence. Initially, I thought I was doomed, but I luckily drifted to an exit, and that’s how I ended up in the Southern Continent. It just so happened that the demons of the Demon King Palace were capturing the human geniuses of the Southern Continent at that time, so I was thus captured by them. If benefactor hadn’t saved me that day, I would have long ago been killed in the Southern Continent. After that war, I believed that the Demon King Palace would quickly be annihilated with the help of a mighty warrior like benefactor, and since I originally had no intentions of getting

involved in the Southern Continent's conflicts, I left after that battle."

Tan Lang explained what happened to him, allowing Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to realize why he was in the Southern Continent. In fact, it truly was a coincidence. Who could have known that a genius saved by Jiang Chen was a man from the Divine Continent? And even more so that fate would bring them together right after Jiang Chen arrived at the Divine Continent? Originally, Jiang Chen thought there would be a conflict with Tan Lang, but judging from the current situation, it seemed that would be impossible.

"You truly are a lucky guy."

Jiang Chen said with a smile. What he said was indeed true. Usually, out of one thousand men who were dragged into spatial turbulence, perhaps only one could survive. And, what Tan Lang had experienced, finding an exit only after a short period of drifting about, it was even rarer. Also, not long after that, he also broke through to the Combat King realm. Judging from all of this, one could see that Tan Lang was a man with a great fate as well.

"Haha, I'm really happy today! Manager, I'll book this entire place today! Serve us all your best dishes and wines!"

Tan Lang joyfully laughed out as he sat down opposite of Jiang Chen. After carefully examining him, he discovered that Jiang Chen's aura had become much stronger than what it was when he killed Lord Nether, surprising him. Having such incredible strength at the Combat Soul realm was truly unbelievable. He wouldn't be able to find any abnormal geniuses like this even in

Asura Palace.

“I was in a rush that day, so I still don’t know benefactor’s esteemed name.”

Tan Lang said.

"Jiang Chen."

Jiang Chen smiled and clinked his glass with Tan Lang’s. This Tan Lang had given Jiang Chen a good first impression, and he wasn’t portraying any airs of superiority. As a genius of the Asura Palace, he was able to bow toward Jiang Chen in front of so many people. Just this alone was something that many people were unable to do, although it was a bit easier considering the fact that Jiang Chen had saved his life. The reason for this was that all geniuses cherished their face the most.

“Excellent! It’s truly great to meet Brother Jiang here! I’ll have to extend my hand of hospitality properly!”

Tan Lang joyfully laughed out. He meeting Jiang Chen today had finally taken a load off his mind. After Jiang Chen had saved his life back in the Southern Continent, he had been unable to forget about him.

“Why are you three still just standing there? Quickly, come here and apologize to Brother Jiang!”

Tan Lang turned his head to the trio and shouted at them.

The trio was startled for a brief moment, especially Chang Qing whose face was half swelled up. However, he dared not feel angry at all. Although he was the son of the Hongyue City Lord, he couldn't afford to offend Tan Lang. In the vast land of the Liang Province, the small Hongyue City was nothing special.

From Jiang Chen and Tan Lang's conversation, the trio were given a faint idea as to who Jiang Chen was. The young man who appeared out of nowhere had actually saved Tan Lang's life before. The trio felt it was a good thing that hadn't attacked Jiang Chen. If they had, even if Jiang Chen hadn't ended up hurting them, Tan Lang would definitely not let any of them off easily.

The female disciple hastily took a step forward and faced Jiang Chen with a charming smile on her face. At the same time, she looked at Jiang Chen with a seductive glance. However, in Jiang Chen's mind, this was completely useless. Compared to Wu Ningzhu, this girl was simply inferior.

"My name is Xu Qing. I didn't know that young master Jiang and senior disciple Tan knew each other. I hope young master Jiang can forgive my previous rude behavior."

Speaking with a soft and gentle voice, Xu Qing bowed faintly toward Jiang Chen. Her arrogance had all disappeared.

"My name is Huo Wei. I'm sorry for offending young master Jiang. I hope that young master Jiang doesn't take it to heart."

The other male disciple quickly bowed and apologized as well. Tan Lang was sitting in front of him, so he obviously had to behave properly.

Although half his face had swelled up, Chang Qing still staggered up to Jiang Chen. Right now, the way he looked at Jiang Chen had completely changed. When he remembered that he was the one who yelled the loudest, he felt a strong desire to slap himself twice. This young man in front of him was capable of saving Tan Lang's life, and that was enough proof that he was incredibly strong.

“Young master Jiang, I'm sorry.”

Chang Qing lowered his head and apologized.

“Fine, fine, it's alright, ignorance can be forgiven. Sit down and eat with us.”

Before Jiang Chen could say anything, Big Yellow waved the meat in his hand and forgave the trio.

Jiang Chen couldn't help but shake his head. All his face was being thrown away by this dog. On the other side, it wasn't easy for these three disciples to apologize to Jiang Chen, especially that young City Lord. He was a man with a prestigious status, and he had been pampered since childhood. He had not once needed to apologize to anyone. Thus, he apologizing to Jiang Chen made it obvious that Tan Lang carried a heavy weight in his mind.

The trio were glad to be forgiven, but they dared not sit together with Jiang Chen and Tan Lang. Therefore, they found themselves a table next to them.

"Brother Jiang, what happen to that Demon King Palace?"

Tan Lang curiously asked.

"What happened to it? Of course it has been annihilated by Little Chen and this master dog! Their Great Palace Chief, Lord Zhanlang who is a Second Grade Demon King was killed by Little Chen with just three steps!"

Big Yellow said in a prideful manner, as if it wasn't Jiang Chen who killed Lord Zhanlang, but himself. Big Yellow wasn't boasting, Jiang Chen had indeed killed Lord Zhanlang with the Azure Dragon's Five Steps.

However, when his words were heard by Tan Lang and the trio, the meaning had completely changed. Killing a Second Grade Demon King with just three steps? How incredible was that! The trio felt cold sweat running down their foreheads. When they remembered the scene of them pointing their fingers at this mighty warrior who was capable of easily killing a Second Grade Combat King, they felt as if they were truly about to court death, and felt really lucky to still be alive.

In the world of cultivators, the authority of the mighty could never be offended. In this world, there weren't too many rules; it

was simply a world that followed the rule of the jungle. If someone was ignorant enough to scold a Combat King, even if he was killed by that Combat King, it would be a death in vain.

Tan Lang was greatly shocked as well. He knew Jiang Chen was capable of killed a First Grade Demon King, but he never knew he actually possessed the ability to kill a Second Grade Demon King. This could no longer just be described as terrifying; Jiang Chen was simply an abnormal monster amongst all other monsters.

“Brother Jiang, your strength is truly amazing!”

Tan Lang let out an emotional sigh. It was nothing worth mentioning when someone was capable of killing a Second Grade Demon King, as there were many geniuses from the Asura Palace who were capable of doing that. However, killing a Second Grade Demon King as a Combat Soul warrior, that was a completely different matter.

“Brother Tan, I just arrived at the Divine Continent. I heard you’re going to the Chaotic Ocean to fight for the position of the 13th Tycoon of the Asura Palace, is that correct?”

Jiang Chen curiously asked.

“You’re right. The Asura Palace is one of the four major powers in the Liang Province, and being one of the thirteen tycoons will give you a status that’s more supreme than that of those core disciples, as a tycoon represents the Asura Palace’s honor. Not long ago, the 13th Tycoon was killed by the pirates of the Chaotic Ocean.

The upper echelons of the Asura Palace were angered by this, so they purposely announced a mission to let all the core disciples hunt for the pirates of the Chaotic Ocean. Whoever brings back the head of the pirate who killed the 13th Tycoon will become the new 13th Tycoon, and soar high up into the sky. This is a great opportunity for me, so I'll be going to the Chaotic Ocean. I will also take this opportunity to gain some experience for myself."

Tan Lang was keeping close watch on Jiang Chen's expression as he spoke. He wanted to know if Jiang Chen was interested in this Chaotic Ocean. If he was able to obtain Jiang Chen's help, the position of the 13th tycoon would almost certainly be in his bag.

"How's the overall strength of those pirates in the Chaotic Ocean?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"The Chaotic Ocean is a very messy place with good and bad people mixed together. There are many islands filled with rich resources. Ocean demons and pirates are running wild everywhere. However, there are conflicts between the pirates as well, causing the already messy situation in the Chaotic Ocean to be even messier. Amongst these pirates, there are seven of them who are the most famous, and one of them is the killer of the 13th Tycoon. He is a man with a fierce and brutal approach, and he really isn't easy to deal with."

Tan Lang's expression became serious upon mentioning the Chaotic Ocean.

“Since the Chaotic Ocean is such a messy place, why hasn’t the Asura Palace sent their mighty warriors to conquer the place, killing all the pirates to bring peace back to it?”

Jiang Chen asked.

"It's not that simple. The Chaotic Ocean is a very large place, and it doesn't belong to the Asura Palace. Furthermore, even if the Asura Palace were to kill all those pirates, the Chaotic Ocean would still remain in a chaotic state, and new pirates would emerge shortly afterwards. It's simply impossible to kill them all. The Asura Palace does want to resolve this problem, however, it's an excellent place for lower ranked disciples to gain experience."

Tan Lang explained.

Jiang Chen silently nodded his head. Tan Lang’s words made sense. A place like the Chaotic Ocean could never be pacified. Furthermore, a chaotic place like that was indeed an excellent place for lower ranked disciples to gain experience. So, if they really destroyed that place, it would be a pity.

“This Chaotic Ocean sounds like a nice place.”

Jiang Chen said with a smile. For a guy who could never settle for peace, the Chaotic Ocean was indeed a perfect place to be.

Chapter 492 – Heavenhawk Island

Hearing Jiang Chen express his interest in the Chaotic Ocean, Tan Lang instantly felt happy. He was previously wondering how he should ask Jiang Chen for help, so realizing that Jiang Chen was interested in going there was naturally great news for him.

“I’ll be going to the Chaotic Ocean tomorrow. I wonder if Brother Jiang can assist me? If you could go with me, I’m sure my hunting trip will be successful!”

Tan Lang asked Jiang Chen for help without beating around the bush. His honesty made Jiang Chen feel glad.

“You can be at ease! With the help of this master dog, I guarantee that you will become the 13th Tycoon!”

Before Jiang Chen could say anything, Big Yellow promised him. His words made it seem as if everything would be done with ease.

There was no doubt that Jiang Chen and Big Yellow’s promise was a great help for Tan Lang.

The same day, Chang Qing threw a grand welcoming feast for Jiang Chen and Tan Lang in the City Lord Mansion. Early morning the next day, the group set off toward the Chaotic Ocean.

The Chaotic Ocean was located within the Liang Province, but it wasn’t a place governed by the four major powers. It was a place

where true chaos existed. With Jiang Chen and Tan Lang's ability, it only took them a few dozen minutes to travel from Hongyue City to the Chaotic Ocean.

The blue sky was clear of clouds this day. In front of the group was a boundless stretch of water. Even from afar, they were able to sense the restless and chaotic aura filling the air above the ocean. Although the ocean surface seemed calm, there was a raging undercurrent beneath it.

The Chaotic Ocean wasn't as large as the ocean surrounding the Eastern Continent, but there were plenty of islands scattered across. Rich resources could be found on these islands, making them all something that many pirates sought after.

In the sky above the Chaotic Ocean, figures emitting powerful auras could be seen flying by from time to time.

"Brother Jiang, this is the Chaotic Ocean."

Tan Lang said.

"I heard there are seven pirate leaders here."

Jiang Chen said.

"That's right. Those seven pirates are known by many. All of them are Combat Kings, and they are all fierce and brutal. They truly are not easy to deal with."

Chang Qing explained.

"Are all of them human?"

Jiang Chen continued asking.

"No. Some of them are humans, some are demons. However, to become famous in the Chaotic Ocean, all of them are extremely cruel and merciless, and they are all criminal fugitives. They've also gathered a group of strong fugitives under them, and they also control the ocean demons to fight for them. Each of these seven pirates has their own force, making them difficult to deal with."

Tan Lang said.

"The pirate who is ranked as the strongest must be really strong then. Do you have any idea what realm he has cultivated to?"

Jiang Chen asked. He showed a great interest in those pirates of the Chaotic Ocean.

"I have no idea about this, I've never met him before. He is a very strange pirate, he has never robbed any cultivators before. Many of the cultivators who have visited the Chaotic Ocean have never seen this man either."

Tan Lang shook his head, expressing his lack of knowledge

regarding this number one pirate.

This caused Jiang Chen and Big Yellow to feel puzzled. This was a man even Tan Lang had no information about, a man who rarely showed himself to the public, and yet, he was called the number one pirate of the Chaotic Ocean. This was truly strange.

As if having noticed Jiang Chen's doubt, Tan Lang continue, "The number one title is given by the other six pirate leaders as well as the ordinary pirates. According to rumors, when that number one pirate first arrived at the Chaotic Ocean, he vowed to become the number one pirate. Many people refused to accept his claim and went ahead to challenge him. However, none of these challengers came back alive, causing him to eventually obtain the number one title."

"How can that be?"

Jiang Chen was startled for a moment, then a strong interest surged up in his mind. Without guessing, he knew that this must be an amazing guy. However, Jiang Chen was unable to understand one thing. This mysterious guy had claimed the title of the number one pirate, but he hadn't stolen anything from anyone, so why did he even want to become the number one pirate?

"Worry not, Brother Jiang, this is the first time we've come to the Chaotic Ocean, and we won't run into that number one pirate. He is a lone wolf, and he nearly maintains no contact with other pirates. All this time, no matter how big of an event takes place in the Chaotic Ocean, he has never showed himself."

Tan Lang tried to comfort Jiang Chen not to worry about this number one pirate.

"Tell me your destination for this trip."

Jiang Chen smiled. Tan Lang was here to kill a pirate and avenge the 13th Tycoon, and also show the name of the Asura Palace to this region.

"Heavenhawk Island. I have already gathered all information available. The 13th Tycoon died on this Heavenhawk Island."

Tan Lang said.

"The master of this Heavenhawk Island is one of the seven pirate leader of this Chaotic Ocean. As the shape of this island resembles that of a hawk, it was given this name. The original form of the Island Master is actually that of a hawk as well. He's at the peak of the First Grade Demon King realm, a terrifying existence."

From the side, Huo Wei told Jiang Chen the information he had about the Heavenhawk Island.

"First Grade Demon King."

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. Although this pirate wasn't a Second Grade Demon King, it was still very useful to him. If this hawk

demon possessed a special bloodline, Jiang Chen could use its demon soul to break straight through to the Combat King realm.

“We’re not far from the Heavenhawk Island. Let’s hurry over there and kill the Heavenhawk Island Master before anyone else does.”

In fact, before Tan Lang bumped into Jiang Chen, he had little confidence in this mission. Asking him to kill a peak First Grade Demon King was nearly an impossible mission, and he would perhaps have to work with other fellow disciples. But now, with Jiang Chen working with him, he had full confidence, as Jiang Chen was a man who had killed a Second Grade Demon King, let alone that Heavenhawk Island Master.

Led by Tan Lang, the group flew toward the Heavenhawk Island with great speed.

Four young men could be seen flying from another direction. Those four young men were wearing uniforms identical to the one Tan Lang and Chang Qing were wearing. Judging from this, one could easily see that these were also disciples of the Asura Palace.

These four men were all emitting powerful auras, and they all wore arrogant expressions. They were clearly men who had no respect for anyone. Of course, being able to reach the Combat King realm at such a young age, they deserved to feel a bit proud of themselves.

When Tan Lang saw the four men, the group saw them as well.

“I was wondering who it was, and it turned out to be junior disciple Tan. What’s wrong? You’re going to hunt for the Heavenhawk Island Master and fight for the position of the 13th Tycoon?”

One of the men said with a sarcastic tone. He was a First Grade Combat King, but when comparing talents, he was still weaker than Tan Lang. Jiang Chen could easily tell this with just a single look.

A faint smile emerged on Jiang Chen’s face. These men were obvious core disciples of the Asura Palace, and also competitors for the position of the 13th Tycoon. It was no wonder they behaved with such hostility toward Tan Lang.

“Of course. The position of the 13th Tycoon is obtained from fighting for it.”

Tan Lang said in a serious manner.

“Hmph! Tan Lang, you better not think so highly of yourself! With just the few of you, there is no way you can be a match for the Heavenhawk Island Master! Wait, who is this guy? I’ve never seen him before, and he’s not from the Asura Palace either? Oh, he’s not even a Combat King? Is this the helper you’ve found for yourself? Are you kidding me?”

Another man coldly harrumphed as he rested his eyes upon Jiang Chen’s face and made some ridiculing comments.

“Who are you? Others are fighting to become the 13th Tycoon, and what the fuck does that have to do with you?”

Jiang Chen gazed at the disciple from the Asura Palace and impolitely responded to his comments. When dealing with someone like this, Jiang Chen would never show any mercy.

"Bastard! What did you just say?!"

The man was instantly enraged as he unleashed his Combat King aura. It looked like he was about to attack Jiang Chen.

“Li Dong, enough! We will fight with our true abilities, there is no point in arguing like this! Do you really want to stir up an internal conflict before attacking Heavenhawk Island?”

Tan Lang suddenly shouted out. He was a man with guts, and it could easily be seen from how he fought back in the Southern Continent. Furthermore, if he was a soft man, he wouldn't have been able to rise so quickly amidst the fierce competition between disciples in the Asura Palace.

“Tan Lang, let me give you a friendly reminder. You are a man who just broke through to the Combat King realm, so don't overestimate yourself and try to fight for the position of the 13th Tycoon. Furthermore, you're no match for the Heavenhawk Island Master. As your senior disciple, let me point you toward a bright path; follow us and help kill the Heavenhawk Island Master, and elect senior disciple Li Hao as the new 13th Tycoon. Then, just keep

following him in the future. That can only bring you benefits.”

The youngster called Li Dong loudly said. The Li Hao mentioned by him was the muscular man who stood in the center of the group. He had not spoken a single word since the beginning, but the arrogance on his face was the strongest.

“In my opinion, you should all be polite to Tan Lang. If not, you will all suffer when he becomes the 13th Tycoon.”

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

“Where did this fool come from?! You’re just looking for trouble, you should die!”

Li Dong was clearly angered by Jiang Chen’s words. Without hesitating, he waved his hand and unleashed a bright beam that shot toward Jiang Chen with incredible speed. Before Jiang Chen could do anything, Tan Lang dashed forward, waved his hand and blocked the beam. After that, he shouted, “Li Hao! We will go our separate ways and fight for the position with our own abilities!”

After saying that, Tan Lang grabbed Jiang Chen and flew away. The reason why he blocked Li Dong’s attack was actually to save Li Dong. He had seen Jiang Chen’s approach to matters before, and if Jiang Chen really struck, Li Dong would face a devastating consequence for his action.

The reason he came to the Chaotic Ocean was to kill the master of

the Heavenhawk Island. He didn't want any conflicts to arise between Jiang Chen and the Asura Palace.

“Do you want this master dog to bite them to death?”

Big Yellow who hadn't spoken in a while suddenly bared his teeth in a ferocious manner.

“Just ignore them. Our target is the Heavenhawk Island.”

Tan Lang continued, “That Li Dong and Li Hao are brothers. Li Hao is a peak First Grade Combat King, a tough competitor. This time he has gathered a few men to help him out. It looks like he is determined to become the 13th Tycoon.”

Behind them, the group of four men looked at Tan Lang and the others who were flying away. Li Hao, who hadn't spoken a word suddenly spoke with a cold voice, “What ignorance. Once I become the 13th Tycoon, I'll teach him a good lesson.”

Chapter 493 - The Surging Undercurrent

As the disciples of the Asura Palace arrived, the once muddled Chaotic Ocean became even messier. The atmosphere filling this Chaotic Ocean region was completely tensed up.

“Brother Tan, how many Combat Kings are fighting to become the 13th Tycoon?”

Jiang Chen asked. As one of the major powers in the Liang Province, the Asura Palace must possess a force that no ordinary powers could compare with. Aside from their Thirteen Tycoons, they must still have many other great warriors.

“We currently have about a dozen Combat Kings amongst the core disciples, all First Grade Combat Kings. In the Asura Palace, once a disciple breaks through to the Second Grade Combat King realm, he will be given an even higher status. Even if he can’t become a Tycoon, he can also become a man working for one of the tycoons. For this competition, there are four men who are truly capable of fighting for the position. Li Hao is one of them, and the others have yet to arrive.”

Tan Lang said.

“It’s just a mere title, how come you’re all fighting so intensely for it? You guys are really boring.”

Big Yellow said in an indifferent manner.

His words caused Tan Lang and the trio to roll their eyes. In the Asura Palace, the Thirteen Tycoons held a most supreme status amongst the disciples. However, when it came out of Big Yellow's mouth, it was suddenly just a mere position. Throughout the entire Liang Province, perhaps only Big Yellow could say something like this.

Right at this moment, within the group's line of sight, they saw a huge wave erupt from the ocean and stand dozens of meters tall. On top of this enormous wave, a young man unleashed a huge, illusionary looking hand and grabbed tightly onto the head of an ocean demon. The ocean demon was struggling restlessly while letting out furious roars, but all its struggles came to a fail. No matter how hard it tried, it just couldn't escape from that young man's grasp.

“Hmph! You're just a tiny ocean demon, how dare you get in my, Ye Hui's way?! You're simply seeking death!”

The young man roared out. After that, a sharp force burst out from the illusionary palm and crushed the ocean demon's head, causing it to explode into a blood mist. With that, the ocean demon's gigantic body fell down from the sky. It died in a miserable manner, and its blood only served to stain the water. The young man stretched his arm forward and caught the demon soul that jumped out from its head, then he casually stored it away.

Jiang Chen and the group happened to pass by at the same moment. The young man turned around and saw Tan Lang. With a smile on his face, he said, “Oh, Tan Lang of the Asura Palace. With

your strength. I'm afraid it'll be difficult for you to kill the Heavenhawk Island Master and fight to become the 13th Tycoon."

After saying that, the young man turned around and flew away. He had just killed an ocean demon who got in his way as if it was an ant. In the Chaotic Ocean, battles like this could be seen everywhere, and all kinds of conflicts would erupt all over the Chaotic Ocean. This was a place with no rules, and whoever had the bigger fist would do the talking.

"Who was that kid? He has a face that deserves a good spanking."

Big Yellow said.

"He is Ye Hui from the Invincible Sect, a Combat King genius of the younger generation. I've seen quite a few men from the Invincible Sect, as well as some from the Peerless Sword Faction and Heavenly Devil Palace. All four major powers of the Liang Province have sent many of their men here to enjoy the upcoming scenes."

Tan Lang said.

"What is the relationship between the four major powers like?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"As the saying goes, a mountain can never fit two tigers; let alone four. The relationship between the four major powers is naturally

not harmonious, and conflicts emerging between them is normal. The Asura Palace, Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction are still able to communicate with each other, as they are all powers who follow an honest and upright path. However, the Heavenly Devil Palace is a power established by those who cultivate the path of devils. Thus, their relationship with the other three is the most hostile.”

Tan Lang continued explaining, as the 13th Tycoon of the Asura Palace was killed this time, the other major powers were naturally happy to hear about this. Now, with all the geniuses of the Asura Palace coming to the Chaotic Ocean to seek an opportunity to kill that pirate, it is perfectly normal for them to come here to watch the show.”

“Interesting. The situation has become much livelier.”

Jiang Chen chuckled. He was really happy about this situation, as he was able to bump into such a grand event right after arriving at the Divine Continent. Being able to take a glimpse at the geniuses of the Liang Province was something Jiang Chen really hoped to do. Meanwhile, Big Yellow was extremely excited. Unlike Jiang Chen, this was his first time in the Divine Continent, thus he was curious about everything in this land. Back in the Eastern and Southern Continents, he had only met a few Combat Kings, and all of those were old farts. However, at this place, he could easily bump into Combat Kings everywhere, and all of them were young men. He really enjoyed this situation.

Heavenhawk Island was located at the center of the Chaotic Ocean. It was an island with beautiful scenery. Green hills and

clear waters, magnificent waterfalls and flowing rivers could be seen everywhere. All of this made it a perfect place to make one's mind free and happy.

When Jiang Chen and Tan Lang finally arrived at Heavenhawk Island, a large crowd of people had gathered outside. There were at least a few hundred people hovering in the sky; the good and the bad mixed together, many of which were Combat Kings. The people in the crowd were all geniuses from the other three major powers, and they were here as indifferent spectators.

It was no secret that the geniuses of the Asura Palace were coming to the Heavenhawk Island today, seeking an opportunity to kill the Heavenhawk Island Master. Many people were here to watch the show. At this moment, Li Hao and the other three men formed a group with three other men, causing their group to now have a total of seven core disciples from the Asura Palace. They were now hovering outside the Heavenhawk Island.

Li Hao and his group furrowed their brows. They didn't attack the Heavenhawk Island straightaway because everyone could see a layer of a crystal-like shield covering the island. It was complete formation, and it fully covered the entire Heavenhawk Island.

“Fuck, looks like the Heavenhawk Island Master has prepared himself. He actually found himself an Island Protection Formation.”

Chang Qing couldn't help but curse.

“This formation is utilizing the Chaotic Ocean’s power. Although it’s only using a tiny portion of it, it still can’t be underestimated. No First Grade Combat King can break it unless many of them join together and launch a combined attack.”

Big Yellow said, his eyes shining brightly. He had mastered the Heavenly Book of Source Formations, so no formations were able to escape from his judgment.

“Does that Heavenhawk Island Master think he can be spared with this formation?”

Tan Lang started laughing.

Jiang Chen rested his eyes upon the island in front of him. He was able to instantly feel a different aura coming from it. This made him feel that the Heavenhawk Island definitely had more to it than this simple defensive formation. As a man who cultivated the Great Soul Derivation skill, his senses were incredible when compared to others.

“Hmph! Let me see how powerful this defensive formation is!”

Li Dong coldly harrumphed. He took a step forward and forcefully punched out, unleashing an extremely bright beam from his fist. This bright beam looked like an indestructible weapon, and it carried an enormous force as it crashed into the crystal-like shield.

Boom!

A loud explosive sound echoed throughout the scene, and the space was ripped apart by this frightening strike. However, the shield only swayed slightly before returning to its perfect form. After withstanding the powerful strike of a Combat King, it received no damage.

"What?!"

Li Dong's eyes went wide in an instant.

"Haha, a genius of the Asura Palace is nothing more than this. If you want to kill me, prove yourself by breaking this formation first!"

A voice rang out from the Heavenhawk Island, passing through the formation and entering the ears of the crowd. It was an extremely arrogant voice.

"It's the Heavenhawk Island Master's voice."

A gloomy expression appeared on Tan Lang's face.

"Let's attack together! I refuse to believe we can't break this damn formation!"

Li Hao shouted. After that, he took the lead and unleashed an

attack. At the same time, Li Dong and the other two Combat Kings unleashed their attacks as well. Four First Grade Combat Kings worked together, throwing extremely powerful attacks at the formation. However, they still failed to destroy it. The formation was still standing strong, as if there was no way for any of them to cause it any damage. Although the combined attack of the four had caused the formation to violently sway, it still showed no signs of breaking.

“Haha, it’s useless. It doesn’t seem that this formation will be easy to break. In my opinion, you should wait for the other warriors of the Asura Palace to arrive, and attack it all together! Only then will you have the chance to break it! Of course, you can also invite us to help you out!”

Ye Hui who was watching the show joyfully laughed out.

“This is the Asura Palace’s matter, we don’t need your help.”

Li Hao coldly harrumphed.

“Elder brother, what should we do now? The Heavenhawk Island Master is hiding on the island and doesn’t want to show himself, and we can’t break this formation.”

Li Dong asked.

“Li Hao, although Ye Hui’s words are unpleasant to the ear, I think the only way to break it is to wait for all the mighty warriors

of the Asura Palace to arrive. Then, we'll combine our strength and break the formation."

A man from the trio who had joined up with Li Hao's group spoke. He was a young man who looked to be in his late twenties. Although he looked a little skinny, his body was still well-balanced. His name was Xiu Rui, and he was one of the most powerful competitors for the 13th Tycoon position, one of those mentioned by Tan Lang earlier.

"Xiu Rui, when everyone is here and we've killed the Heavenhawk Island Master, who will take credit?"

Li Hao asked.

"We'll play by our own strength. Whoever kills the Heavenhawk Island Master is the one who takes the credit."

Xiu Rui responded with a smile.

"Alright, I'll wait for the rest of the guys to come here, then we'll combine our strength and break this formation. After that, let's see who is capable of killing the Heavenhawk Island Master."

Li Hao agreed with the proposal.

No matter who it was, Li Hao or Xiu Rui, both of them had simply excluded Tan Lang when discussing possible solutions. Apparently, they didn't take Tan Lang seriously. Perhaps they

were thinking that Tan Lang was not qualified to be their competitor. After all, although Tan Lang had extraordinary talent, he had only recently broken through to the Combat King realm, so it was normal for these guys to look down on him.

Jiang Chen naturally caught all of this with his eyes, bringing a faint smile to his face. This was a common occurrence amongst disciples of a powerful sect, where they would constantly be fighting amongst each other. Situations like this one would appear no matter where one went. This was a common occurrence in the world of cultivation.

After that, Jiang Chen rested his eyes upon the crystal-like shield once more. He circulated his Great Soul Derivation skill and thoroughly examined the formation. His expression suddenly changed slightly, “This formation wasn’t created by just one person. I can feel a few auras coming from it. Looks like there’s something fishy going on in this Heavenhawk Island. There is more than one Combat King in there, and there’s even a Second Grade Combat King.”

Jiang Chen thought to himself. This discovery brought him a lot of shock. At the same time, he felt curious, “If there are more mighty warriors hiding within the island, they wouldn’t have to fear these geniuses of the Asura Palace, so why did they set up this formation? And the way they set it up wasn’t done perfectly either, as if they purposely left a weakness on it. With about ten Combat Kings attacking it, it would break in an instant. So, why did the Heavenhawk Island Master want to put up this seemingly useless formation?”

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes he had a feeling that today's battle at the Heavenhawk Island wouldn't be as simply as these people imagined.

Chapter 494 - Six Pirate Lords Appear Together

More and more people were gathering around the Heavenhawk Island, and most of them were just here to spectate. From time to time, more geniuses from the Asura Palace would arrive, joining Li Hao and Xiu Rui's group.

Jiang Chen narrowed his eyes while keeping his mouth shut. He was pondering about the Heavenhawk Island Master's plot. Suddenly, Jiang Chen's eyes lit up as he recalled the conversation between Li Hao and Xiu Rui just now.

This formation couldn't be destroyed with only a few men. Li Hao and Xiu Rui were waiting for the other geniuses of the Asura Palace to arrive, so that they can launch a combined attack.

Rope in all of the enemies and eliminate them with one stroke.

That's right, this was most likely the Heavenhawk Island Master's true purpose. The solution Li Hao and the others had come up with was exactly what the Heavenhawk Island Master wanted, this was the only reasonable explanation. If not, it would be unnecessary for the Island Master to put up this formation. He was only using this formation to temporarily halt them, and wait until all the geniuses of the Asura Palace arrives; only then would he launch a surprise attack.

If Jiang Chen was right, once all the men of the Asura Palace arrived, without them even having to attack the formation, it

would break by itself. At that point of time, all the mighty warriors hiding in the Heavenhawk Island would storm out and eliminate all geniuses of the Asura Palace in one swoop.

"What a vicious approach."

Jiang Chen had to admit that the Heavenhawk Island Master's approach was very vicious. However, there was still one thing Jiang Chen couldn't understand. What kind of hatred did this Heavenhawk Island Master have toward the Asura Palace? Why did he want to kill all their geniuses in one go?

Although the pirates of the Chaotic Ocean were considered villains, it didn't mean that they would toy with their own lives. Under normal circumstances, when facing a major power like the Asura Palace, none of them would needlessly risk provoking them. It was logical that the Heavenhawk Island Master killed the 13th Tycoon because of a conflict, but when faced with this large group of geniuses who all wanted to kill him, not only did he not run away for his life, he actually set up a crafty trap. Didn't he know that the Asura Palace would unleash their fury upon him if he really killed all these geniuses?

The answer was an obvious no. Unless the Heavenhawk Island Master was an idiot, there must be a reason behind it.

Jiang Chen slightly tilted his head upwards, quietly staring at the Heavenhawk Island, awaiting any sudden changes.

"Hmph! Once all our men are here, we'll break this defensive

formation! After that, I'll teach that damn hawk a good lesson!"

A newly arrived genius of the Asura Palace coldly harrumphed, portraying an incredibly arrogant attitude.

More people gathered around to watch, and more geniuses from the Asura Palace arrived as well. One hour later, thirteen geniuses from the Asura Palace had arrived, and including Tan Lang, there were fourteen of them.

"Most of us are here. Everyone, get ready! Do as we all agreed upon; destroy this formation with one combined strike! As for the Heavenhawk Island Master's head, we'll let our own strength decide who gets it!"

Li Hao said. After that, Li Dong turned to Tan Lang. With a cold voice, he asked, "Tan Lang, what do you think?"

"I'll attack with you, of course."

Tan Lang took a step forward. He had to stand out at this moment, because if he didn't provide his strength, it was equal to him giving up the chance to fight to become the 13th Tycoon. Also, after this matter was resolved, all these senior disciples of his would definitely harass him.

"Little Chen, let's attack as well!"

Big Yellow was very eager to stir things up.

“What’s the rush? Let’s just pay attention to the situation for now.”

Jiang Chen said.

“Young master Jiang, shall we attack as well?”

Huo Wei asked. He, Chang Qing and the female disciple felt that they were completely useless here in the Chaotic Ocean.

“Let me give you a suggestion. You should mix in with that crowd over there, and pretend you’re just here to watch the show. If not, you’ll most likely have to face a life-threatening situation later on.”

Jiang Chen gave them a friendly reminder. He knew something fishy was going on today, and with the trio’s strength, joining the battle was no different from committing suicide. Within a battlefield full of Combat Kings, any existence below that realm would most likely die.

The trio looked at each other for a brief moment before finally nodding their heads. They felt that Jiang Chen’s words were correct, and they were well aware of their own strength. Thus, the trio turned around and left the battlefield.

“Everyone, let’s begin! I need all of you to attack with all your strength; we need to rip this damn formation apart with a single

strike!”

Xiu Rui shouted at the group. However, a scene that brought great shock to everyone was revealed. Before the group could even attack, the crystal-like shield just disappeared without a trace. The formation that protected the Heavenhawk Island had vanished, as if it had never been there before.

"What?!"

The group cried out in shock. They weren't alone, even all the spectators were surprised by this. No one had any idea what the Heavenhawk Island was up to, as they actually removed their defensive formation at this most critical moment. Could it be that the Heavenhawk Island Master knew he couldn't escape from death, so he gave up on defending?

No one had any clues, but one man was able to maintain the same calm expression; Jiang Chen. The situation had proven his guess. Up next, the real show was going to be revealed.

“Haha, Heavenhawk Island Master, I didn't think you were so self-aware! So, you know that you can't escape from death today, and thus gave up on defending! Since that is the case, show yourself quickly and face your death!”

Li Hao laughed out as he shouted toward the Heavenhawk Island. His voice was like a sudden clap of thunder, and it echoed throughout the entire sky above the island, making sure that everyone could hear him, loud and clear.

“Is that so? We’re not sure who will have to face death. Geniuses of the Asura Palace, since you’re all here, don’t ever think you can leave again!”

An extremely sharp voice rung through the air. In the following second, a black figure shot out from the Heavenhawk Island like a sudden clap of thunder. It was a middle-aged man with a skinny body, a long hawk-like nose, and a pair of black wings behind his back. He was none other than the Heavenhawk Island Master.

“En? Why can I sense a human aura from this hawk?”

While looking ahead with his sharp eyes, Jiang Chen was surprised by what he saw. The original form of the Island Master was that of a rare Combat Hawk. However, Jiang Chen could actually sense an indistinct human aura from its body. This was truly abnormal.

Not only this, Jiang Chen could also see the real cultivation of this Combat Hawk. It was actually a Second Grade Demon King. Although he was hiding his real cultivation, suppressing it down to the peak First Grade Demon King realm, he couldn’t hide it from Jiang Chen. No wonder this Island Master was capable of killing the 13th Tycoon.

Before he could think about this matter any further, another five powerful auras emerged from the Heavenhawk Island. In the blink of an eye, they all appeared in the sky and hovered in different places.

Each of these five men were emitting powerful auras. Among them there was a muscular man who was a Second Grade Combat King. His overall strength was much greater than that of the others in the group.

“What?! Six Pirate Lords of the Chaotic Ocean!”

Tan Lang was the first man to react. He recognized these six men in front of him. They were the infamous Pirate Lords of the Chaotic Ocean! Out of the Seven Pirate Lords, aside from the mysterious number one pirate, all the other six were here.

It was said that the relationship between these seven pirates was not harmonious, and that they were frequently fighting amongst each other. However, today they had actually grouped together. Judging from the situation, it seemed like they had teamed up in order to deal with the geniuses of the Asura Palace. This was a really unexpected scene for everyone.

Chapter 495 - Disposal

The situation had suddenly changed. Although the Asura Palace had more men compared to their opponent, all of them were just First Grade Combat Kings. If their opponent was the Heavenhawk Island Master alone, even if he possessed the combat strength of a Second Grade Demon King, these geniuses could still fight him, and perhaps even kill him if they all worked together. However, they now had to face six of the Pirate Lords, and one of them was a Second Grade Combat King.

Furthermore, the pirates of the Chaotic Ocean were well-known for their savage and fierce attitudes. All of them possessed murderous approaches. Now, with the combination of six Pirate Lords, although the Asura Palace outnumbered their opponent, they would most likely fail to even defend themselves.

At the moment, all the disciples of the Asura Palace wore unsightly expressions on their faces. After all, the ferocious reputation of these six Pirate Lords was no joke.

“Young brats of the Asura Palace, I bet none of you ever thought of this! The formation was just a trap! What daddy wanted to do was catch you all in one go! I want to vent my anger on all of you!”

After gnashing his teeth and speaking, the Island Master burst into laughter. A gruesome hatred leaked out from his eyes. On the other side, Jiang Chen saw the Island Master's expression. Although he didn't know how to read other people's mind, he could easily tell something from the Island Master's expression. The hatred this Island Master had toward the Asura Palace was

very strong.

However, even though the Heavenhawk Island Master wanted to vent his anger on the Asura Palace, why would the other five Pirate Lords get involved? None of them were stupid.

Jiang Chen felt that things were getting more interesting. There must be some resentments between the two parties involved.

“This is unexpected. Six of the seven Pirate Lords have ganged up to fight these geniuses of the Asura Palace. Truly unbelievable.”

“These Pirate Lords have never gotten along with each other, and I never thought they would team up one day. I’m guessing there must be some benefits involved. If not, these guys wouldn’t risk offending the Asura Palace.”

“Looks like something big will happen today. Six Pirate Lords, and there is even a Second Grade Combat King among them. If they really fight these geniuses of the Asura Palace, I’m curious about how many will die.”

Many people were surprised to see how things turned out, as none of them had expected this to happen. However, none of the spectators would complain about such a grand scene appearing. The livelier it was, the happier they were.

“Everyone, let’s wait no more and strike together! Don’t let any

of these geniuses escape, I want them all dead today!”

The Heavenhawk Island Master turned to the other Pirate Lords and said.

“No problem. However, don’t forget the conditions you’ve promise us. I suppose you know that killing these geniuses won’t be without consequences.”

The Second Grade Combat King said.

“Don’t worry. As long as you guys help me kill them, I won’t put my hands on anything you find from them. Also, I, Zhan Ying will hand over any treasures I find, and the secret skill you want.”

The Heavenhawk Island Master said.

The crowd now finally understood why these six Pirate Lords had teamed up. The Heavenhawk Island Master had promised them some handsome rewards and conditions.

“You better not involve yourself with this! This is the resentment between us, the Asura Palace and the Heavenhawk Island Master! I suggest you stay out of this, because this will bring you nothing good!”

Realizing that things were moving towards a bad development, Xiu Rui quickly spoke.

"Save your breath! Attack!"

The Heavenhawk Island Master shouted. A sharp saber appeared in his hand, and at the same time, his aura changed tremendously. From the First Grade Demon King realm, it instantly shot up into the Second Grade Demon King realm. After that, with incredible speed, he charged toward one of the disciples of the Asura Palace.

"What?!"

All disciples of the Asura Palace cried out in shock simultaneously. They never expected the Heavenhawk Island Master to hide his real cultivation, and that he was in fact a Second Grade Demon King. It was no wonder he could kill the 13th Tycoon. All 13 Tycoons of the Asura Palace were elite geniuses, and they would rarely be defeated by anyone in the same realm as themselves. However, if the Heavenhawk Island Master was a Second Grade Demon King, it all made sense.

"This bastard actually hid his real cultivation?!"

Li Hao couldn't help curse. A Second Grade Combat King was really difficult to defeat, and now they had to deal with a Second Grade Demon King as well. No one knew how many geniuses the Asura Palace would lose in this battle.

"Stop him!"

Xiu Rui shouted out. Together with the other two men, he took the initiative to attack, and charged toward the Heavenhawk Island Master. When faced with a formidable Second Grade Demon King, even with the combination of the three of them, there was no way they could have any advantages.

Boom!

The space was ripped apart by the devastating attacks. The battle between Combat Kings could easily shake the heavens and earth, sending raging tsunamis rolling across the ocean surface. Without hesitating, all the spectators quickly moved back, not daring to stay too close to the battlefield. Although three geniuses of the Asura Palace had worked together, they still couldn't withstand the Island Master's devastating attack. The three were instantly sent flying backwards, their expressions turning extremely unsightly.

Flapping the wings on his back, the Island Master shot toward one of the injured disciples, then slashed the saber in his hand toward him.

Argh!!

The saber was simply too fast, and with the gap between their cultivation, regardless of how quickly that disciple could react, one of his arms was still chopped off by the Island Master, causing his blood to rain down from the sky.

Seeing this, Xiu Rui was struck with great fright. All the Asura

Palace disciples hastily rushed over to the disciple to help. They were facing a formidable Second Grade Demon King, so no one dared show any neglect to this situation. The only thing currently certain was that their only advantage laid in their numbers. If this number was reduced, they would quickly be greeted by death.

Furthermore, the six Pirate Lords had prepared well. This could easily be told from the positions they were standing in. They would never let these disciples escape.

“Jiejie... boys, come and face your death! Your grandpa really enjoys killing geniuses!”

Another pirate evilly laughed out as he attacked the disciples. The entire scene had instantly become chaotic. It was an extremely intense battle, and some of the disciples had already been injured right when the battle commenced. The Island Master was too fierce and aggressive, as if there was a terrible hatred between him and the Asura Palace, so he would never show any mercy when attacking. Although there were many geniuses who tried to stop him, he still kill the genius who lost his arm with a brutal method.

“It’s over. It looks like the Asura Palace is going to suffer huge losses today. The approach of these six Pirate Lords are far more vicious than most others. Since they’re able to dominate the Chaotic Ocean, it simply means that they are all elites amongst those of the same level. Although these disciples of the Asura Palace are all geniuses, there is no way for them to fight these pirates equally, let alone the fact that there are two Second Grade Combat/Demon Kings among their enemy.”

“Hehe, perhaps the Asura Palace is going to cry over this.”

All the spectators were watching with mixed feelings. As for the geniuses from the other three major powers of the Liang Province, they were happy to see this, as their relationship with the Asura Palace wasn't harmonious. So, faced with this situation, it could already be considered kind of them to not drop a stone down on the man who fall into a well. They would never provide them any help.

Argh...

Another miserable and painful cry was heard from one of the disciples. It was the last cry of another genius. The group once containing 14 geniuses now only had 12 men.

"Brother Jiang, please help us!"

While Tan Lang was fighting a First Grade Combat King pirate, he turned his head and hastily told Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen didn't say anything. His eyes had locked down on one of the pirates. He had thoroughly examined his enemies just now. Among all these pirates, aside from the Island Master, two more pirates were demons. Two First Grade Demon Kings. They were Jiang Chen's target. After killing them, he would have two First Grade Demon King demon souls, which was enough for him to break through to the First Grade Combat King realm.

Due to the Heavenhawk Island Master and the other Second Grade Combat King attacking so aggressively, they had attracted most of the Asura Palace's disciples. Thus leaving a few Pirate Lords hovering on the spot without anything to do.

When Jiang Chen looked at one of the Demon Kings, that Demon King also turned his gaze toward Jiang Chen.

“This kid's Yang energy is extremely strong! If I can eat him, it will definitely bring me tremendous benefits!”

The Demon King smiled wickedly as he shot himself toward Jiang Chen.

At the same time, another First Grade Combat King targeted Big Yellow.

“Damn, this dog is big! Looks like we'll be able to have a big feast tonight!”

The First Grade Combat King struck at the same time as that Demon King and charged toward Big Yellow.

Seeing this, Jiang Chen and Big Yellow looked at each other, and both revealed joyful smiles.

Right when both pirates arrived in front of Jiang Chen and Big

Yellow, both of them moved. Jiang Chen and Big Yellow were incredibly fast, so fast that their opponents couldn't even react.

Kaka!

Big Yellow laughed out. After that, the powerful aura of a Demon King was unleashed from his body. Suppressed by this aura, the pirate's expression changed dramatically. However, before he could respond, Big Yellow's big head had already slammed into his body.

Boom!

The pirate felt as if a gigantic mountain had just slammed into his body. His Yuan energy was instantly shattered by this enormous force, and he was sent flying hundreds of meters away, coughing up three mouthfuls of blood along his way.

Yet, before this pirate could express his shock, Big Yellow had once again arrived in front of him. With his big mouth wide open, Big Yellow forcefully bit down on the pirate's head, killing him on the spot.

Argh!!

At the same time, a miserable cry was heard from another corner of the battlefield. Jiang Chen unleashed a dragon claw and poked through the pirate's abdomen. Although the Demon King was still alive, Jiang Chen had gained total control of his Qi Sea.

Jiang Chen did this solely for treasure. All these guys were pirates, overlords of this Chaotic Ocean, so they must possess a lot of treasures.

When a cultivator breaks through to the Combat King realm, his body will undergo some changes. As a Combat King can utilize the Spatial Laws, they would open up a space within their own Qi Sea. At that point, no cultivator would store their items in a storage ring, because they could just place them all straight into the space within their Qi Sea.

Because of this, robbing a Combat King became extremely difficult. When a Combat King was killed, his Qi Sea would instantly be destroyed, and all the items stored within would vanish at the same time.

If all his belongings vanished upon death, it would truly be a huge loss. Since Jiang Chen was cultivating the Dragon Transformation skill, he needed a huge amount of resources to support him, so he naturally wouldn't let go of the chance to rob his opponent.

Few could actually rob a Combat King before killing him. Perhaps only someone like Jiang Chen possessed such means. At the last moment of a Combat King's life, he could always destroy his Qi Sea before anything, not allowing his enemy to take away his belongings.

Chapter 496 – Pirate

"No!"

Shocked and terrified, the Demon King stared at this young man in white. Sensing that his Qi Sea was being controlled, and feeling the life force within his body depleting, aside from shock, his mind was reeling with fear; the fear of death. Before he struck just now, he had never expected that this young man, who he had never met before, could be so incredibly strong. With just a single strike, he, a First Grade Demon King had lost his life to this young man, and there was no way he could fight back.

Chila.

A faint smile emerged on Jiang Chen's lips. With one pull, he retrieved everything stored within the Demon King's Qi Sea storage space. As it wasn't a good time to check it out, Jiang Chen immediately put it all into his own storage ring. Although he had the ability to kill Combat Kings and Demon Kings, he still wasn't a Combat King, and he had yet to form his own storage space within his Qi Sea, so he still had to use a storage ring.

Jiang Chen didn't check how many treasures he had just looted, but he guessed that a Demon King should have quite an amount of good belongings. A huge amount of Earth Restoration Pills, and probably a handful of Heavenly Restoration Pills. Usually, it was rare for a Combat King and Demon King to have Heavenly Restoration Pills, but this wasn't the case for these Pirate Lords. They made their living robbing others, bringing them a tremendous fortune. However, it all belonged to Jiang Chen now.

“Don’t blame me, you’re the one who tried to kill me first. So, it’s entirely reasonable that I kill you.”

Jiang Chen said in a seemingly regretful manner. He was comforting the Demon King before killing him. However, it only served to piss the Demon King off. After hearing Jiang Chen’s words, he simply threw up a mouthful of blood.

Not delaying any further, Jiang Chen destroyed the Demon King’s head with one punch. Then, he took out a bright demon soul from the destroyed skull.

From start to finish, this Demon King had never had the chance to transform back into his original form, and he was no dead. Of course, as the gap between their strength was too tremendous, even if he was allowed to transform back into his original form and unleashing his strongest attack, the ending would still be the same.

What happened instantly brought a tremendous storm to the crowd. The men who were fighting had temporarily stopped, including the Heavenhawk Island Master. Everyone were staring at this man and dog duo with tremendous shock. Li Hao and his group, who previously had an argument with Tan Lang were all struck dumb, and their mouths were wide open in shock.

"Incredible!"

“That young man is the helper invited by Tan Lang. I never expected him to be such a frightening warrior! And that dog is also

a Demon King!”

“A famous Pirate Lord of the Chaotic Ocean can’t even withstand a single strike from him, and was killed in seconds! And this young man isn’t even a Combat King?! How can this be possible?! Who is this young man, and why have I never heard of him before!”

The geniuses of the Asura Palace were struck with extreme shock. Since the beginning, none of them had taken Tan Lang seriously, and they would never put a Combat Soul helper invited by Tan Lang in their eyes. However, who could have thought that this young man was actually such a frightening warrior.

“Fuck! Why did such a strong guy suddenly appear? Two Pirate Lords were killed in such a short amount of time! I have never seen this young man before!”

“Did you guys see that? Before that young man killed the Pirate Lord, he took control of his Qi Sea and took away all the treasures stored within! Even a Second Grade Combat King is unable to do that!”

“What an incredible young man! And that Demon King dog is also very frightening, he killed a First Grade Combat King as well! I never expected the Asura Palace to get such powerful helpers! It seems that the result of this battle will now be uncertain.”

“Not necessarily. Although that young man can kill a First Grade

Demon King, he's only a Late Combat Soul warrior, not even a Combat King. I'm sure he's no match for a Second Grade Combat King."

No one were able to remain calm, and all spectators were struck with astonishment, especially those geniuses from the Invincible Clan, Peerless Sword Faction and Heavenly Devil Palace. Each and every single one of them were focusing on Jiang Chen. A Combat Soul warrior who was capable of instantly killing a Demon King, and was followed by another powerful Demon King. How could a young man like this not be known by anyone?

Among the crowd, Chang Qing and the other two disciples wore awkward expressions on their faces. They remembered how they started a conflict with Jiang Chen and Big Yellow back in the Golden Tower. Thinking back on that situation, if Jiang Chen and Big Yellow didn't show any mercy, none of them would've been able to stand here unhurt.

Throughout the entire scene, only Tan Lang was still able to remain calm. After all, he had personally witnessed Jiang Chen kill Lord Nether. But even so, the mighty performance of Jiang Chen still brought him great shock.

"Kill that young man!"

Clenching his teeth tightly, the Heavenhawk Island Master shouted out loudly. They had lost two Pirate Lords, completely opposite of what they expected. This young man who had appeared

out of nowhere had severely affected his plans.

“Hmph! A young kid who hasn’t even reached the Combat King realm! Let me kill him!”

The other Second Grade Combat King coldly harrumphed. He ditched the few Asura Palace disciples who he was fighting, then turned to Jiang Chen and launched an attack.

Seeing this, those geniuses couldn’t help but sigh out in relief. At the same time, they turned their glances toward Jiang Chen, but none of them showed any intentions of helping Jiang Chen.

Such a situation made Jiang Chen feel disgusted. These geniuses of the Asura Palace didn’t treat him as an ally, but just as a ‘bigger hand’ who could help them in this battle.

Boom!

The Second Grade Combat King launched an extremely powerful attack, forcefully punching out toward Jiang Chen. The enormous force contained within the attack immediately ripped a large hole in the space.

Hmph!

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He simply countered the attack with a punch of his own. It was a punch that contained no fancy skills or techniques. In the following second, the two attacks

collided.

Bam!

The collision instantly ripped apart a few layers of the space in an instant. The fierce, aggressive Second Grade Combat King couldn't withstand Jiang Chen's attack, and was forced back dozens of meters before he could stabilize his body.

"What?!"

Unable to restrain his shock, the Second Grade Combat King's face was filled with terror.

"Give me all your belongings, and I'll spare your life."

Jiang Chen told the Second Grade Combat King.

The Second Grade Combat King went blank, but was soon flooded with a feeling that this was funny, yet annoying. He was a Pirate Lord, and all this time, he had been the one to rob other people. However, today someone was actually trying to rob him?

A young man who tried to rob a Pirate Lord in the middle of a battle, this confused many people. This young man was truly an amazing man. In a scene like this, no one could differentiate between them, and see who the real pirate was.

"Seeking death!"

The Second Grade Combat King was immediately enraged. With his cultivation, he refused to believe he couldn't defeat a youngster who wasn't even a Combat King. He just thought of this matter as him taking the enemy too lightly, causing him to be forced back just now, and that the only reason this young man could do so was because he had a strong body.

This time, the Second Grade Combat King took out his King Weapon. It was a sword that shone brightly. With a swing, he tore a large crack in the space, causing ice-cold wind to blow out from the crack. Without hesitating further, he swung it toward Jiang Chen's head.

"You have chosen the hard way to solve this."

Jiang Chen raised his head and gazed at his opponent, a cold light flashing through his eyes. When dealing with an outlaw like this Pirate Lord, he had no choice but to employ a vicious approach.

Thus, without delaying any further, he waved his arm and revealed the Heavenly Saint Sword. The sword issued a loud cry, then he swung it toward the enemy's King Weapon.

Clang!

The two sword collided with each other, sending bright sparks in all directions while ripping the space apart, causing numerous

cracks to appear. The Second Grade Combat King was still no match for him, and was once again knocked back by the powerful force. A bloody scar was visible on his palm, and he could barely hold onto his King Weapon.

Now, the Second Grade Combat King felt true fear. He couldn't understand how a young man, who wasn't even a Combat King, could possess such frightening strength.

The result of this battle terrified many people. Numerous people turned their heads toward Jiang Chen, even forgetting that they were in the middle of a battle. These people were certain of one thing; if this young man was capable of even killing a Second Grade Combat King, today's battle would basically be meaningless.

Swoosh!

With a sway of his body, Jiang Chen used the Nine Phantom Wolves skill. Nine identical Jiang Chens appeared at the same time and formed a tight circle around the Second Grade Combat King.

"What?!"

The Second Grade Combat King was dazzled by this, and had no idea how he should counter this. However, Jiang Chen didn't give him any time to ponder. His cultivation had already reached the peak of the Combat Soul realm, and compared to the time when he killed the Old Great Emperor and the Demon King Palace's Palace Chiefs, he was now many times stronger. Thus, killing a Second Grade Combat King was just a piece of cake to him now.

Puchi! Puchi!

Two slicing sounds rung throughout the air as Jiang Chen swung his sword and took away both of the Second Grade Combat King's arms.

Huala!

Before the Second Grade Combat King could respond, nine Jiang Chens merged into one, and the Heavenly Saint Sword was placed against his throat.

"Give me all your belongings, and I'll spare your life. If not, I'll just kill you."

Jiang Chen said with an extremely cold voice. Compared to the life of this Second Grade Combat King, Jiang Chen cared more about the treasures stored in his Qi Sea space. Although Jiang Chen could kill a Second Grade Combat King, he couldn't do it like how he killed a First Grade Combat King; taking control of his Qi Sea and taking all his treasures first.

"Don't kill me! I'll give you everything I got!"

Although the Second Grade Combat King had lost both his arms, he still didn't want to lose his life. He had witnessed how frightening and brutal Jiang Chen was. This young man's cold eyes, his brutal approach; they were all far more aggressive than

that of the Pirate Lord himself. Beyond any doubt, this Second Grade Combat King believed every single word Jiang Chen told him. If he dared to say no, this young man would definitely kill him without hesitating.

Though his treasures were important, compared to his life, they were nothing much.

"Die now!"

Right when the Second Grade Combat King was about to hand over all his treasures, the Island Master struck. With both eyes turned red, he charged toward Jiang Chen with his saber in hand. His elaborate scheme had been ruined by this young man, and he was unable to suppress the fury in his mind. This young man also possessed extremely formidable strength, so if he didn't attack him right now, he would be the next target after the Second Grade Combat King was dealt with. At that point of time, not only would he be unable to do anything to those geniuses of the Asura Palace, his own life would be at stake as well.

"Hmph!"

Jiang Chen coldly harrumphed. He didn't even turn his head toward the Island Master. With a casual swing, the Heavenly Saint Sword transformed into a dazzling beam and slashed against the Island Master's saber. The terrifying force instantly forced the Island Master back.

Chapter 497 - Scram!

Every single person present was stupefied. No one could have thought that this young man who appeared out of nowhere was so powerful, even to the point that a Second Grade Combat King is no match for him.

The people from the Asura Palace were the most shocked ones. When they turned to Tan Lang, they noticed that he too seemed shocked. It looked like even Tan Lang didn't expect the helper he invited to be so awesome.

Two of the six Pirate Lords had been killed, and it didn't seem that the Second Grade Combat King would be able to escape from death either, unless he handed over all his treasures. However, even if he did so, it also depended on if Jiang Chen would honor his words and spare his life. What seemed like a guaranteed victory had instantly collapsed, causing the Heavenhawk Island Master to furiously roar out. He waved the saber in his hand and once more attacked Jiang Chen.

"Big Yellow, stop him."

Jiang Chen didn't even take a look at the Island Master, he just casually gave out his order.

Hearing his words, Big Yellow's eyes instantly lit up. With a sway of his large body, a light flickered above his head and he charged toward the Island Master. Although he was just a First Grade Demon King, he had an extremely powerful bloodline, giving him

more than enough strength to fight a Second Grade Demon King.

Boom!

When Big Yellow's head collided with the Island Master's King Weapon, a metal clanging noise was produced, and a large amount of sparks were sent in all directions. Shockingly, the big yellow dog wasn't hurt at all.

"What?!"

The Island Master cried out on shock and was unable to remain calm any longer. He was a Second Grade Demon King, and he had swung his King Weapon with all his strength. Yet, he was unable to hurt a dog's head. This was completely absurd!

"Damn, this dog is so amazing! He's just a First Grade Demon King, but he is able to fight against a Second Grade Demon King!"

"The key is that this dog's head is too powerful! It's able to confront a King Weapon without getting hurt! If I hadn't seen this myself, I wouldn't have believed it at all!"

"This is absurd! This dog's weapon is actually his head! I never expected the two helpers invited by Tan Lang to be so incredible! The six Pirate Lords of the Chaotic Ocean are doomed this time!"

Everyone were shocked. Not only was this young man incredibly powerful, even his dog possessed a tremendous amount of strength. This was a scene that no one could accept with ease.

"Die for me now!"

The Island Master had yet to give up, and he repeatedly attacked Big Yellow. He had spent a lot of time preparing for today, and yet, everything was going to fail. He was unwilling to accept this fact.

"Kaka, this master dog feels delighted from looking at how you're burning with rage! However, if you want to kill this master dog... Fat chance!"

Big Yellow joyfully laughed out as he moved his tremendous body at an incredible speed, sending out tremendous energy waves. He had locked himself down in a fight with the Island Master in a fierce fight, and it seemed that neither would be able to defeat the other with ease.

On the other said, with the Heavenly Saint Sword, Jiang Chen had cut a wound on the Second Grade Combat King's neck, causing blood to burst out from the wound.

"I'll... I'll give you all my treasures! But you have to promise not to kill me!"

The Second Grade Combat King had nearly died from fright. Now, even the Island Master was unable to save his life. The only

way he could survive was to hand over all his treasures.

With a thought in his mind, all the treasures stored in his body were taken out. A huge amount of pills, natural resources, a few combat skill scrolls, and a few King Weapons. He was truly loaded with treasures.

A smile emerged on Jiang Chen's face. Without hesitating, he took all the treasures and stored them into his storage ring. The crowd had witnessed the entire process, and their minds were filled with envy and jealousy. Robbing a Pirate Lord, just thinking about it would make one's heart race. Most importantly, those treasures were too tempting.

The Second Grade Combat King's body was violently trembling, and sweat was dripping down his forehead, while sharp pains were coming from his wounds. He was waiting for Jiang Chen's amnesty.

"Perfect. You can go now, I won't kill you."

Jiang Chen put away the Heavenly Saint Sword. He really let the pirate go.

The Second Grade Combat King was startled for a brief moment, but joy quickly crept up on his face. Without hesitating, he turned around and disappeared without a trace, scared that Jiang Chen would go back on his words if he moved just a little bit slower.

For a Second Grade Combat King, even with both arms amputated, he could still live a good life. At least, a life much better than that of a Combat Soul warrior. He could still earn back his fortune and treasures, but if he lost his life, that would be the end.

The once chaotic and noisy battlefield was now dead silent. Everyone was looking at the young man dressed in white. There were only three Pirate Lords left, and it was easy to imagine that their ending would be no better than that of the others.

Aside from the Island Master, the two remaining Pirate Lords turned pale with fright. The regret they felt now had reached the maximum. If they knew that this was going to happen, they would have never gotten themselves involved with this matter. Now, not only would they not get anything good, they might even have to forfeit their lives here.

This young man in front of them was too strong, even a Second Grade Combat King was no match for him, let alone the two of them. Perhaps they would face the same ending as those two Pirate Lords who were previously killed.

One of these two Pirate Lords was human, and the other was a demon. Both were First Grade Combat/Demon Kings.

The First Grade Combat King took a deep breath, then came up to Jiang Chen and said, "I'm willing to hand over all my treasures. Can you spare my life?"

He took the initiative to beg for forgiveness. In fact, this was a wise decision. The current situation was clear; their plot had failed, and no one present were match for this young man.

"En, you're very clever. I promise, I won't kill you."

Jiang Chen smiled. He only wanted money. As for the lives of these Pirate Lords, they had nothing to do with him. In any case, this guy posed no threat to Jiang Chen. As for the saying 'eliminate evil and encourage the good', Jiang Chen was no hero. The Chaotic Ocean was a chaotic place, and if you killed a Pirate Lord, a second one would appear to take his place.

The Pirate Lord was extremely excited after hearing that. Without hesitating, he took out all his treasures. Jiang Chen accepted the treasures with an ease of mind, then he let the Pirate Lord leave.

"Tan Lang, why did your friend set those Pirate Lords free? This isn't appropriate."

Li Hao said. He didn't speak directly to Jiang Chen, but instead asked Tan Lang. In his mind, all these pirates were their targets today. Now, with them dominating the advantageous position, they were supposed to kill them all at once. However, Jiang Chen actually set them free, and this didn't make any sense.

"Why? Are you doubting my friend?"

Tan Lang gazed coldly at Li Hao. Although he had only known Jiang Chen for a very short period of time, he could tell that Jiang Chen was a man with an arbitrary mentality; a man who did things based on his own free mind. If Li Hao and the others think that they can point their fingers at Jiang Chen just because they were disciples of the Asura Palace, it would be a huge mistake.

"You..."

Li Hao was exasperated, but he couldn't do anything. After witnessing Jiang Chen's frightening ability, he just didn't have the courage to point his finger at Jiang Chen.

Seeing that Jiang Chen really set that First Grade Combat King free, the last First Grade Demon King hastily came up to Jiang Chen.

"Save your breath, I have to kill you."

Not allowing the demon beast to say a word, Jiang Chen spoke first. At the same time, he stretched his arm forward and poked it through the First Grade Demon King's Qi Sea, then took out all his treasures.

The First Grade Demon King was stunned. He looked at Jiang Chen's face with great amounts of shock, murmuring, "Wh... why..."

He had absolutely no clue why this happened. This young man

had set one pirate free just now, so why did he kill him so suddenly? It wasn't just him, no one at the scene could begin to imagine what this young man was thinking.

“This guy really has a weird temper. His decision on who to kill is entirely arbitrary!”

Some were astonished by Jiang Chen's actions, and inwardly felt sympathy for this First Grade Demon King.

Ignoring the demon's question, Jiang Chen destroyed his head with a punch and took out his demon soul. This demon soul was the reason why Jiang Chen killed this demon. He had only obtained one First Grade Demon King demon soul so far, and that wasn't enough for him to break through to the Combat King realm. Now, by obtaining the second one, it was a completely different story. He had completely confidence that he could break through to the next realm soon.

“Brother Jiang, we have to kill this Island Master no matter what. His head is extremely valuable.”

Tan Lang told Jiang Chen.

Jiang Chen nodded his head then turned his eyes to the Island Master. At this moment, the fight between Big Yellow and the Island Master had come to a stop.

"Haha... I'll never give up on this!"

The Heavenhawk Island Master crazily laughed out, and a ruthless look flickered within his eyes. His body was boiling with killing intent. Even at this last minute, he had yet to give up. With a sway of his body, he disappeared from where he stood, and in the following second, he appeared beside another disciple.

At this most critical moment, not only did the Heavenhawk Island Master not try to flee for his life, he actually tried to kill one more disciple. It seemed that his hatred toward the Asura Palace was incredibly huge.

Argh!!

The disciple was caught completely defenseless, and his body was instantly sliced in half by the Island Master. After doing that, the Island Master crazily charged toward another genius. However, these geniuses were experienced, and they wouldn't allow the Island Master a second chance. They immediately grouped together and fought him.

At this moment, Jiang Chen moved. With incredible speed, he arrived in front of the Island Master. With a swing of his sword, Jiang Chen knocked the saber out of the Island Master's hand, and now controlled his fate.

"Haha..."

The Island Master laughed loudly into the sky, and tears could be seen flashing within his eyes. A strong unreconciled emotion could

be sensed from his laughter. However, he knew that he was done for. This young man in front of him was too strong, and there was no way he could be his match.

"My wife, my son... I'm useless! I can't get revenge for you..."

The Island Master burst out into tears and furiously roared into the sky.

Jiang Chen was touched. There must be something really hurting this man's state of mind, otherwise he wouldn't be crying like this. At this point, he could easily sense the regret, unwillingness and helplessness the Island Master was feeling

"Come on! Kill me now! Let this end here!"

The Island Master shouted at Jiang Chen. When faced with death, he showed no fear on his face. Instead, an expression of one finally about to be freed emerged on his face. Apparently, every day was like torture for this man.

"Tell me, what kind of resentments do you have with the Asura Palace?"

Jiang Chen asked.

"Kill me if you will. The losers are always in the wrong. Being defeated by you, I have no complaints."

The Island Master replied with a loud voice.

“Kill him! If you don’t, we will!”

Li Hao said with a voice filled with killing intent. He felt a strong desire to just rush forward and kill the Island Master. As long as he could get the Island Master’s head, he would become the new 13th Tycoon.

Jiang Chen’s eyes became cold. He turned to Li Hao, and with an indifferent tone he said, “Scram!”

Chapter 498 - You're Free To Go

Jiang Chen's words and his indifferent look nearly caused Li Hao to throw up a mouthful of blood. He was a genius of the Asura Palace, and not once had anyone dared to tell him to scram in front of so many people. This was an insult to his dignity.

"If you don't want to scram, stop pointing your fingers at me. You're not qualified."

Jiang Chen continued speaking with an ice-cold voice, paying no attention to Li Hao. Killing the Island Master was not up to him, and Li Hao was not qualified to tell him what to do. Compared to Li Hao, Jiang Chen liked the Island Master more.

Putting aside what kind of resentment existed between the Island Master and the Asura Palace, just his fearlessness when facing death made him worthy of Jiang Chen's admiration.

Li Hao's expression was extremely unsightly, but he dared not speak any more words. After all, not only was Jiang Chen very powerful, he treated his enemies with extremely fierce approaches. If Li Hao really provoked Jiang Chen, he might get himself into deep trouble.

"I thought this young man was the Asura Palace's helper, so why does he give no face to the geniuses of the Asura Palace?"

"Can't you tell that this young man was only invited by Tan Lang? A mighty warrior like this is naturally proud and arrogant.

Also, he isn't from the Asura Palace, so he obviously can't accept Li Hao pointing his finger at him."

"He's so young, and yet so incredible strong. Normally, we should've heard of name, but I've never seen him before."

All the spectators were discussing amongst themselves. With today's battle, everyone's attention would be focused on this young man in white who had suddenly appeared out of nowhere. In other words, after today's battle, the name of this young man would definitely be known by everyone in the Chaotic Ocean.

When the Island Master saw Jiang Chen scolding Li Hao, he couldn't help but feel startled. He thought this young man was one of the genius disciples of the Asura Palace, but judging from the current situation, it seemed he was wrong. Thus, he felt less hateful toward Jiang Chen.

"Speak, tell me what's hiding in your mind. With that, you can be at peace when you die."

Jiang Chen said.

The Island Master looked at Jiang Chen's face without blinking his eyes. After some moments, he finally let out a long sigh. He tilted his head backwards and looked into the boundless sky; a tear flowing down his face. His eyes looked miserable, as if he had sunk into the abyss of his memories.

“My name is Zhuang Fan. Originally, I wasn’t a demon, but a human.”

With a calm and stable voice, Zhuang Fan spoke.

His words brought a tremendous storm to the crowd. In the minds of all these outsiders, Zhuang Fan was a Combat Hawk, a genuine demon. But now, he had personally admitted that he was originally a human. This was simply unbelievable.

Humans and demons were two distinct species. Although demons could transform into human shape upon cultivating to a certain level, their bloodline was still that of a demon. However, this Zhuang Fan’s bloodline had transformed, turning him into a demon. This could no longer be described as bizarre, it was simply news that were capable of setting the entire world on fire. Many people eagerly wished to know how he could achieve that.

“I, Zhuang Fan am a human from Qing City. I had a wife and a son, and I lived an ordinary yet happy life. However, everything was destroyed in one day. Three years ago, that bastard Xiao Nanshan arrived at Qing City. He was obsessed with my wife’s beauty, and evil intentions were birthed in his mind. One day, that bastard intruded my house, and he raped my wife! I witnessed it all with my own eyes! ARHHHH.....”

Zhuang Fan suddenly let out a heartbreaking cry and began pulling his hair with both hands. His eyes had turned extremely red, and he was struck with despair. The story stunned many

people. No one could have thought that Zhuang Fan had experienced such a miserable event. Witnessing his wife being raped in front of his very eyes without being able to do anything about it, for any man, a situation like this was a devastating blow.

“That bastard Xiao Nanshan is a powerful man, and I was no match for him. When he was done, in order to protect his reputation, he killed me wife and son! He is worse than beast! My son was only three years old! THREE YEARS OLD...”

When he mentioned his three years old son, Zhuang Fan furiously roared out once more. It was really difficult to imagine what kind of suffering he had gone through, even Jiang Chen was touched. On the other side, Big Yellow had started cursing. Of course, he was cursing at that Xiao Nanshan, a human worse than a beast.

“Impossible! Zhuang Fan, you’re uttering rubbish! Don’t you dare try to defame our Great Tycoon!”

Xiu Rui immediately shouted.

“That’s right! You’re making a baseless accusation! The Great Tycoon is the number one genius of the Asura Palace! With his status and strength, he can get any kind of woman he wants! He would never rape your wife!”

Li Hao joined in to defend the Great Tycoon as well.

Jiang Chen finally realized that Xiao Nanshan was the Great Tycoon, the strong Tycoon. It was no wonder that Zhuang Fan hated the Asura Palace so much.

"Shut up!"

Jiang Chen shouted at the people from the Asura Palace. The ice-cold look in his eyes carried some fury as well. He firmly believed that Zhuang Fan spoke the truth. A man can easily tell a lie, but it was hard to conceal his true expression. Without an immense amount of hatred, no one would go through near endless pain to transform himself into a demon. There was indeed a secret method that allowed one to transform into a demon and gain a powerful cultivation in a short amount of time. However, the price one would have to pay for that was unimaginable.

"Go on."

Jiang Chen told Zhuang Fan.

"The heavens answered my prayers. That bastard thought I was dead, but I wasn't. I woke up three days later, and when I saw the bodies of my wife and son, I felt a strong desire to die. I buried their bodies on a cliff, so that they could stay together without being disturbed by anyone. Furious, I wanted revenge. However, my enemy was the head of all Thirteen Tycoons, and my wife and son had already died, so there was no more meaning to my life. In the end, I jumped off the cliff."

Zhuang Fan was immersed in his miserable memory as he

continued, “I was thrown into an icy pond. Not only did I not die, I found a secret skill. Together with this secret skill was a drop of a Combat Hawk’s blood essence. This skill allowed me to transform into a demon, and it brought me incredible strength. However, at the same time, I was forced to pay a heavy price. I only had four more years to live, but even so, I accepted it with all my heart and soul. As long as I can get revenge, I am willing to pay any price. In the end, I transformed into how I currently look, and came to the Chaotic Ocean. But unfortunately, in the end, even after transforming into this, my strength is still far inferior to that of that bastard Xiao Nanshan. Three years have passed, but I am only a Second Grade Demon King, and my dreams of revenge are too far away.”

“So, you shifted your resentment onto the Asura Palace as a whole, thinking that even if you couldn’t kill Xiao Nanshan, you could at least kill some of the geniuses of the Asura Palace.”

Jiang Chen said. Now, the root of this matter had become clear.

“That’s right. After I killed the 13th Tycoon, I knew that the Asura Palace would definitely not forgive me. Thus, I invited a few of the other Pirate Lords and promised I would give them everything I owned, as well as the secret skill. The plan was that once we killed all these geniuses, they would leave this place with all the treasures they’ve found across the years and never come back.”

Zhuang Fan continued his confession. This was the conditions he had promised to the other five Pirate Lords. Among these six Pirate Lords, three were human, and they showed a great interest in the

secret skill that allowed Zhuang Fan to transform into a demon and obtain an incredible cultivation base. As for the other two demons, they were obviously interested in learning more about the secret skill. Thus, they too agreed to help, thinking that they would leave this place after completing this mission.

But unfortunately, when their fruits of labor was nearly matured, a young man dressed in white suddenly appeared and destroyed everything.

“What a pitiful man. The Great Tycoon is such a beast, this is truly disappointing.”

“That’s right. His wife and son were killed, and the strength he obtained from exchanging his life couldn’t help him get revenge. He truly is pitiful.”

“The Great Tycoon is a beast in human form. From today onwards, his great reputation will completely collapse.”

Many people were filled with righteous rage, mourning for Zhuang Fan’s miserable experience.

“Come! Kill me now! I can finally reunite with my wife and son.”

Zhuang Fan raised his head up high. After everything he had experienced, he no longer feared death.

"You're free now."

Jiang Chen put away the Heavenly Saint Sword and told Zhuang Fan.

"What?"

Zhuang Fan's expression went blank, and he stared at Jiang Chen with disbelief. He thought there was something wrong with his ears. This young man was letting him go? How could this be possible?

"You can leave now. You still have one more year to get revenge; don't give up."

Jiang Chen said with an indifferent tone.

"No, you can't let this guy go! He has killed many of our disciples, and even defamed our Great Tycoon!"

Xiu Rui shouted. Realizing that Jiang Chen was allowing Zhuang Fan to go free, the expressions of all the disciples changed as well. They were here to kill Zhuang Fan, and if Jiang Chen set him free, it meant that they would have to return with empty hands.

"Woof~"

Big Yellow barked, then moved his big body in front of Xiu Rui. Xiu Rui was taken aback, and couldn't help but retreat a few steps. After witnessing this dog's frightening strength, he dared not underestimate him.

"All of you better shut your fucking mouths! None of the Thirteen Tycoons are good men, and neither are you!"

Big Yellow was furious, and nearly decided to take justice for Zhuang Fan.

No one had scolded these geniuses like this before, let alone a dog. They were all enraged, but none of them dared speak a word.

"Are you really letting me go?"

Zhuang Fan couldn't believe it, and he kept staring at Jiang Chen.

"Yes."

Jiang Chen responded with a calm voice. Zhuang Fan cupped his fist toward Jian Chen and disappeared without a trace. He only had one year left, and he would not give up even at the last minute.

Staring at where Zhuang Fan disappeared, Jiang Chen couldn't help but let out a sigh filled with mixed emotions. This was how a man should be. There were some things one absolutely must do. Jiang Chen knew that his hatred and fury toward Xiao Nanshan

was the only thing that kept Zhuang Fan alive.

“Tan Lang, when we return, I’ll see how you’re going to answer for all this.”

Li Hao turned to Tan Lang and said. In his opinion, since Jiang Chen was invited by Tan Lang, Tan Lang would have to bear the responsibility of letting Zhuang Fan go.

“Answer your bullshit! Li Hao, don’t be ungrateful! Zhuang Fan is a Second Grade Demon King, and none of you are a match for him! If not for Jiang Chen, do you still think you’d be alive to talk to me like this?! You’re a bunch of ungrateful fools!”

Tan Lang was furious. To him, this group of people was a typical example of ungrateful fools. As for the fact that Jiang Chen set Zhuang Fan free, it perfectly matched Jiang Chen’s style of handling matters. Furthermore, after listening to Zhuang Fan’s story, Tan Lang was filled with pent up anger as well.

Chapter 499 - The Number One Pirate Lord

Tan Lang was a courageous and upright man. Although he was faced with the fierce competition within the Asura Palace, where many of his competitors were crafty and insidious, Tan Lang was still able to keep his integrity and disposition. Who could have thought that the Great Tycoon, a man who always wore a bright smile on his face; the man who claimed the title of number one genius of the Asura Palace, was actually just a sanctimonious guy. He was seemingly respectable, but he actually did something so inhumane.

If not for the fact that Zhuang Fan was lucky enough to stay alive, who would have known that Xiao Nanshan had done something like that? The sanctimonious Great Tycoon would still be the same lofty hypocrite. Also, it was easy to imagine that Xiao Nanshan had done the same thing to others, only that there were no survivors that time.

Of course, the world of cultivation was governed by the rules of the jungle, and strength was the only standard used to evaluate everything. Xiao Nanshan's behavior was beneath the contempt of everyone. Even the devil cultivators from the Heavenly Devil Palace who always employed cruel and vicious approaches would be disgusted by his actions. Perhaps only those genuine devils would have done what he had.

However, devils and humans were two distinctly different species. Slaughtering and torturing someone from a different species was completely different from doing it to someone of the same species.

Also, devil cultivators and devils were two different concepts. A devil cultivator was still a human; a human who cultivates a devil's skill. They were a group of humans who went after short term, but extremely powerful strength, thus becoming devil cultivators; whereas devils were a species by themselves, one hostile toward humans. They belonged to two completely different groups.

“You're right. Jiang Chen did save our lives, and if not for his help, many of us would have died today; this is a fact.”

Xiu Rui said. However, right after that, he aimed his voice at Jiang Chen and said, “However, Brother Jiang, the Asura Palace has lost three genius disciples in today's battle. Not only that, many of us are suffering from different degrees of injuries, and yet, you set the Heavenhawk Island Master free. This not only caused us to lose any benefits we might have gotten, it also brought losses to us. Since you're the helper invited by junior disciple Tan, I think it would be best for you to follow us back to the Asura Palace so that you can answer for what you have done here.”

Xiu Rui's motive was obvious. Since Jiang Chen had set the Island Master free, he would have to answer for his decision to the Asura Palace.

Clasp!

Too bad, the pushy and overbearing Xiu Rui had picked the wrong target. Right after he finished speaking, a powerful slap hit his face, sending him flying dozens of meters.

And right in front of where Xiu Rui originally stood, a young man dressed in white could be seen steadily hovering. He was Jiang Chen.

“Who do you think you are, and how dare you tell me what to do?”

Jiang Chen said with a cold voice. Previously, he had no favorable impression toward this group of geniuses, and now, after learning about what their Great Tycoon had done, Jiang Chen felt even more disgusted at this group. Not only that, he was truly regretting helping them out just now.

Li Hao and the others were struck with great shock. All of them were hovering nearby, but none of them had been able to see how Jiang Chen did it. Even with Xiu Rui’s strength, he was still slapped away by someone with such ease. Jiang Chen’s mightiness sent a shiver down their spines.

“You... you dare slap me?!”

Xiu Rui was burning with fury from embarrassment. He was a man with a prestigious status, but someone had just slapped him in front of so many people. This was a plain insult, and he couldn’t take it.

“If you speak one more word, I will immediately kill you.”

Jiang Chen said with an extremely fierce voice. His ice-cold glance caused Xiu Rui to tremble, as if a bucket full of ice-cold water had just been poured down his back. Without hesitating, he shut his mouth. He had a feeling that Jiang Chen's glance was no joke; he could see endless slaughtering coming from the eyes. When faced with this young man, he felt as if he was but an ant, and the young man could kill him with just a simple pinch.

Rumble...

Right at this moment, a loud rumbling sound could be heard from the Heavenhawk Island. After that, the entire island began shaking, as if there was a tremendous earthquake.

“What’s going on? Why is the Heavenhawk Island suddenly shaking so violently?”

“Is the island going to be destroyed?”

The crowd was shocked as they switched their attention to the Heavenhawk Island. The island's movement was getting more intense, as if it was going to explode at any time.

Rumble...

Suddenly, another loud rumbling sound rang throughout the air. After that, everyone could see a golden beam shoot out from the island. It was a dazzling beam that was more than 300 meters tall,

and it had the diameter of a water bucket. Indistinctly, the crowd could see symbols flashing throughout the entire beam.

“A treasure is emerging!”

Big Yellow’s eyes instantly lit up. This dog was a top talent when it came to sensing treasures, but he had been unable to sense anything before this. This only meant that the treasure had hidden itself very deep. No wonder Zhuang Fan had never discovered it although he had occupied the Heavenhawk Island for years.

“What a pure aura, it must be an extremely rare treasure! I never thought that a good treasure would be hidden in this Heavenhawk Island, and it even emerged right after the Island Master left!”

“Haha, today’s trip has been really valuable! Not only did I witness a great battle, I actually got the chance to witness the emergence of a good treasure! I wonder what kind of treasure it is.”

“It must be something good! If not, it wouldn’t be causing so much noise!”

Everyone were shocked as the Heavenhawk Island once more became the center of attention. Judging from the aura emitted from this golden beam alone, the emerging treasure was not something ordinary.

"Sanskrit! This object originates from Buddhism!"

Jiang Chen's eyes lit up. While others might not be able to tell, he could easily recognize it with just a single look. The symbols flashing on the golden beam were actually Sanskrit. This also meant that the emerging treasure most likely originated from Buddhism.

There were eight major regions in the Divine Continent, and the smallest region was called the Western Region, which was of course located at the west of the Divine Continent. It was a remote place, and the entire region was only as big as the Liang Province. Compared to the other seven regions, it was extremely small. However, no one dared underestimate the Western Region, because it was the heart of Buddhism. Although Buddhism had gradually decayed over the recent years, no one could ignore their influences. The Buddhist culture was rich, extensive and profound, and the beings there rarely left the Western Region, as they had their own historical roots in that place.

Even Jiang Chen never expected to see a Buddhist item in the Heavenhawk Island. Judging from its aura, it was not an ordinary item.

"Haha, what a lucky day! This treasure belongs to us, the Invincible Sect! No one is allowed to interfere!"

Ye Hui joyfully laughed out. Seven to eight Combat King geniuses of the Invincible Sect came out and positioned themselves near the Heavenhawk Island, looking determined to get this treasure.

“Hmph! You guys from the Invincible Sect think you’re the leaders of the Liang Province? This treasure is an object with a righteous aura! We, the Peerless Sword Faction possess the most unparalleled sword skills underneath the heavens; upright and righteous! So, this treasure naturally belongs to us, the Peerless Sword Faction!”

A cold snort rang through the air. Another group of seven to eight geniuses walked out from the crowd, all of them wearing white clothes and carrying sword on their backs. They were from the Peerless Sword Faction.

“Hehe, the people who have seen it are naturally entitled to the treasure. The Invincible Sect and Peerless Sword Faction’s names aren’t carved onto this treasure. So, we, the Heavenly Devil Palace would like to fight for it as well. In my opinion, we should just let our strength do the talking!”

An evil laughter echoed throughout the scene. Following that, a few geniuses of the Heavenly Devil Palace walked out from the crowd, all of them wearing black clothes. When faced with such a treasure, no one would be willing to let it slip away in front of their eyes.

“Hmph! The Heavenly Devil Palace is just a bunch of evil men! You’re cultivating the devils’ skills; diabolic and malicious! This treasure is emitting a righteous aura, and it’s not something you devil cultivators should touch! We, the Asura Palace defeated the Heavenhawk Island Master, so this island now naturally belongs to the Asura Palace! With that, the treasures found on this island also

belong to the Asura Palace! I suggest that all of you leave quickly!”

Li Hao coldly harrumphed. At the same time, the geniuses of the Asura Palace marched forward. They had failed to kill the Heavenhawk Island Master today, and had lost three disciples. If they just returned like this, they would lose all their face. However, if they could find and bring back this treasure, regardless of keeping it or submitting it to the Asura Palace, the benefits would be endless.

At this moment, a tremendous storm was brewing. Geniuses from all four major powers had started fighting each other. When faced with this unknown treasure, none were willing to let it go, and everyone wanted it for themselves. Also, as all four major powers had dominated the Liang Province for many years, conflicts had repeatedly risen between them, and neither was willing to give in to the other. Especially these geniuses, the fights were even fiercer.

“Damn it, all geniuses of the four major powers have come out. There is no place here for us any longer.”

“If there’s no place for us, we’ll just act as spectators. Just wait, I’m that fierce fights will soon break out. This treasure is no ordinary object, and none of these four major powers will want to let it go, especially the Asura Palace. They have suffered some losses today, thus, in order to compensate for their losses, they won’t let go of this perfect opportunity.”

“However, I was thinking; if they’re really going to fight for that treasure, with their strength, could they defeat that young white-

clothed man?"

The crowd start discussing the current events. When a battle involving Combat Kings erupted, they could only stand aside and watch, not daring to stand too close. The situation was clear; the unknown treasure was going to reveal itself, and a fierce fight would erupt between the geniuses of all four major powers, deciding who would get to take the treasure.

However, most people still rested their eyes on that white-clothed youngster. This youngster was obviously the strongest man present, and if he wanted to fight for the treasure, perhaps none of these geniuses would be a match for him.

The undercurrent was surging. Everyone were waiting for the treasure to reveal itself. Once it did, the battles would begin.

"Amitabha!"

Right at this very moment, a calm voice was heard from afar. Right after that, a golden beam could be seen shooting across the sky, and soon arriving above the Heavenhawk Island. It was a monk wearing a golden Kasaya.

This monk looked to be in his mid-twenties; a very young man. He had a strong and sturdy body, and a fair complexion.

The monk held one of his palms straight up in front of his chest.

He wore a solemn expression, portraying a sacred image.

Seeing this monk, Jiang Chen furrowed his brows. This little monk must be here for the treasure.

“Where did this monk come from?!”

Ye Hui couldn't help but shout out loud.

“To all the misters here, this treasure belongs to me. I suggest you all scram right now.”

The monk said. Although his voice was soft, his words were extremely domineering. Right when he arrived, he immediately asked everyone to scram. Furthermore, when he talked, he still wore the same solemn expression, while portraying the image of an eminent monk.

“What the fuck! Where did this stinking monk come from? Does he not know how to talk properly?”

A person couldn't help but curse.

“Right, that's him! He's the number one Pirate Lord of the Chaotic Ocean! I've seen him fighting with others before!”

A person cried out in shock, as he recognized this monk.

Chapter 500 - A Shameless Monk

The man's words brought a tremendous storm to the crowd. Everyone immediately turned their heads toward the monk wearing the Kasaya. What they saw was a monk with a majestic bearing; refined and cultured, and judging from the way he looked, no one were able to view him as the number one Pirate Lord.

As a matter of fact, very few people knew about this number one Pirate Lord. Who could have thought that the number one Pirate Lord was actually an extremely young monk? Rumors said that the number one Pirate Lord had been in the Chaotic Ocean for quite some time, but aside from having his name heard by many, he had never shown himself in public, and had never robbed others like the other six Pirate Lords did. However, with the emergence of this rare treasure, this monk had finally revealed himself. Could he also be attracted by the treasure?

Realizing that this monk was the number one Pirate Lord, the geniuses of all four major powers were struck with fear. However, when faced with such a valuable treasure, none of them were willing to back off. If they really scurried away just because a monk told them to do so, not only would they feel ashamed of themselves, they would also put the face of the four major powers to shame.

“Monk, let me give you a suggestion. You better not get involved in this; you can't afford to offend any of the four major powers.”

Ye Hui said.

The monk raised his head and looked at Ye Hui with an indifferent expression. He then put his palms together and showed the look of an eminent monk, “Amitabha. Mister, did you fart just now? It was so loud and stinky! I have no idea what kind of birds these ‘four major powers’ are, but this treasure really belongs to me. Let me give you a suggestion; scram back to where you came from.”

The monk said with the same calm and indifferent tone, carrying an undertone of an eminent monk passing on his knowledge. However, his words nearly caused many people to cough out a mouthful of blood. Many people felt a strong desire to just fly up and slap his face. Even Jiang Chen felt a desire to kick this monk’s face.

“Fuck, where did this monk come from? He has such a nasty mouth!”

“He looks like an eminent monk, but he’s incredibly cheap! Every word he said made me feel angry!”

“What a cheap monk! He does indeed have the characteristics of a Pirate Lord! This is areal example of sanctimonious hypocrite!”

Everyone nearly fainted. No one were able to stand the way this monk talked.

“Wakaka! This monk isn’t bad! This master dog likes him!”

Big Yellow joyfully laughed out. If he had a chance to communicate with this monk, the two of them would definitely make a perfect team.

“You stinky monk! Who do you think you are?! You’re all alone, how dare you tell all geniuses of the four major powers to scram? You’re courting death!”

Someone shouted out loudly. The geniuses of the four major powers all showed angry expressions. This was the first time they had been insulted by a monk. With their prestigious statuses, there was no way they could accept it. Furthermore, in their minds, although this monk was the number one Pirate Lord, he was at most just a Second Grade Combat King. Now, with more than thirty geniuses from the four major powers present at the scene, and each of them being a formidable warrior, if they grouped together and fought him, defeating him would just be a piece of cake. Thus, they didn’t take this monk seriously.

“Mister, your words are incorrect. Firstly, I don’t stink. Secondly, I’m not seeking death. The heavens care for every living being, and I keep giving you advice in hopes that all of you can repent before it’s too late. If not, you might just die here. All of you should be grateful.”

The monk said with a serious expression.

“Pu... This monk is fucking funny!”

Big Yellow chuckled uncontrollably.

“This monk is obviously here for the Buddhist treasure. I’m guessing the reason why he came to the Chaotic Ocean is because of this treasure. However, he couldn’t find its exact location, that’s why he has been hiding, patiently waiting for the treasure to reveal itself. However, why did this guy want number one Pirate Lord title? Don’t tell me he is ostentatious?”

Jiang Chen threw out his guess.

“This monk’s mouth is truly filthy, but I do think he’s very strong.”

Big Yellow whispered to Jiang Chen.

“Not only strong. He is a Third Grade Combat King, so he can easily kill these geniuses as if they were some silly dogs... oh, I’m not referring to you... he can kill them easily as if they were a bunch of chickens.”

Jiang Chen said.

“The Buddhist path is very compassionate, and as the saying that it’s better to save one life than to build a seven-story tall pagoda, although this monk has a very filthy mouth, I don’t think he will take the lives of these people so lightly.”

Big Yellow said.

“The treasure is soon going to reveal itself, so why do you guys still not scram? Do you really want to wait here and face death later on?”

The monk told the crowd upon seeing that the golden beam was trembling even more violently.

“Damn monk! Shut your mouth and get the hell outta here! If you still don’t want to go, don’t blame us for being aggressive!”

A genius from the Invincible Sect shouted at the monk.

“It looks like I was too polite when speaking just now. Mister, since you’ve just scolded a monk, you’re obviously trash. Trash is a disaster, and disaster like you will bring damage to many people. As Buddha has taught us, it’s better to save one life than it is to build a seven-story tall pagoda. If I kill you, I will save the lives of many in the future.”

“Bastard, stinky monk! Do you really dare kill me?!”

The genius grit his teeth tightly, and nearly leapt onto the monk in order to tear his mouth to pieces.

“Mister, I can tell from your expression that you’re very angry. Anger comes from your inner self, and it looks like your inner self is suffering from pain right now. Since that is the case, let this monk release you from your inner purgatory and send you to

Nirvana, then you'll be eternally free of pain."

Right after the monk finished saying that, he immediately disappeared from where he stood. In just a split second, the monk reappeared in front of the genius. One of his fingers shone with a golden light as the monk touched the center of the Invincible Sect genius's brows. The finger penetrated the genius's head, and blood burst out from the wound. The genius died on the spot.

Swoosh!

With a sway of his body, the monk returned to where he originally stood. He clasped both palms together and said, "Amitabha! The heavens care for every single being! What a sin!"

Fuck!

Many people started cursing. Could this monk be any more shameless? He just killed a man, and he still pretended to be a compassionate man. Truly shameless!

While sighing out because of the monk's shameless behavior, many people were also shocked by his strength. The monk had launched a sudden attack just now, and it was incredibly fast. Not only was the victim unable to respond, even the people next to the victim showed no response. They only felt a wind blow by, then their fellow disciple was dead. From the beginning until the end, the guy didn't even make a single sound. A First Grade Combat King genius had been killed, just like that. This wasn't because the man who just died was too useless, but instead, the monk was too

frightening.

Now, no one dared underestimate this monk any longer. The monk's eminent appearance caused fear and respectful emotions to emerge in those among the crowds. This monk truly deserve to be called the strongest Pirate Lord, he didn't even blink his eyes when killing someone. All that merciful Buddhist teachings, it was just bullshit to him. He never took it seriously.

“Fuck, is this guy a real monk?!”

Big Yellow couldn't help but roll his eyes. He had just told Jiang Chen that this monk wouldn't kill anyone, but in just the blink of an eye, a genius had been killed by this monk.

"Misjudged?"

Jiang Chen smiled.

“This monk is a Third Grade Combat King, and he's very strong. So, are we still going to fight for the treasure?”

Big Yellow looked at Jiang Chen and asked.

“Of course we will! We'll fish for fish in the turbid waters.”

Jiang Chen's lips curled up into a smile. It wasn't his style to let a treasure slip away in front of his eyes.

Boom!

Right at this moment, another loud explosive sound could be heard from the Heavenhawk Island. The golden beam suddenly shattered, revealing a fist-sized golden bead hovering in the sky. The bead was sending forth a pure Buddhistic Yang aura. Its surface was fully covered with Sanskrit, giving it a mystical touch. Just the energy ripples leaking out from it was more than enough to make one's heart tremble.

Although the people present had little understanding when it came to Buddhism, and thus couldn't recognize the item, it didn't stop them from realizing that it was an extremely rare treasure.

“What is that thing? Even this master dog is unable to recognize it.”

Big Yellow was shocked.

“It's a sarira, what remains of a Buddhist after passing away while seated in a cross-legged position. Judging from its aura, it must be the sarira of a Third Grade Minor Saint Buddhist. It is indeed a good treasure, it's no wonder this monk spent so much time waiting for it here.”

Jiang Chen was surprised. When an eminent monk of the Buddhist path passes away, there is a high possibility for that monk to leave behind a sarira. A sarira is like a demon's demon soul, and it actually contains a human's combat soul. The sarira

contains a very pure Buddhistic energy, and it might contain the mighty skills of that Buddhist monk.

"Get it!"

Someone suddenly shouted out. The geniuses of the four major powers moved at the same time, rushing toward the sarira. Noticing this situation, although the monk's expression was still calm, two bright beams were leaking out from his eyes.

"Since you guys keep adhering to your foolishness without awakening, I'll help you set your souls free from your inner purgatories!"

The monk moved. He took a step forward, waved his hand and unleashed a sheet of golden rays. The golden rays instantly transformed into a gigantic ferocious looking Buddha seal. The Buddha seal then charged toward the group.

Boom!

Like a tremendous mountain, the aggressive and gigantic Buddha seal crushed four geniuses, instantly killing them. Their bodies exploded from the tremendous force, making the scene very bloody. This monk didn't look like someone who followed the Buddhistic teachings at all. Instead, he was like a brutal killer. Once he struck, he was at least a few hundred times crueler than those devil cultivators.

"Fudo Seal!"

Jiang Chen was about to join the fight for the treasure, but when he saw the Buddha seal, his face was immediately covered with shocked. He immediately stopped moving, then shouted at Big Yellow and Tan Lang, "Big Yellow, Brother Tan, stop!"

"What the fuck! Why?!"

Big Yellow was already ready to fight, so being asked to stop fighting for the treasure made him feel depressed. Even if he wasn't strong enough to beat this Third Grade Combat King monk, with his incredible speed, as well as Jiang Chen's help, they would still have a chance at obtaining the sarira.

"We'll give up this time. Let the monk have the sarira."

When Jiang Chen saw the Fudo Seal, he immediately changed his mind. He pulled both Big Yellow and Tan Lang aside, asking them to stop as well.

Boom!

In the sky above the Heavenhawk Island, the monk was fighting in a mighty, yet frightening manner. He unleashed the huge Buddha seal once again, killing another four geniuses. After that, the monk continued launching attacks, killing a few more men and causing huge losses to all four major powers.

"Amitabha! I have sinned."

The monk clasped both palms together and said. However, no signs of regret could be seen on his face. After the first round of battle, all the remaining geniuses were looking at the monk as if they were looking at a ghost, and no one had the courage to attack him anymore.